

# A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century – Vol 2 Bibliology



A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century –  
Vol 2 Bibliology

Dr. Edward Rice

Copyright: Creative Commons Attribution 2.0

"Share — copy and redistribute the material in any medium or format, and Adapt — remix, transform, and build upon the material for any purpose, even commercially."

Published by

Good Samaritan Baptist Church GSBaptistChurch.com

54 Main St.. Box 99, Dresden, NY 14441

<https://www.lulu.com/spotlight/GSBaptistChurch>

Cover Design and Photographs by:

Edward G. Rice

Principle Scripture Quotations are from the non-copyright

King James Authorized Version

The “NIV” and “New International Version” trademarks are registered and per requirement of the New York International Bible Society only 49 of their delinquent 357 verses were “Taken from the HOLY BIBLE:NEW INTERNATIONAL VERSION, 1978 by the New York International Bible Society, used by permission of Zondervan Bible Publishers.” The remaining 308 of the 357 verses (excepting the 16 of the 308 verses which they refused to even translate, they being absent from their delinquent Greek manuscripts from Alexandria Egypt) were quoted from the Zondervan Corporation, 2002 NIV Compact Thinline Bible which allows up to and inclusive of five hundred (500) verses to be quoted without their written permission. The Zondervan Corporation, not Jehovah God, is the registered owner of these words.

Three-hundred-and-fifty-seven Verses were quoted from The New American Standard Version (NASV), 1973 Revision, copyright by The Lockman Foundation, 1960,1962,1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, and 1973, La Habra, Calif, with all rights reserved. The Lockman Foundation, not Jehovah God, is the registered owner of these words.

Twenty-one verses were quoted from the RSV (excepting the 2 of the 21 that they refused to translate because the National Council of Churches perceived that they should not be in the Bible). The Revised Standard Version, New Testament, is copyrighted 1946, 1971, 1973 by the Division of Christian Education of the National Council of Churches of Christ in the U.S.A.

Seventeen verses were quoted from the ASV (excepting the 1 of the 17 that they refused to translate because Thomas Nelson & Sons perceived that it should not be in the Bible) which was copyrighted and published by Thomas Nelson & Sons in 1901. In 1928, the International Council of Religious Education (the body that later merged with the Federal Council of Churches to form the National Council of Churches) acquired the copyright from Nelson and copyrighted the ASV in 1929. Although these copyrights expired, the American Standard Version, referenced herein is copyrighted by Online Bible Foundation, 12 Birkfield Place, Carlisle, Lanarkshire, Scotland, M184PZ, 15-2006. Any copyright version of the Holy Bible is attributing that man, and not God is the owner and author of the included words.

## Table of Contents

<u>Volume 02 Bibliology.....</u>	<u>11</u>
<u>Chapter 1 - What is Bibliology?.....</u>	<u>11</u>
<u>Chapter 2 - The Holy Bible, Some Background .....</u>	<u>22</u>
<u>Amazing Bible Facts and Statistics.....</u>	<u>25</u>
<u>Timeline of the English Bible and the Corrupt Textual Critic .....</u>	<u>29</u>
<u>The Timeline of the English Bible. ....</u>	<u>29</u>
<u>The Malicious Intent of Textual Criticism. ....</u>	<u>37</u>
<u>The Thees and Thous of an Accurate Bible Translation.....</u>	<u>40</u>
<u>Chapter 3 Inspiration.....</u>	<u>45</u>
<u>Inspiration – A Designed Word.....</u>	<u>46</u>
<u>Reading Gausson's Theopneustia - Essential to Bibliology.....</u>	<u>50</u>
<u>Chapter 4 Theopneustia by L. Gausson.....</u>	<u>52</u>
<u>Theopneustia by L. Gausson.....</u>	<u>53</u>
<u>Translator's Preface.....</u>	<u>54</u>
<u>Prefatory Observations.....</u>	<u>56</u>
<u>I. Definition of Theopneustia.....</u>	<u>68</u>
<u>Section I.....</u>	<u>68</u>
<u>Section II.....</u>	<u>69</u>
<u>Section III.....</u>	<u>70</u>
<u>Section IV.....</u>	<u>75</u>
<u>Section V. On the Individuality of the Sacred Writers. ....</u>	<u>79</u>
<u>II. Scriptural Proof of the Divine Inspiration.....</u>	<u>97</u>
<u>Section I. All Scripture is Divinely Inspired.....</u>	<u>97</u>
<u>Section II. All the Prophetic Utterances are Given by God. ....</u>	<u>98</u>
<u>Section III. All the Scriptures of the Old Testament are Prophetic. ....</u>	<u>104</u>
<u>Section IV. All the Scriptures of the New Testament are Prophetic. ....</u>	<u>109</u>
<u>Section V. The Examples of the Apostles and of their Master Attest that, in             their Views ALL the Words of the Holy Books are Given by God.....</u>	<u>123</u>
<u>III Brief Didactic Abstract of the Doctrine of the Divine Inspiration.....</u>	<u>137</u>
<u>Section I. Catechetical Sketch of the Main Points of the Doctrine.....</u>	<u>137</u>
<u>Section II. On the Adversaries and Defenders of the Doctrine.....</u>	<u>165</u>
<u>IV. Examination of Objections.....</u>	<u>176</u>
<u>Section I. The Translations.....</u>	<u>176</u>
<u>Section II. Use of the Septuagint Translation.....</u>	<u>182</u>
<u>Section III. The Various Readings.....</u>	<u>185</u>
<u>Various Readings. First Table.....</u>	<u>196</u>
<u>Second Table.....</u>	<u>197</u>
<u>Third Table. Griesbach's Corrections, Extending to the Whole of the Epistle to             the Romans.....</u>	<u>199</u>
<u>Section IV. Errors of Reasoning or of Doctrine.....</u>	<u>214</u>

Section V. Errors in the Narratives – Contradictions in the Facts.....	222
Section VI. Errors Contrary to Natural Philosophy.....	252
Section VII. The Declarations of Paul Himself. ....	275
V. Examination of Evasions.....	279
Section I. Might Not Inspiration Pertain to the Thoughts Only, Without Extending to the Words?.....	279
Section II. Should We Except From Inspiration the Historical Books?.....	288
Section III. Will the Apparent Insignificance of Certain Details In the Bible Authorize Their Being Excepted From Inspiration? .....	305
VI. On Sacred Criticism, in the Relations it Bears to Divine Inspiration.....	320
Section I. Sacred Criticism is a Scientific Inquirer, and Not a Judge. ....	320
Section II. Let Sacred Criticism be an Historian, Not a Soothsayer.....	325
Section III. Sacred Criticism is the Doorkeeper of the Temple, Not its God. .....	330
VII. Conclusion.....	341
Section I. Retrospect. ....	341
Section II. ....	345
Chapter 5 Inspiration of ALL SCRIPTURE.....	354
“All Scripture” - Is Fissured by Scholars-So-Called.....	354
“All Scripture” is Copied, none is Autograph.....	355
“All Scripture” Is Preserved by God, not by man.....	357
Chapter 6 A Defense of Twenty Verses Erased from the NIV & NASB .....	366
Defense of Twenty Section 1 Introduction.....	366
Defense of Twenty Section 2 The Bible Doctrine That Textual Critics Abandoned .....	367
Defense of Twenty Section 3 The Twenty Verses Textual Critics Ripped Out.....	373
Chapter 7 Defense of First John Five Seven .....	391
I John 5:7 Is In My Holy Bible.....	391
The Evidence That The Apostle John Penned The 'Heavenly Witness'.....	397
Chapter 8 Verbal Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase.....	403
The Gideons Bible Compromised.....	405
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Paraphrase Changes the Words.....	409
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase NAS's Dynamic Equivalence in Matthew 24 .....	414
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Subjective Word Substitutions.....	415
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Awkward Confusion of Tenses.....	416
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase The Weaker 'Will' Replacing the Legal 'Shall'.....	417
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Inconsistency Produces Confusion....	419
Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Conclusion.....	420
Matthew 24 Comparison Table.....	421
Chapter 9 The Bible Cannon.....	439
The Baptist Canon of “All Scripture.”.....	442
The Old Testament Baptist Canon. ....	442
The New Testament Baptist Canon.....	448

The Canon of Scripture – Parting Thoughts.....	450
<b>Chapter 10 Christian Biblical Hermeneutics.....</b>	<b>452</b>
A Historical Overview of Hermeneutics.....	455
Jewish Exegesis.....	456
The School of Alexandria .....	458
School of Antioch.....	460
Hermeneutics - Believe What Jesus Believed.....	462
Hermeneutics and the Premillennial Return of Christ and the Pretribulational Rapture of the Church.....	465
Hermeneutics Conclusion .....	468
<b>Chapter 11 The Word Became Wycliffe's Middle English .....</b>	<b>470</b>
Wycliffe's Middle English -The Cost of Translating.....	471
The Holy Bible, From The Latin to Middle English .....	475
Wycliffe's Bible Exposes Catholic Corruptions.....	478
Wycliffe's Translation and Corrupted Repentance.....	482
Wycliffe's Translation and Corrupted Presbyterian.....	487
Wycliffe and the Pure Words of God.....	489
The Word Became 1611 King James English.....	495
The Word Became Wycliffe's Middle English - Conclusion.....	498
<b>Chapter 12 In Defense of Learning Greek .....</b>	<b>499</b>
Some Improperly Frown on the Greek.....	500
Fundamentalist's Need of Greek Studies.....	501
In Defense of Learning Greek The Linguistic Advantage.....	504
In Defense of Learning Greek Scholarship Advantage.....	508
In Defense of Learning Greek the Brain's Advantage. ....	510
In Defense of Learning Greek Conclusion.....	515
<b>Chapter 13 A Critique of Dr. Chafer's Bibliology .....</b>	<b>517</b>
Chafer's Bibliology Is Fractured Badly .....	518
Chafer's Lacking Organization and Structure.....	521
Chafer's Elaborated Use of English.....	523
<b>Chapter 14 Bibliology Conclusion .....</b>	<b>526</b>
<b>Bibliography.....</b>	<b>530</b>

# Preface

Greetings in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

As a USAF retired systems engineer turned Baptist Preacher of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, and armed with a staunch belief in the preserved accuracy of the inspired Scriptures, I praise the Lord that he



has provided me the unique opportunity to assemble “A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century.”

As a systems engineer for thirty years (since 1972), I focused on systems analysis. Systematic theology has intrigued me ever since my first Bible institute course in 1975. I have amassed multiple systematic theology books and never found one that is wholly Biblical. In 2013 my seminary work at Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary, under Dr. Steven Pettey, assigned me to read and analyze six volumes of “Systematic Theology” by Lewis Sperry Chafer, the founder and previous president of Dallas Theological Seminary. Initial critique of this neo-evangelical's voluminous, wordy, often unorganized work, answered the question, “Is there not a cause?” A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century is indeed a valid need. It cried out to be written and it was a work that I was privileged to endeavor.

God says he built man with an inner knowledge of the Creator's eternal power and Godhead. Further, God reveals from heaven, to every man, his wrath against all ungodliness. This true Light “*lighteth every man that cometh into the world.*” The Bible says the righteous God, The LORD of hosts, tries the reins and the heart of every man. The prophet Jeremiah writes of God, “*I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.*” The psalmist says, “*my reins also instruct me in the night seasons.*” With his tugs on the reins of your heart, you have come far in your studies, be sure that you have come to a knowledge and submissive acceptance of God's only begotten Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. The beloved Apostle John wrote, “*And many*

*other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.”*

Every Bible student is encouraged to follow through a list of Bible verses called by some the Romans road to heaven. The believing Bible student is encouraged to memorize them. That quintessential list of verses is John 3:16-19, 36, 5:24, Romans 3:10, 23, 5:8, 12, 18-19, 6:23, and 10:9-13. That last reference is God's formal acceptance policy for your receiving his free gift of salvation and eternal life. Got life? The beloved Apostle John writes, “*He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.*” Selah! It is Hebrew for “go-figure”, and it intends that you pause, meditate, and consider what you just read.

A prolegomena for such a work as this is almost as great an undertaking as a work like this. While I add, modify and correct content in the volumes I must add, modify, and correct content in both the prolegomena and epilogue. As I face critique and correction I engage an ongoing struggle to capture in the right wording, to communicate in the right spirit, and to assemble in the proper prose what by intent captures the whole truth. As much as each of us is a work in progress, this prolegomena is a work in progress. The purpose here is to set out the justification and direction of the whole work, but as each of the other eleven volumes is completed this prolegomena should also contain a justification and summary of their individual accomplishments. The processes is spiraling toward a central point.

When I began work on my Ph.D. in 2014 I set a goal to finish this Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century in a five year period. When I finished my Ph.D. in 2017, I reestablished the same goal. This year, after publishing at least a draft of all twelve volumes in 2019, the goal remains. My plea for critique and correction also remains the same. I prefer friendly and constructive critique, but have found the hostile ones to be enlightening and beneficial for rounding out a stronger defense of truth. Feel free to engage in this effort, the many inputs I have received have strengthened the cause.

There is a cause. I pray that this prolegomena fully captures at least that.



# A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century –

## Vol 2 Bibliology

download pdf at

[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/21cent\\_vol02Bibliology.pdf](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/21cent_vol02Bibliology.pdf)

or [www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

### Volume 02 Bibliology

#### Chapter 1 - What is Bibliology?

*We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.*

2Peter 1:19-21<sup>1</sup>

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.*

Psalms 12:6-7

The word *Bibliology* is derived from two Greek words, *Biblios* and *logos*. The former, of course, is *a book, and/or a written document* and the latter word needs to capture our full attention for a moment. “*Ology*” means *a word, a discourse, a doctrine, a teaching, a matter under discussion, a thing spoken of or talked about, also the mental*

---

<sup>1</sup> Holy Bible

*faculty of thinking, meditating, or reasoning about.* Others have limited this suffix by equating it to the English “*study of.*” It is so much bigger than *a study*. Some have degraded “*ology*” so far that they call it *science*. But recall that science is, “The observation, identification, description, experimental investigation, and theoretical explanation of phenomena.”<sup>2</sup> There really is no English equivalent that can capture the depth of *ology* in *Bibliology*. This, of course, is true for theology, Christology, soteriology and all the other *ologies*. that are encountered in a Systematic Theology. Ergo, a Bibliology shall be so thorough it will require meditation, and reasoning.

Bibliology will not be a Bible study, it will be a study of the Bible. Hold your Bible up in your right hand and repeat that statement. What you are holding is going to be the object of our study, more-so our “ology.” What is it? Who wrote it? How did we get it? How accurate is it? How preserved is it? There are things you need to know about what you hold in your hand. Although Bibliology is a study of the Bible and not a Bible study, do not think one can do it with their Bible closed. The Holy Bible says much about itself, and it does so in an inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired way.

Such a thorough study is pertinent. Plenary, verbal inspiration, infallibility, and inerrancy of Scripture has been under continual and diabolical attack since God first uttered Word to man. Genesis 3 records how Satan tried to alter it, but God reaffirmed it. Exodus 32 records how the Moses in his anger broke the Words in stone, but in chapter 34 God replaced them. Second Kings 22 records how Israel had misplaced the Word of God, but Hilkiah the high priest found it, and Josiah, the eight-year-old king brought it back to preeminence. Jeremiah 36 records how the king in his winter house burned it, but God re-wrote it. Each of these sentiments about God's Word is rehearsed through time, even to this day. Man would destroy it, bury it, break it, or reword it, but God has preserved it verbatim for all generations. The authors booklet “Why Baptists Use Only the Authorized King James Bible”<sup>3</sup> should be studied in view of this diabolical attack on the Bible. That booklet is included in its entirety in Volume 01 Prolegomena of this effort.

---

2 American Heritage Dictionary, 3<sup>rd</sup> ed., s.v. “Science.”

3 Available at [www.gsbaptistchurch.com/kjv/kjvonly\\_book\\_man.pdf](http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/kjv/kjvonly_book_man.pdf)

Good men, with powerful pens have well defined the doctrine of inspiration and preservation, and have staunchly rebuked the diabolical attacks that have reared up in their day. The definitions and defenses which they put forth are to be recited here, and there is no finer study and defense of Bible inspiration to be found than Gaussen's work *Theopneustia*.<sup>4</sup> That work, repeated in its entirety in this study, is the basis for this Bibliology for the 21<sup>st</sup> century. The last century writing styles of theologians are complex. Gaussen's style is far more complex than the simple pens for sloven students of our day. But the effort to digest what Gaussen said in French in 1840 will be well worth the effort.

Dr. Gaussen begs a second question, "Can God preserve his infallible, inerrant, inspired words so that one can hold a copy in his hand in this twenty-first century?" In his defence of inspiration of Scripture Gaussen expertly weaves in the collateral argument for its preservation. Today's point of attack against the Holy Bible, the main focus of hell and its minions, the driving call of modernist and liberals states, "Only the original autographs were inspired. And they are all lost to scribal error." This fallacy is then acted upon by perhaps somewhat honest men who sincerely want to help God out with his problem. They begin to copyright English versions of what they think God meant to say in the lost inspired autographs. None of those copyright versions are trusted or used in this development of systematic theology. They are by their own admission, and by copyright law proper, words of men,... mere men, and not Words of God.

The only English Bible trusted and used in this development is the Authorized King James Bible. It was translated by fifty-seven men who were divided into six companies which met in cities of Cambridge, Westminster, and Oxford, to take seven years, 1604 – 1611, to translate God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Old Testament and New Testament books into an authorized Holy Bible

---

4 Gaussen, L., *Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science*, David Scott's translation, Chicago, The Bible Institute Colportage ASS'N., 1840.

which answered only to the original Hebrew and Greek.<sup>5</sup> There was never before, and never since been assembled a group of more scholarly men with a more hallowed purpose. Modernist translators and modern Greek students give no reason whatsoever for anyone to ever say, “A better English translation is...” There is no better English translation.

In our present day, however, there has been a new and overwhelming falling away from the doctrine of inspiration and preservation. The compromise has engulfed all of Dallas Theological Seminary via the Bibliology of Dr. Chafer<sup>6</sup> (1871 - 1952), and thereby impacted all of *Evangelical Christendom*. The compromise has been swallowed up by Los Angeles Baptist Bible Seminary (now Masters College) via the Bibliology of Dr. Thiessen<sup>7</sup> (1883 - 1947), and thereby has invaded Baptist churches. The compromise is this, modernists suppose that: “Only the Original Manuscripts, called *Autographs*, were inspired, inerrant, and infallible.” They say that, “the *autographs* are long gone and there is no inspired, inerrant, infallible copy of the Bible in existence today!” Good Christians have been persuaded by gainsaying salesman to set aside the Words of God and pick up a bible cut and assembled, crafted and copyright by international ecumenical modernists who never did believe in the doctrine of inspiration, inerrancy, infallibility and preservation.

A young Christian had heard in Sunday School that the world and the Devil so hated God's word that they would confiscate and destroy every copy. “It would happen in his life time!” he was told. He took and hid his Sunday School award Bible up in his attic and said, “They will never take away my Holy Bible!”

When he was all grown and a junior in seminary he became

---

5 D.A. Waite, *Defending the King James Bible, A fourfold superiority: Texts, Translators, Technique, Theology, God's Word Kept Intact in English*” The Bible For Today Press, 1992, 62-66

6 Lewis Sperry Chafer, *Systematic Theology*, - Vol 1, Dallas Seminary Press, 1948, 21-125 1948. [Lewis Sperry Chafer was an American theologian. He founded and served as the first president of Dallas Theological Seminary.]

7 Henry Clarence Thiessen, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmann Publishing Company, 1949 [Henry Clarence Thiessen, ? - 1947, was President of Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary, later renamed John MacArthur's The Master's College].

troubled when an old Baptist preacher gave him a flier that listed the twenty verses ripped out of modernist bibles. When he looked, he found that those verses were not in his Bible. The Bible student scoured through his whole seminary looking for a King James Authorized Bible to see what they said and found none on the premises. He took a bus to his father's old house, climbed up into the attic, and retrieved his old Sunday School award Bible, and there were all twenty of those verses. He made this profound observation, “The Devil never did come and confiscate our Bibles, Christians just forsook them and turned them over for new modernist versions that do not reflect the infallible, inerrant, verbally inspired Words of God.”

The truth in that scenario shows subtle power of this diabolical deception. Ecumenical bibles do indeed change doctrine. Baptists, true Baptists, only use the Authorized King James Bible.

A new chapter of Bibliology needs to be penned. The Bible colleges and seminaries of our day are swallowed in this compromise and they cannot write it. A significant portion of this work is used to expose the diabolical compromise which in these last of the last days is engulfing Christendom and leading honest God fearing Christians down the dangerous path of using modernist, ecumenical bibles.

While holding an Authorized King James Bible in my hand I can state with bold assurance, “I hold in my hand the verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible word of God.”

Dr. Gaussen's superb defence of inspiration is given in its entirety in Chapter 4 of this work, but after dealing with “various readings”, which modernist scholars call “errors in the texts”, Dr. Gaussen, in 1850, wrote a very similar statement:

“Not only was the Scripture inspired on the day when God caused it to be written, but that we possess this word inspired eighteen hundred years ago; and that we may still, while holding our sacred text in one hand, and in the other all the readings collected by the learned in seven hundred manuscripts, exclaim, with thankfulness, I hold in my hands my Father’s testament, the eternal word of my God!”<sup>8</sup>

---

8 L. Gaussen, “*Theopneustia: The Plenary Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures*”, Edinburgh & London: Johnstons & Hunter, 1850, Chapter IV Examinations of

This bold assurance of holding a verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible Bible in my hand, in this twenty-first century, is not to be mucked up by naysayers supposing that “only the original autographs were inspired.” It is not to be refuted by double-tongued Johnny-come-lately naysayers accusing a KJV-onlyism of a “Double Inspiration Heresy.” Dr. John M. Asquith gives excellent argument against such double-talk:

“When anyone drops the charge of double inspiration on a King James Bible Believer, the best response is to ask them if they believe in single inspiration. I make no bones about it, I believe and teach that the King James Bible is inspired. That draws a pretty quick response from some who have a pretty muddled understanding of inspiration.”<sup>9</sup>

Double inspiration, loosely defined, might be “The authors of the Holy Bible were inspired, AND the King James translators were ALSO inspired.” The late Dr. Peter Ruckman seems to have started all the “double inspiration” cloud of dirt swirling around, but even Dr. Ruckman did not consistently hold to such a teaching.<sup>10</sup>

---

Objections, Section III. The Various Readings, closing paragraph, citation from authors “21cent\_vol02Bibliology”, pg 194

- 9 Dr. John M. Asquith, Nov 11, 2019, 3 min read, from <https://www.purecambridgetext.com/post/2019/11/09/double-inspiration> accessed 3/27/2022. Dr Ascuith authored “Further Thoughts on the Word of God”, The Black Creek Baptist Church, Black Creek, NY, see [www.purecambridgetext.com/](http://www.purecambridgetext.com/)
- 10 From <https://www.ruckmanism.org/doubleinspiration>, “Our mission is to warn about the dangers of Ruckmanism while upholding the trustworthiness of the KJV”, accessed 3/27/2022, Quote, “While reading Ruckman’s books we do not recall a case in which Ruckman stated something to the effect that the KJV was an extra inspiration, but he strongly implies such by applying the double inspiration argument to those who say the KJV cannot be inspired. Adding to the complexity in the analysis of Ruckman's views is that he at times denies what he seems to affirm about double inspiration of a translation: “We cannot claim direct inspiration in the original Biblical sense for the King James text...” (Ruckman, Peter. Theological Studies. Booklet 15, 1988, p. 15). This seems contradicted by the following, which implies a second inspiration occurred with the KJV: “The Holy Spirit has thrust Himself into the AV committee of 1611 and said, ‘WRITE...!’” (Ruckman, Peter. The Book of Acts. 1974, 1984, p. 356).”

While teaching my grandson's Bible Preservation class at Vision Baptist College, Solid Rock Baptist Church, Berlin, NJ, Dr. James Alter highlighted several quotes from their assigned text that highlighted the truth, “With an Authorized Version in hand we are holding the verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible Word of God.”

In that course text, “King James, His Bible, and its Translators”, in Chapter 19, “The Authorized Version and the 'Originals' ” Laurence M. Vance superbly captures and documents that the Authorized Version, and the Authorized Version alone, captures the originals with a transparency that allows the English reader to hold and grasp their very content and form. Some excerpts of that documentation are given below:

Robert Alter (not James Alter's father), in the preface to his recent translation of Genesis, relates that “The King James Version, as Gerald Hammond, an eminent British authority on Bible translations, has convincingly argued, remains the closest approach for English readers to the original.” Hammond himself maintains that “at its best, which means often, the Authorized Version has a kind of transparency which makes it possible for the reader to see the original clearly ... Through its transparency the reader of the Authorized Version not only sees the original, but also learns how to read it.”<sup>11</sup>

Dr. Vance continues in that vein:

Some have gone a step further, equating the Authorized Versions in some way to the “originals.” The Authorized Version is “the acknowledged representative of the originals,” wrote William Smith in his 1814 work on Metre Psalmody. In a sermon on “The English Bible” preached by John Nevin (1803-1886) of the Western Theological Seminary in 1835, that was published in the *Presbyterian Preacher* in 1836, he said that “perhaps no translation, take it altogether, ever

---

11 Vance, Laurence M., “*King James, His Bible, and it's Translators*”, Vance Publications, Orlando Florida, 2006, 2016, pg 224.

represented more fully and happily the rich and expressive features of the sacred original.” “Time has rendered it sacred,” wrote bishop and Greek grammarian Thomas Middleton (1769-1822). The style of the Authorized Versions, according to Ira Price (1856-1939), late Professor of the Semitic Languages and Literatures in the University of Chicago, “to an astonishing degree is merely the style of the original authors of the Bible....”<sup>12</sup>

Dr. Vance goes on for another page with these hundred year old references validating that the Authorized Version is translated into English with such clarity that its style, wordings, and verbiage completely capture the original Greek and Hebrew style, wordings and verbiage. This attribute of the Authorized Version, its transparency into the originals, is the quality that makes it irreplaceable. Modernist, ecumenical, copyright versions, with their “more understandable” dummed down English, cannot hold a candle to what we have in an Authorized Version! But please allow here a couple more citations where even the critics justify such a brash thesis. Before citing Alexander Roberts in his lecture Dr. Alter first clarified that Robert's book, on its first page, quotes the Authorized Version's translation of 1 Peter 1:21 because Robert's beloved *Revised Version* evidently mistranslates it!<sup>13</sup> Here then is Dr. Vance's citation of God's critic, Alexander Roberts:

It is not surprising, then, that it has been recognized – even

---

12 Ibid.

13 1 Peter 1:20 *Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. 21 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.* The 1881 Revised Version, and its 1901 American Standard Version translates these verses “knowing this first, that no prophecy of scripture is of private interpretation. For no prophecy ever came by the will of man: but men spake from God, being moved by the Holy Ghost (ASV Spirit).” Note that the latter does not give transparency to the original in style (“no prophecy ever came...” vs *prophecy came not in old time...*), in wording (RV completely dropped *holy*), or in verbiage (“men spake from God, being moved...” vs *holy men of God spake as they were moved...*). It is little wonder that Roberts opens his book quoting the Authorized Version and not his beloved Revised Version!

by the critics – that the Authorized Version is no ordinary translation. Alexander Roberts (1826-1901), one of the translators of the *Revised Version*, wrote in his *Companion to the Revised Version of the New Testament* (1881) about the very book he took apart in revising: “It (The AV) is probably the best version ever made for public use. It is not simply a translation but a living reproduction of the original Scriptures in idiomatic English, by men as reverent and devout as they were learned. It reads like an original work, such as the prophets and apostles might have written in the seventeenth century for English readers.” ...

... Another translator of the *Revised Version*, Archbishop Richard Chenevix Trench (1807-1952), maintained in his *On the Authorized Version of the New Testament in Connection with some Recent Proposals for Its Revision* (1858) that “we must never leave out of sight that for a great multitude of readers the English Version is not the translation of an inspired Book, but is itself the inspired Book.”<sup>14</sup>

I dare not give Vance's whole chapter here, his documentation is indeed overwhelming, but Dr. Alter's lecture highlighted enough of it to elicit a hearty “Amen and Amen” (Greek) or even a “Verily, Verily” (English) from anyone who has called this King James Bible inerrant, infallible, and inspired. Vance does continue on the next page:

It is only natural that language equating the Authorized Version with the originals would also include explicit references to what some Christians believed to be its divine status. The poet William Blake (1757-1827) who claimed to be able to “read Greek as fluently as an Oxford scholar,” in his only recorded mention of the Authorized Versions, remarked that “astonishing indeed is the English translation, it is almost word for word, and if the Hebrew Bible is as well translated, which I do not doubt it is, we need not doubt of its having been translated as well as written by the Holy Ghost.” ... The Irish playwright George Bernard Shaw (1856-195)

---

14 Ibid. pg 225-226.

remarked that the translators of the Authorized Version “made a translation so magnificent that to this day the common human Britisher or citizen of the United States of North America accepts and worships it as a single book by a single author, the book being the Book of Books and the author being God.”<sup>15</sup>

The documentation continues for several more pages. It is documentation which affirms that this belief in an inspired English Bible is as old as the Authorized Version itself, and it will not be dismissed by a few naysayers trying to market their modernist, ecumenical, copyright bibles. Let this excerpt be summarized by Vance's aforementioned James Barr who tells us that:

in much popular fundamentalism there was practically no awareness of an original text at all, much less of any variations within that original: what functioned as the inspired text was the English of the Authorized Version. Officially, no doubt, there was some awareness that the translation was not the original, but in practice this made little or no difference, since for all all practical (i.e. all religious) purposes the English translation was a precise transcript of the will of God. This Authorized Version fundamentalism still continues in many quarters.<sup>16</sup>

The book you are holding, and the other 11 volumes of this *Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century*, is written from one of those fundamental quarters. Dr. Vance interrupts his superb documentation to say, “Every generation of scholars since the Authorized Version made its appearance, has been responsible for perpetrating two myths.” Those said in a more folksy way, every generation thinks they are wiser than their grandpa. They are generally very wrong, mistaking more knowledge for more wisdom. The second myth is that the original Greek and Hebrew languages are far superior to the English. Both myths are exposed as faulty by Vance's chapter “The Authorized

---

15 Ibid., pg 227.

16 Ibid., pg 228-229.

Version and the Originals.”

This is not too much depth for this introduction, it is still introductory. Satan, and the marketers for modernist, ecumenical, copyright bibles will rail against the King James Bible from every quarter. Here be aware that their railing accusations are villainous in purpose and they are vain. In his Chapter 13 “Editions of the Authorized Version,” Dr. Vance documents against their railing accusation, they supposing that the Authorized Version's text was significantly altered in several revisions. Dr. Vance documents each one of the changes and shows the ongoing integrity of the text. Dr. Vance's book is well worth the read for the serious Bible student. Gaussen's book “*Theopneustia*” is given in its entirety in Chapter 4 of this work and it defends well why we can call our Bible inerrant, infallible, and inspired despite “The Various Readings” of the original languages.

But let us not get the cart before the horse here. There are indeed enemies to God's exhortation that “All Scripture is given by *inspiration*,” but their efforts should not be completely debunked before a viable working definition of inspiration, inerrancy, and infallibility are well grounded. Let us review some background information about the Holy Bible and then delve into Gaussen's exceptional defense of inspiration.

## Chapter 2 - The Holy Bible, Some Background

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

2Timothy 3:16-17

*Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth.*

Psalms 78:1

Before delving into Bibliology proper, a few introductory facts about the Holy Bible are in order.

The Holy Bible is a book of books. It is a collection of sixty-six books written by forty-four authors over a period of 1,592 years.<sup>17</sup> It has two major divisions with thirty-nine books in the Old Testament, and twenty-seven books in the New Testament.

The Bible, as a collection of books, is functionally organized:

- **Old Testament** (39 books)
  - **Law** (5 ea) - Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy
  - **History** (12 ea) - Joshua, Judges, Ruth, 1 Samuel, 2 Samuel, 1 Kings, 2 Kings, 1 Chronicles, 2 Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther
  - **Wisdom** (5 ea) – Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, Song of Solomon
  - **Prophecy** (5 Major, 12 Minor)
    - **Major** – Isaiah, Jeremiah, Lamentations, Ezekiel, Daniel
    - **Minor** – Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi
- **New Testament** (27 books)

---

<sup>17</sup> God and Moses wrote at Mount Sinai in 1492 BC (a memorable date for some), and the Apostle John penned the last book in approximately 100 AD.

- **Gospels** (4 ea) – Matthew, Mark, Luke, John
- **History** (1 ea) - Acts
- **Epistles** (Letters) (13 Pauline, 8 General)
  - Pauline – Romans, 1 Corinthians, 2 Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colosians, 1 Thessalonians, 2 Thessalonians, 1 Timothy, 2 Timothy, Titus, Philemon
  - General – Hebrews, James, 1 Peter, 2 Peter, 1 John, 2 John, 3 John, Jude
- **Prophecy** (1 ea) – The Revelation of Jesus Christ

Prior to the New Testament the Hebrew Bible was functionally organized:<sup>18</sup>

- **Torah (The Law)** (5 ea) –
  - Bereishith (In the beginning...) (Genesis)
  - Shemoth (The names...) (Exodus)
  - Vayiqra (And He called...) (Leviticus)
  - Bamidbar (In the wilderness...) (Numbers)
  - Devarim (The words...) (Deuteronomy)
- **NEVI'IM (The Prophets):** (21 ea) –
  - Yehoshua (Joshua)
  - Shoftim (Judges)
  - Shmuel (I & II Samuel)
  - Melakhim (I & II Kings)
  - Yeshayah (Isaiah)
  - Yirmyah (Jeremiah)
  - Yechezqel (Ezekiel)
  - The Twelve (treated as one book):
    - Hoshea (Hosea)
    - Yoel (Joel)
    - Amos
    - Ovadyah (Obadiah)
    - Yonah (Jonah)
    - Mikhah (Micah)
    - Nachum

---

<sup>18</sup> Biblia Hebraica Stuttgartensia, second edition, amended 1977, at [www.jewfaq.org](http://www.jewfaq.org) (Accessed 02/24/2016).

- Chavaququ (Habbakkuk)
- Tzefanyah (Zephaniah)
- Chaggai
- Zekharyah (Zechariah)
- Malakhi
- **KETHUVIM (The Writings):** (13 ea)-
  - Tehillim (Psalms)
  - Mishlei (Proverbs)
  - Iyov (Job)
  - Shir Ha-Shirim (Song of Songs)
  - Ruth
  - Eikhah (Lamentations)
  - Qoheleth (the author's name) (Ecclesiastes)
  - Esther
  - Daniel
  - Ezra & Nechemyah (Nehemiah) (treated as one book)
  - Divrei Ha-Yamim (The words of the days) (Chronicles)

This collection of sixty-six books makes up one book, The Holy Bible. “Each book is complete in itself, and has its own theme and analysis”<sup>19</sup> and yet the Bible is one book. C.I. Scofield amply illustrates this truth in his *Panoramic View of the Bible*.

*The Bible is One Book.* Seven great marks attest this unity. (1) From Genesis the Bible bears witness to *one God*. Wherever he speaks or acts he is consistent with himself, and with the total revelation concerning him. (2) The Bible forms one *continuous story* – the story of humanity in relation to God. (3) The Bible hazards the most unlikely *predictions* concerning the future, and, when the centuries have brought round the appointed time, records their fulfillment. (4) The Bible is a *progressive* unfolding of truth. Nothing is told all at once, and once for all. The law is, “first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn.” Without the possibility of collusion, often with centuries between, one writer of Scripture takes up an earlier revelation, adds to it, lays down the pen, and in due time

---

19 C.I. Scofield, “*Scofield Reference Bible*,” Oxford University Press, Inc. 1909, v.

another man moved by the Holy Spirit, and another, and another, add new details till the whole is complete. (5) From beginning to end the Bible testifies to *one redemption*. (6) From beginning to end the Bible has *one great theme* – the person and work of the Christ. (7) And, finally, these writers, some forty-four in number, writing through twenty centuries, have produced a *perfect harmony* of doctrine in progressive unfolding. This is, to every candid mind, the unanswerable proof of the Divine inspiration of the Bible.<sup>20</sup>

## Amazing Bible Facts and Statistics

The Bible is an amazing collection of God's words, with some amazing facts and statistics.<sup>21</sup>

### **BIBLE FACTS:**

The system of chapters was introduced in A.D. 1238 by Cardinal Hugo de S. Caro, while the verse notations were added in 1551 by Robertus Stephanus, after the advent of printing.

A Bible in the University of Gottingen is written on 2,470 palm leaves.

According to statistics from Wycliffe International, the Society of Gideons, and the International Bible Society, the number of new Bibles that are sold, given away, or otherwise distributed in the United States is about 168,000 per day.

The Bible can be read aloud in 70 hours.

There are 8,674 different Hebrew words in the Bible, 5,624 different Greek words, and 12,143 different English words in the King James Version.

A number of verses in the Bible (KJV) contain all but 1 letter of the alphabet: Ezra 7:21 contains all but the letter j; Joshua 7:24, 1 Kings 1:9, 1 Chronicles 12:40, 2 Chronicles 36:10, Ezekiel 28:13, Daniel 4:37, and Haggai 1:1 contain all but q; 2 Kings 16:15 and 1 Chronicles 4:10 contain all but z; and Galatians 1:14 contains all but k.

---

<sup>20</sup> Ibid.

<sup>21</sup> Amazing Bible Facts And Statistics [http://www.agards-bible-timeline.com/q10\\_bible-facts.html](http://www.agards-bible-timeline.com/q10_bible-facts.html) I copied this from various other sites across the Internet, and I did cross check the information for accuracy (Accessed 12/27/97).

**BIBLE STATISTICS:**

Number of books in the Bible: 66  
Chapters: 1,189 Verses: 31,101 Words: 783,137 Letters: 3,566,480  
Number of promises given in the Bible: 1,260  
Commands: 6,468 Predictions: over 8,000  
Fulfilled prophecy: 3,268 verses Unfulfilled prophecy: 3,140  
Number of questions: 3,294  
Longest name: Mahershalalhashbaz (Isaiah 8:1)  
Longest verse: Esther 8:9 (78 words)  
Shortest verse: John 11:35 (2 words: "Jesus wept").  
Middle books: Micah and Nahum  
Middle verse: Psalm 118:8 Middle chapter: Psalm 117  
Shortest chapter (by number of words): Psalm 117  
Longest book: Psalms (150 chapters)  
Shortest book (by number of words): 3 John  
Longest chapter: Psalm 119 (176 verses)  
Number of times the word "God" appears: 3,358  
Number of times the word "Lord" appears: 7,736  
Number of different authors: 40  
Number of languages the Bible has been translated into: over 1,200

**OLD TESTAMENT STATISTICS:**

Number of books: 39  
Chapters: 929 Verses: 23,114 Words: 602,585 Letters: 2,278,100  
Middle book: Proverbs Middle chapter: Job 20  
Middle verses: 2 Chronicles 20:17,18  
Smallest book: Obadiah Shortest verse: 1 Chronicles 1:25  
Longest verse: Esther 8:9 Longest chapter: Psalm 119  
Largest book: Psalms

**NEW TESTAMENT STATISTICS:**

Number of books: 27  
Chapters: 260 Verses: 7,957 Words: 180,552 Letters: 838,380  
Middle book: 2 Thessalonians Middle chapters: Romans 8, 9  
Middle verse: Acts 27:17  
Smallest book: 3 John Shortest verse: John 11:35  
Longest verse: Revelation 20:4 Longest chapter: Luke 1  
Largest book: Luke

## Chapter 2 – The Holy Bible, Some Background

### Chronological Bible Books Writing Order

Book	Chapters	Date BC	Book	Chapters	Date BC
Gen	50	-4003	Zech	14	-519
Job	42	-1500	Esth	10	-483
Exod	40	-1499	Ezra 7-10	10	-458
Lev	27	-1495	1Chron	29	-457
Num	36	-1490	2Chron	36	-455
Deut	34	-1451	Neh	13	-444
Josh	24	-1450	Mal	4	-397
Judg	21	-1425	Matt	28	37
Ruth	4	-1322	James	5	44.5
1Sam	31	-1171	Gal	6	49
2Sam	24	-1056	1Thes	5	54
1King	22	-1015	2Thes	3	54.5
Psalm	0	-1000	1Cor	16	56
SoS	8	-990	Mark	16	57
Prov	30	-984	2Cor	13	57
Eccl	12	-980	Rom	16	58
2King	25	-896	Eph	6	60
Obedia	1	-887	1Pet	5	60
Jonah	4	-862	Col	4	60.1
Joel	3	-800	Phm	1	61.2
Amos	9	-787	1Tim	6	63
Hosea	14	-785	Tit	3	63.2
Isaiah	66	-760	2Tim	4	63.5
Micah	7	-750	Luke	24	64
Nah	3	-713	Philp	4	64.1
Zeph	3	-630	Act	28	65
Jerem	52	-629	2Pet	3	66
Hab	3	-626	Jude	1	66
Dan	12	-607	Heb	13	70
Ezek	48	-595	John	21	88
Lam	5	-588	1John	5	90
Ezra 1-6	10	-536	2John	1	90.1
Hag	2	-520	3John	1	90.2
Zech	14	-519	Rev	22	96

### Chronological NT Books Writing Order

Book	Author	Date AD	Book	Author	Date AD
Matt	Matthew	37	1Tim	Paul	63
James	James	44.5	Tit	Paul	63.2
Gal	Paul	49	2Tim	Paul	63.5
1Thes	Paul	54	Luke	Luke	64
2Thes	Paul	54.5	Philp	Paul	64.1
1Cor	Paul	56	Act	Luke	65
Mark	Mark	57	2Pet	Peter	66
2Cor	Paul	57	Jude	Jude	66
Rom	Paul	58	Heb	Paul?	70
Eph	Paul	60	John	John	88
1Pet	Peter	60	1John	John	90
Col	Paul	60.1	2John	John	90.1
Phm	Paul	61.2	3John	John	90.2
1Tim	Paul	63	Rev	John	96

### Chronological Paul Epistles Writing Order

Book	Date AD	Book	Date AD
Gal	49	2Thes	54.5
1Thes	54	1Cor	56
2Thes	54.5	2Cor	57
1Cor	56	Rom	58
2Cor	57	Eph	60
Rom	58	Col	60.1
Eph	60	Phm	61.2
Col	60.1	1Tim	63
Phm	61.2	Tit	63.2
1Tim	63	2Tim	63.5
Gal	49	Philp	64.1
1Thes	54	2Pet	66
2Thes	54.5	Heb	70

## Timeline of the English Bible and the Corrupt Textual Critic

Ecumenical modernists have brazenly attack the Authorized English Bible trying to replace it with their ecumenical copyright bibles. It is important to understand their diabolical movement to get rid of the Authorized King James Bible. Their relentless efforts aside, it is still reported that 55% all Bible readers read the King James Bible, and for those who read it daily and systematically that percentage exceeds 85%. Better than any other Baptist Preacher I know Dr. James A. Alter<sup>22</sup>, in clear concise presentations, exposes the malicious intent of the ecumenical modernists and their deceptive “textual criticism”. The “Timeline of the English Bible” that he compiled provides an exceptional tool for educating oneself on how we got a “perfect” English Bible and how we need no other. His “Biblical Preaching Workshop” notes have an exposé of the diabolical purpose of the modernist's “Textual Criticism.” Every Christian needs to expose themselves to these clarifying truths, and both are reprinted below with permission of my friend, Brother James Alter.

### *The Timeline of the English Bible.*

*“And the child Samuel ministered unto the Lord before Eli. And the word of the Lord was precious in those days; there was no open vision” (1Sam. 3:1).*

#### Glossary

• **Inspiration:** Job 32:7-8 *“And Elihu the son of Barachel the Buzite answered and said, I am young, and ye are very old;... I said, Days should speak, and multitude of years should teach wisdom. ... But **there is a spirit in man: and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them***

---

22 James A. Alter has pastored the Grace Baptist Church in Sidney, Ohio, since 1997 (25 years). He has a passion for the Lord, Biblical preaching, evangelism, discipleship, and world missions. He is co-founder of Ancient Baptist Press (<http://www.ancientbaptist.com> ), co-author of “Why Baptist? – The Significance of Baptist Principles In An Ecumenical Age”, (by James Alter & Dolton Robertson) (<http://www.ancientbaptist.com/book-whybaptist.html> ), author of “Baptism Booklet – The Significance of Believer's Baptism In An Ecumenical Age” (<http://www.ancientbaptist.com/book-baptism.html> ), editor of Ancient Baptist Journal and is an advisory board member of the Baptist History Preservation Society (<https://www.baptisthistorypreservation.com> ).

*understanding.”*

• **Inscription:** Jer. 36:18 *“Then Baruch answered them, He pronounced all these words unto me with his mouth, and I wrote them with ink in the book.”*

• **Preservation:** Ps. 12:6-7 *“The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.”*

• **Translation:** Rev. 3:8 *“I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.”*

• "I call God to record, against the day we shall appear before our Lord Jesus to give a reckoning of our doings, that I never altered one syllable of God's word against my conscience, nor would do this day, if all that is in the earth, whether it be honour, pleasure, or riches, might be given me." David Teems, *“Tyndale”*, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2013, p.275.

• "Part of any translator's task is to determine as closely as possible the right sense of a word, to find an equivalent that best conveys a thought as it migrates from one language to another, and to do so while mimicking both intensity and weight." David Teems, *“Tyndale”*, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2013, p. 97.

• "If for my pains therein taken, if for my poverty, if for mine exile out of my natural country and bitter absence from my friends, if for my hunger, my thirst, my cold, the great danger wherewith I am everywhere encompassed, and finally, if for innumerable other hard and sharp fightings which I endure, not yet feeling their asperity by reason I hoped with my labors to do honour to God, true service to my prince, and pleasure to his commons; how is it that his Grace, this considering, may either by himself think, or by the persuasions of others be brought to think, that in this doing I should not show a pure mind, a true and incorrupt zeal and affection to his Grace?" David Teems, *“Tyndale”*, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2013, p. 96.

1330 John Wycliffe born at Wycliffe-on-Tees.

1345 Wycliffe goes to Oxford.

### **1382 Wycliffe Bible.**

John Wycliffe preached throughout the majority of his life.

He preached against the corrupt church.

If your views didn't match the Bible they were wrong.

No Pope or council was perfect, and that the clergy should help the people and lead them closer to Christ instead of thinking about being princes of the Church.

The Bishop of London prohibited him from preaching in 1382.

1384 John Wycliffe passed away on December 31, 1384, in Lutterworth, United Kingdom.

1395 Corrected edition of the Wycliffe Bible released by John Purvey.

1402 Jan Hus began preaching in Prague demanding the reformation of the Church.

Hus preached against the moral failings of clergy, bishops, and even the papacy from his pulpit.

Like Wycliffe, Hus spoke out against indulgences.

Hus argued for religious liberty and asserted that no pope or bishop had the right to take up the sword in the name of the Church.

He taught that a person obtains forgiveness of sins by true repentance, not by a donation of money to the church.

Hus's followers considered the church a fraudulent mob of adulterers and "Simonists," people who bought their positions.

1405 June 24, 1405, Pope Innocent VII, directed Hus's archbishop to counter Wycliffe's heretical teachings, and to ban any further attacks on the clergy.

Hus, however, continued to promote Wycliffe's ideas.

1415 Jan Hus condemned as a heretic at the Council of Constance on July 6, 1415, burned at the stake, his ashes scattered in Rhine River.

Wycliffe condemned as a heretic at Council of Constance in Germany.

1428 The Pope was so infuriated by Wycliffe's teachings and his translation of the Bible, that 44 years after Wycliffe's death, his bones are dug-up, crushed, and scattered in the River Swift!

Poem about the scattering of his ashes:

The Avon to the Severn runs,  
The Severn to the sea,

And Wycliffe's dust shall spread abroad,  
Wide as the waters be.

1453 Fall of Byzantine Empire, fall of Constantinople (Istanbul).

1456 Johannes Gutenberg produces the first printed Bible, in Latin.

A hundred editions were printed by others before the end of the  
fifteenth century.

1488 The first Hebrew Old Testament was printed at Soncino, Italy by  
orthodox Jews.

1504 Desiderius Erasmus discovers a manuscript of the annotations on  
the New Testament by Lorenzo (Laurentius)Valla (1407-1457).

It was Valla who in 1440 had proved that the "Donation of  
Constantine" was a forgery.

Valla was the first westerner since the patristic age to enjoy a  
thorough knowledge of Greek and to apply it extensively in his  
study of the New Testament.

1505 Erasmus publishes Valla's Adnotationes on the New Testament.  
Laurence Vance cites Basil Hall, Humanists and Protestants from  
Erasmus' preface to this work:

"What crime is it in Laurentius if after collating some ancient and  
correct Greek copies he has noted in the New Testament, which  
is derived from the Greek, some passages which either differ  
from our versions or seem to be inaptly rendered owing to a  
passing want of vigilance in the translator, or are expressed more  
significantly in the Greek; or, finally, if it appears that something  
in our text is corrupt."

1509 Henry VIII becomes king of England.

1516 Desiderius Erasmus publishes the first printed Greek New  
Testament. This was produced in five editions: 1516, 1519,  
1522, 1527, and 1535.

1517 Indulgence controversy; Martin Luther posts the Ninety-Five  
Theses,

William Tyndale goes to Cambridge (or so it is thought).

1519 Family of six is burned at the stake for teaching children the  
Lord's Prayer in English (Coventry).

1520 Luther publishes The Appeal to the German Nobility, demanding  
that lay people be allowed to read the Bible for themselves, 1520  
Pope Leo X issues a bull, Exsurge Domine, 15 June, decreeing

- that Martin Luther's books were to be sought, confiscated, and destroyed (burned).
- 1521 Diet of Worms;  
Luther works on translating the New Testament;  
Cardinal Wolsey has public burning of Lutheran books at St. Paul's Cross.
- 1522 Luther publishes German translation of the New Testament.
- 1524 Tyndale meets with Cuthbert Tunstall, (Prince Bishop of Durham) asks permission to translate the Bible into English, and is refused. Leaves England forever.
- 1525 Tyndale goes back to Hamburg, proceeds to Cologne, Germany. Begins printing the New Testament in the city of Cologne. Tyndale's first attempt to publish the New Testament in English at Cologne is thwarted by Englishman, Cochlaeus (John Dobneck). Has to flee Cologne with only part of the translation printed (the prologue to the Epistle of Paul to the Romans and Matt. 1-22).
- 1526 Tyndale New Testament Published** at Worms, Germany.  
By March copies of the New Testament reach England.  
On 24 October, Cuthbert Tunstall attacks Tyndale's N.T. in a sermon. Claims 2000 errors.
- 1530 Tyndale publishes his translation of the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Old Testament)
- 1531 Tyndale publishes his translation of Jonah
- 1532 Thomas Cranmer appointed Archbishop of Canterbury
- 1533 Anne Boleyn marries Henry VIII and is crowned queen of England.
- 1534 Henry enacts Supremacy and Uniformity Acts  
Tyndale publishes his revised New Testament.  
Tyndale moves into the English House in Antwerp.
- 1535 Myles Coverdale Bible published**-first complete Printed English Bible.  
Execution of Sir Thomas More for high treason (July).  
City of Geneva declares itself to be a Protestant republic.  
Tyndale is betrayed by Henry Phillips and arrested.  
Tyndale is imprisoned at Vilvorde Castle.
- 1536 Henry VIII Dissolution of the monasteries.  
John Calvin arrives in Geneva.

William Tyndale is strangled to death and burned at the stake (October 6)

Tyndale's last words, "Lord open the King of England's eyes."

**1537 Matthews Bible published** by John Rogers.

Anne Boleyn is executed for high treason May 19.

**1539 Great Bible published**

1540 Execution of Thomas Cromwell, advocate of Protestant ideas and champion of English translations of the Bible.

1547 Death of Henry VIII; succeeded by Edward VI.

1553 Death of Edward VI; succeeded by Mary Tudor. English Protestants begin to seek refuge in Europe, including Geneva.

1556 Execution of Thomas Cranmer.

1557 Publication of William Whittingham's Geneva New Testament.

1558 John Knox publishes "The First Blast of the Trumpet Against the Monstrous Regiment of Women."

Mary Queen of Scots (future mother of James IV) marries Francis Valois, Dauphin who became King of France 1559 until his death in 1560.

Mary Tudor (Mary I of England or "Bloody" Mary) dies.

Elizabeth Tudor proclaimed Elizabeth I of England.

1559 Elizabethan "Settlement of Religion." Religious refugees begin to return to England from their exile in Europe.

**1560 Geneva Bible published.**

Francis II, (Husband of Mary Queen of Scots), dies at age sixteen.

1565 Mary Queen of Scots marries Henry Stuart, Lord Darnley, (father of James VI).

1566 Lord Darnley and associates murder David Rizzio in the queen's bedchamber at Holyrood Palace on March 9.

James born June 19 at Edinburgh Castle between nine and ten in the morning.

James baptized December 17—Charles James, Prince and Steward of Scotland; Duke of Rothesay; Earl of Kyle, Carrick, and Cunningham; Lord of the Isles; and Baron of Renfrew.

1567 Lord Darnley murdered at Kirk o' Field.

Mary Queen of Scots marries James Hepburn, Earl of Bothwell.

Mary imprisoned at Lochleven Castle.

Mary forced to sign voluntary demission (abdication).

July 29, James Stuart crowned James VI of Scotland at Church of the Holy Rood. He is thirteen months old.

**1568 Bishops' Bible published.**

1569 Geneva Bible published in Scotland 1571 Every cathedral ordered to set up a Bishops' Bible for regular use.

1570 King James VI begins education under George Buchanan and Peter Young.

Papal Bull (Pius V) proclaiming Elizabeth I, "the pretended queen of England," a heretic, releasing all Catholic subjects from allegiance to her.

1571 James's first appearance in public as king (five years old).  
Addresses Scottish parliament.

1579 Arrival of Esme Stuart, Sieur d'Aubigny.

1581 James Douglas, fourth Earl of Morton, the last Regent of Scotland, executed for alleged complicity in the murder of Lord Darnley.

James assumes rule of Scotland.

1582 Douai-Rheims New Testament published.

1583 John Whitgift appointed archbishop of Canterbury.

1587 Mary, Queen of Scots beheaded at Fotheringhay Castle.

1588 English navy defeats Spanish Armada.

1589 James VI marries Anne of Denmark in Oslo, Norway.

1603 Elizabeth I dies, Succeeded by James VI of Scotland.

Millenary petition presented to James.

Outbreak of plague.

Coronation of James and Anne.

1604 Hampton Court Conference, Parliament refuses union of Scotland and England.

Death of John Whitgift, archbishop of Canterbury; succeeded by Richard Bancroft.

1605 The Gunpowder Treason and Plot.

1609 Publication begins of the Douai-Rheims Old Testament; completed 1610.

1610 Final editing of new Bible translation; death of Richard Bancroft, Archbishop of Canterbury.

**1611 Publication of the King James Bible.**

1616 James forbids further editions of the Geneva Bible.

King James Bible becomes the only English Bible.

1629 Edition done at Cambridge.

"First systematic refinement of the Authorized Version" Vance

"Anonymous editor or editors made more changes to the text than any future editors." Vance

1638 Edition done at Cambridge.

Two of the editors were translators of the 1611, Samuel Ward, John Bois .

This remained the standard text for over one hundred years.

1762 Edition of at Cambridge by Francis Sawyer Parris (1704-1760).

1769 Edition by Benjamin Blayney at Oxford.

1804 British and Foreign Bible Society founded.

1816 American Bible Society founded.

1836 British and Foreign Bible Society and American Bible Society refuse to print translations made by William Carey and Adoniram Judson's followers.

Report made by board of managers to the American Bible Society.

1837 American and Foreign Bible Society (Baptist) founded.

1850 American Bible Union founded.

The Commonly Received Version of the New Testament of Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, with Several Hundred Emendations, edited by Spencer H. Cone and William H. Wyckoff. New York: Lewis Colby.

1862-64 New Testament. The New Testament of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. The Common English Version, Corrected by the Final Committee of the American Bible Union. New York: American Bible Union, 1862-64.

This thorough revision of the 1850 edition was prepared by various scholars and edited by Thomas J. Conant, Horatio B. Hackett, and Asahel C. Kendrick.

It was first issued in parts, the Gospels appearing in 1862, and Acts through II Corinthians in 1863.

A volume containing the complete NT first appeared in 1864.

1865 New Testament. The New Testament of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. The Common English Version, Corrected by the Final Committee of the American Bible Union. Second Revision. New York: American Bible Union, 1865.

This was a slight revision of the edition of 1862-4.

1870 Convocation of Canterbury calls for Revision of the Bible.

1881 Revised version of New Testament published.

Westcott and Hort Greek Text published.

1885 Revised Version Old Testament published.

1891 New Testament. The New Testament of Our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. American Bible Union Version. Improved Edition. Philadelphia: American Baptist Publication Society, 1891.

This revision of the 1865 edition was issued in two editions, one with baptizo translated "immerse" and one with "baptize."

1901 American Standard Version published.

1912 Bible. The Holy Bible Containing the Old and New Testaments, An Improved Edition (Based in Part on the Bible Union Version). Philadelphia: American Baptist Publication Society, 1913.

Adapted from:

- *"In the Beginning"*, Alister McGrath, Random House, 2001.
- *"Tyndale"*, David Teems, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2012.
- *"Majestie"*, David Teems, Thomas Nelson Publishers, 2010.
- *"King James His Bible and its Translators"*, Laurence M. Vance, Vance Publications, Second Edition, 2016.

Compiled by James A. Alter.

### *The Malicious Intent of Textual Criticism.*

An excellent point made in James Alter's Biblical Preaching Workshop expounds that modernist textual criticism is meant to destroy the Traditional Text. That outline point is repeated below:

#### **IV. Never forget that these canons ("scholarly" guidelines for textual criticism) were designed to destroy the Traditional Text.**

A. In 1628 Codex Alexandrinus was given to King Charles I by Cyril Lucar, the patriarch of Constantinople.

1. Notice what this event launched.

2. The Parchments of the Faith, George E. Merrill, American Baptist Publication Society. 1894, He was president of Colgate University.

- a) "English scholars became greatly interested, and Fell and Walton and Mill led the way, followed by Bentley and others. France and Germany advanced the work, Simon (1689-1695) contributing largely to the discontent with the received text, and Griesbach, Scholz, and others appealing to larger supplies of materials, and employing better methods of study."
- b) "But it was reserved for Lachmann, [Karl Lachmann] beginning in 1831, to apply the great principles of criticism which are generally followed at the present time, (1894) and which declare a complete emancipation from the received text in order to appeal to the most ancient and valuable manuscripts, many of which had then come to light, while many others of the first value have since come into our possession."
- c) "Karl Lachmann leads the whole band of modern scholars, as we have said, for he was the first to proclaim freedom from slavery to the received text, and to declare the necessity of going back to the most ancient materials accessible" (Note The Myth of Academic Objectivity).
- d) "But in the year 1831, his edition of the New Testament in Greek appeared and at once placed him among the first of biblical scholars. In this work he went back to the oldest Greek manuscripts then to be obtained, and made large use of the Greek Fathers, while he appealed to the earliest Latin whenever discordant readings in the Greek sources made it necessary to do so. Comparatively few Greek codices were then at his command, but the boldness of his plan, and the enunciation of an entirely new principle in criticism of the New Testament text, were of quite as much value as the first edition of his work itself."
- e) "A second edition soon appeared in which he carried the principle yet farther. To discard all traditional authority inhering in the Textus Receptus, to pass by the work of former editors and appeal directly to the most ancient manuscripts themselves, to question the Fathers and from their quotations to discover the Bible of their day, to summon as witnesses the earliest versions, and comparing all to prepare a text quite independent of that which had been relied upon previously, was the new effort of Lachmann, in which he laid the broad foundations of the modern

science of textual criticism."

f) Constantine Von Tischendorf, "As early as 1838, at the age of twenty-five, he had formed the plan of a critical edition of the New Testament to be founded solely on ancient authorities,"

B. This "Modern Science" of "textual criticism" was not an attempt to discern the true reading of the text. It was primarily an effort to destroy the influence of the Textus Receptus.

#### **V. Alan Shelby's Cannons on the Canons.**

A. "The more *absurd* reading is the original", is only correct if you do not accept verbal *inspiration*.

B. "The shorter reading is the original", is only correct if you do not accept continuous *preservation*. You are assuming the Holy Spirit fell asleep, allowed his word to be lost for eighteen some odd centuries, and only lately did we re-find it.

C. "The older the reading is the more probable original", is only correct if you venerate tradition. You are superstitiously following a relic for no objective reason. It is amazing to me, how they prefer lately discovered MSS – not in common use for centuries – yet they refuse a late, majority-received text!

#### **VI. Why the Traditional Received Text is Authoritative: The traditional, Eastern, Byzantine, Majority, King James text.**

A. Is easier to read, and the original was given by inspiration.

B. Is longer and "all the words" were preserved in history (Jer.36).

C. Was used and worn out, so copies we have are in the majority, but later in date. ... <sup>23</sup>

Dr. James Alter had much detail to add in teaching through these notes and his "Timeline of the English Bible." He has promised to publish a book capturing all this added detail. In the workshop Q&A he succinctly clarified that in order to translate the Holy Bible into a receptor language, that language had to first be a written language, and then the written language would have to be expanded, emboldened, extended and reinforced in order to capture the exactness of God's Holy Words. Missionary Adoniram Judson (1788-1850) did exactly that for the Burmese people. Incidentally, the fifty-seven men who were divided

---

<sup>23</sup> James A. Alter, "Biblical Preaching Workshop – Believing the Bible You Preach", 2 Sep 2022, pg10-12

into six companies which met in cities of Cambridge, Westminster, and Oxford, to take seven years, 1604 – 1611, to translate God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Old Testament and New Testament books into an authorized Holy Bible, did exactly that for the English speaking people. This author looks forward to Dr. Alters upcoming book. Some of the expanded, emboldened, extended, and reinforced English of the Authorized King James Bible will be better comprehended by examining the “thee”s and “thou”s of an accurate Bible translation.

### **The Thees and Thous of an Accurate Bible Translation**

Ecumenical modernists have argued that the 'thee's and 'thou's ought to be removed from the Bible because they have no place in 'modern' English, but “me” don't think it is right for “I” to take accuracy away from of our English Bible. Even the third grade English student must learn when to use the first person nominative and objective pronouns “I” and “me.” Why then allow modernist, ecumenical translators to change these insightful second person singular pronouns which carefully indicate the objective, nominative, and possessive parts of speech as they are carefully used in accurately detailed written literature. “I” do not think they should. Dost thou? Again, Dost (second person singular present tense of do), thou (second person singular nominative personal pronoun)?

If you can learn where to use the first person singular pronouns I, me, my and mine, and their plural counterparts, we, us, our and ours, like most of us (not we) did in kindergarten, don't be hasty to give up on the important speech indicators of thou, thee, thine and thy as used in an accurately translated Holy Bible.

These second person singular pronouns were not translated into the King James Authorized English Bible because English people spoke like that back then, they did not. Actually people began to speak like that because the Bible taught them how to read. Today it would be good if we let the Bible teach us how to read rather than letting our sloven use of language pollute the written words of God, as the ecumenical modernists did, ... and do.

The Hebrew and Greek languages, from which our English Bible is translated, have much more exacting indicators for pronouns and parts of speech, for who is speaking and to whom. Some of this accuracy is

lost in translating to the old, well structured, English language. Much more of it is compromised when going to the copyright modernist's bible that uses the PLURAL pronoun for every second person SINGULAR reference in the whole Bible.

Learn a little English, learn a lot of Bible. Baptists especially, who have traditionally used every word of this old verbally inspired book to form, frame and defend their faith and practice, have no business abandoning a single pronoun to an ecumenical modernist looking for their lucrative copyright license. Shame on YOU (2<sup>nd</sup> person singular???) and shame on YOUALL ( 2<sup>nd</sup> person plural???) for buying their (3<sup>rd</sup> person plural possessive) NIV, ASV, NEB, NASB, NWB, ... etc., et al. I ( not me) will be using an accurate KJB for me (not I) and my (not our) house. God likes it that way. Perhaps these definitions will help:

**thou**<sup>1</sup> (thou) *pron.* Used to indicate the one being addressed, especially in a literary, liturgical, or devotional context. [Middle English, from Old English *thú*, second person nominative sing. personal pron.. See **tu-** below.]

**thee** (thee) *pron.* The objective case of **thou**<sup>1</sup>. **1.a.** Used as the direct object of a verb. **b.** Used as the indirect object of a verb. **2.** Used as the object of a preposition. **3.** Used in the nominative as well as the objective case, especially by members of the Society of Friends.

**thine** (th<sup>o</sup>n) *pron.* (used with a sing. or pl. verb). **1.** Used to indicate the one or ones belonging to thee. **--thine** *adj.* A possessive form of **thou**<sup>1</sup>. Used instead of *thy* before an initial vowel or *h*: “*The presidential candidates are practicing the first rule of warfare: know thine enemy*” (Eleanor Clift). [Middle English, from Old English *th ð*. See **tu-** below.]

**thy** (th<sup>o</sup>) *adj.* The possessive form of **thou**. Used as a modifier before a noun. [Middle English, variant of *thin*, *thine*, from Old English *th ð*. See **tu-** below.]

**tu-**. Important derivatives are: *thee*, *thou*<sup>1</sup>, *thine*, *thy*.

**tu-** Second person singular pronoun; you, thou. **1.** Lengthened form *\*tú* (accusative *\*te*, *\*tege*). (THEE), THOU<sup>1</sup>, from Old English *thú* (accusative *thec*, *thƿ*), thou, from Germanic *\*thú* (accusative *\*theke*). **2.** Suffixed extended form *\*t(w)ei-no-*. THINE, THY, from Old English *th ƿ*, thine, from Germanic *\*th ƿaz*. [Pokorny *tu-* 1097.]

A couple examples may be in order here. In Isaiah 7 the Scripture records:

- 10 *Moreover the LORD spake again unto Ahaz, saying,*
- 11 *Ask thee a sign of the LORD thy God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above.*
- 12 *But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the LORD.*
- 13 *And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David; Is it a small thing for you to weary men, but will ye weary my God also?*
- 14 *Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel.*

Notice in verse 11 that “Ask thee a sign” is in second person singular *thee*, speaking and addressing only Ahaz. In the 13<sup>th</sup> verse the sign is presented with, “Hear ye now...” using the second person plural pronoun *ye*, speaking to and addressing not the singular Ahaz, but the plural, i.e. the whole house of David. These distinctions are lost when the modernist translators take out all the second person singular addresses, and all of the subject/object indicators and make them “Ask YOU a sign... Hear YOU now...” That not only robs from the poetic nature of the King James English, it extensively robs from the exactness found in the original Hebrew and Greek languages.

Incidentally James Strong has listed out “thee” used in 2,751 verses, “thou” used in 3,895 verses, “thine” used in 844 verses, and “thy” used in 3,073 verses. Further he listed “ye” used in 2857 verses, “you” used in 2011 verses, and “your” used in 1305 verses. Modernists trying to use “modern” (Johnny come lately) English eliminate every one of those second person singular references in those 10,563 verses

(there are only 31,101 verses in the whole Bible so modernist translators change 34% of them in this pronoun change alone), and make them all second person plural references. This is no small deal.

Examine another example where the singular vs plural pronoun gives accuracy and insight. In John 4 the second miracle of Christ is carefully recorded in Scripture:

- 46 *So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum.*
- 47 *When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judaea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death.*
- 48 *Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe.*
- 49 *The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die.*
- 50 *Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.*

Notice in verse 48, “Then said Jesus unto him (3<sup>rd</sup> person singular), Except ye (2<sup>nd</sup> person plural) see signs and wonders, ye (2<sup>nd</sup> person plural) will not believe.” Then in verse 50, “Jesus saith unto him (3<sup>rd</sup> person singular), Go thy (2<sup>nd</sup> person singular) way; thy (2<sup>nd</sup> person singular) son liveth.” In verse 48 Jesus is not addressing the unbelief of the “certain nobleman” (singular) but the unbelief of the crowd (plural). Again this important distinction is lost in all modernist bibles. They use the second person plural in every instance. It is a gross compromise in accuracy applied because of our modern lazy and dummied down English. There is much to talk about in Bibliology and this little bit of Bible background, when kept in mind, will be of help.

The authors booklet “Why Baptists Use Only the Authorized King James Bible”<sup>24</sup> should be studied in view of this diabolical attack on the genuine words of Bible. That booklet is included in its entirety in

---

24 Available at [www.gsbaptistchurch.com/kjv/kjvonly\\_book\\_man.pdf](http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/kjv/kjvonly_book_man.pdf)

Volume 01 Prolegomena of this effort.

## Chapter 3 Inspiration

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

2Timothy 3:16-17

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.*

Psalms 12:6-7

The inspiration of Scripture is the very heart of Bibliology, but in the larger sense it is the kingpin of all theology, yeah, of all Christianity. In the 1800's L. Gaussen, Professor of Systematic Theology, Geneva Switzerland, worded this truth thus:

I do not think that, after we have come to know that Christianity is divine, there can be presented to our mind any question bearing more essentially on the vitality of our faith than this: “Does the Bible come from God? is it altogether from God? or may it not be true, as some have maintained, that there occur in it maxims purely human, statements not exactly true, exhibitions of vulgar ignorance and ill-sustained reasoning? in a word, books, or portions of books, foreign to the interest of the faith, subject to the natural weakness of the writers judgment, and alloyed with error?” Here we have a question that admits of no compromise, a fundamental question – a question of life! It is the first that confronts you on opening the Scriptures, and with it your religion ought to commence.<sup>25</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> Gaussen, *Theopneustia*, 5-6

Indeed, with an uncompromised answer to these questions our whole theology ought to commence. Is the Holy Bible preserved as verbally inspired, inerrant, and infallible? Or is such a Bible, lost to multiple scribal additions to the text, additions which must be edited out in copyrighted versions made by arguing modern scholars and Bible critics? It is herein systematically contended that if a bible is copyrighted, the words are the words of, and property of, men, and they are not thus the words of God. Such a black and white simplicity is behooved by those building a systematic theology that hangs on every word of God as its sole authority.

*I thank thee, O Father; Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.*

Matthew 11:25

## Inspiration – A Designed Word

### πασα γραφή θεόπνευστος

It is worth exploring the original Bible languages to fully comprehend why the fifty-seven highly skilled linguists, employed and paid by King James from 1603 through 1611, translated this Greek phrase “All Scripture is given by *inspiration* of God.” The English word *inspiration*, carefully avoided by each ecumenical and modern bible translator, incorporates in its definition breath of life, as well as influence and stimulation of mind, feeling, and emotion, in order to produce an activity. It was also specifically crafted incorporating the word *spirit*. Indeed the English word *inspiration* is formed and framed around the concept contained in the Greek *theopneustia*. There is no better English capture of this concept. God created and breathed out the very wording of every sentence of what is written down as Scripture.

Although there is only one use of the Greek word for inspiration found in the Bible, the teams of translators funded by King James found another exact match in the Hebrew of the Old Testament Scripture. Its use is insightful to this argument. The Scripture is Job 32:8, “*But there*

*is a spirit in man: and the inspiration* (Strong#05397, Hebrew נשמה *nesh-aw-maw*) *of the Almighty giveth them understanding.*” In context this is the opening argument of the younger Elihu, clarifying, that despite his junior status, he has some pertinent insights from God about the status of Job. He goes on to expound this unrefuted understanding for 165 verses in six chapters of the book of Job. The Hebrew word *nesh-aw-maw*, translated breath, seventeen times, blast, thrice, and spirit, twice, is here translated *inspiration*. The English word, the Hebrew linguistic, and this present context, incorporates both breath and spirit: the breath of God and the spirit of man.

This remarkable insight of the KJV translators, and the first use of the English word *inspiration*, is completely eliminated by all ecumenical modern English bibles. That, despite the fact that the word *inspiration* was invented for this very purpose. One must ask, “Why? Why was this very word, which was designed to fit into 2Timothy 3:16, rejected by the modern English translators of the RSV, NIV, ASV, NASV, NEV, RNEV et al.?

An investigation reveals that these translators were more concerned about securing lucrative copyrights than they were about clarity and exactness of their ecumenical translation. This is not immature trivia, as claimed by Schnaiter and Tagliapietra<sup>26</sup>, it is careful exposure of their compromise. The copyright bibles are not adequate for a sole source of a Biblical Systematic Theology, because their copyright requires 60,000 major deviations from all other versions. They cannot simply use God's words, consequently, they do not, and cannot copyright God's Words. When a translator must be more mindful of the words that he cannot use, than the words that he does use his translation is perversion.

Thus far we have entertained the linguistics of the word *inspiration*, and its avoidance by copyright conscious translators, but have not given *inspiration* a thorough definition. Inspiration is a miracle and its definition must entail explanation of what and how the miracle unfolds. Such a definition may tax the scope of the knowledge of the finite, but no one better captures this conundrum than does

---

26 Schnaiter and Tagliapietra, *Bible Preservation and the Providence of God*, (Xlibris Corp, 2003), 182 [Schnaiter and Tagliapietra are no friends of the KJB, favoring the minority critical text of Westcott and Hort over the inspired Scripture.]

Gaussen.

This miraculous operation of the Holy Ghost had not the sacred writers themselves for its object - for these were only his instruments, and were soon to pass away; but that its objects were the holy books themselves, which were destined to reveal from age to age, to the Church, the counsels of God, and which were never to pass away.

The power then put forth on those men of God, and of which they themselves were sensible only in very different degrees, has not been precisely defined to us. Nothing authorizes us to explain it. Scripture has never presented either its manner or its measure as an object of study. What it offers to our faith is solely the inspiration of what they say - the divinity of the book they have written. In this respect it recognizes no difference among them. What they say, they tell us, is theopneustic: their book is from God. Whether they recite the mysteries of a past more ancient than the creation, or those of a future more remote than the coming again of the Son of man, or the eternal counsels of the Most High, or the secrets of man's heart, or the deep things of God - whether they describe their own emotions, or relate what they remember, or repeat contemporary narratives, or copy over genealogies, or make extracts from uninspired documents - their writing is inspired, their narratives are directed from above; it is always God who speaks, who relates, who ordains or reveals by their mouth, and who, in order to this, employs their personality in different measures: for "the Spirit of God has been upon them," it is written, "and his word has been upon their tongue." And though it be always the word of man, since they are always men who utter it, it is always, too, the word of God, seeing that it is God who superintends, employs, and guides them. They give their narratives, their doctrines, or their commandments, "not with the words of man's wisdom, but with the words taught by the Holy Ghost;" and thus it is that God himself has not only put his seal to all these facts, and constituted himself the author of all these commands, and

the revealer of all these truths, but that, further, he has caused them to be given to his Church in the order, and in the measure, and in the terms which he has deemed most suitable to his heavenly purpose.

Were we asked, then, how this work of divine inspiration has been accomplished in the men of God, we should reply, that we do not know; that it does not behove us to know; and that it is in the same ignorance, and with a faith quite of the same kind, that we receive the doctrine of the new birth and sanctification of a soul by the Holy Ghost. We believe that the Spirit enlightens that soul, cleanses it, raises it, comforts it, softens it. We perceive all these effects; we admire and we adore the cause; but we have found it our duty to be content never to know the means by which this is done. Be it the same, then, with regard to divine inspiration.<sup>27</sup>

There is little more to be said about what inspiration is, than what Gaussen captures with excellence. His 360 page 150 year old public domain defense of the doctrine of inspiration stands alone. His thorough coverage is perfect for a Bibliology in a systematic theology which hangs on the verbal plenary, inerrant, infallible, inspired word of God for its sole authority.

In one more excerpt allow Gaussen to express here his insightful thoughts on what the inspired authors experienced:

And were we, further, called to say at least what the men of God experienced in their bodily organs, in their will, or in their understandings, while engaged in tracing the pages of the sacred book, we should reply, that the powers of inspiration, were not felt by all to the same degree, and that their experiences were not at all uniform; but we might add, that the knowledge of such a fact bears very little on the interests of our faith, seeing that, as respects that faith, we have to do with the book, and not with the man. It is the book that is inspired, and altogether inspired: to be assured

---

<sup>27</sup> Gaussen, *Theopneustia*, 24-26

of this ought to satisfy us.<sup>28</sup>

These excerpts of Gaussen's *Theopneustia* cannot override the importance of evaluating his whole dissertation.

### **Reading Gaussen's *Theopneustia* - Essential to Bibliology**

In this Bibliology it is so important to get at the heart of the matter of Bible inspiration that Gaussen's entire work should be read and digested. The full title of Gaussen's work is “*Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science.*” It is required reading for the serious student.

Francois Samuel Robert Louis Gaussen (15 Aug 1790 – 18 June 1863) originally published “Theopneustia” in French in Paris in 1840. It is astounding that a book written one-hundred-and-seventy years ago so profoundly and completely defends what is under diabolical attack in the twenty-first century. The arguments presented by Gaussen are classical and sound, but presented dogmatically in hundred year old prose translated from French to English that might, at first, be found challenging for modern students, many are used to a lazy modern English style. Bibliology would not be complete without Gaussen's comprehensive arguments. Below is the flyleaf information from the used hard back copy I ordered via Amazon in 2010. The flyleaf had its original price \$1.00, I spent \$10.

From my Theopneustia's Flyleaf:

Our object is this book is, with God's help, and on the sole authority of His Word, to set forth, establish, and defend the Christian Doctrine of Divine Inspiration. - The Author.

THEOPNEUSTIA (Which being interpreted, means “God breathed”) The Plenary Inspiration of the Scriptures by L. Gaussen, D.D.

Two Notable Commendations:

The turning point of the battle between those who hold “the faith once delivered to the saints,” and their

---

28 Ibid., 26

opponents, lies in the true and real inspiration of the Holy Scriptures. This is the Thermopylae of Christendom. If we have in the Word of God no infallible standard of truth, we are at sea without a compass, and no danger from rough weather without can be equal to this loss within. “If the foundation be removed, what can the righteous do?” and this is a foundation loss of the worst kind.

In this work the author proves himself a master of holy argument. Gaussen charms as he proclaims the Divine veracity of Scripture. His testimony is clear as a bell. - Charles H. Spurgeon.

\* \* \* \* \*

The milestones on my spiritual pathway have been marked by certain books I have read, and one that stands out in my memory more than any other is Gaussen's great work, **THE PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE SCRIPTURES**. The day it came into my hands as a young minister just beginning his work marks an epoch, and I speak from experience when I say that a Christian who reads and studies it need never again be troubled by attacks of the Word of God. For years it has been out of print in this country, and hardly to be obtained, even in an old book store. Now that The Bible Institute Colportage Association has purchased the plates and brought out a new edition my heart rejoices that earnest Christian workers of this generation may have the same opportunity to be established in the faith that God thus sent to me at that time. - James M. Gray.

Please take the time to read the 360 pages of *Theopneustia* by L. Gaussen. It is included in its entirety as the next chapter of this study. *Theopneustia* is available from several sources on-line. It is on our webpage at [www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology) and it is included in its entirety in chapter 4 of this Bibliology.

## Chapter 4 Theopneustia by L. Gaussen

# THEOPNEUSTIA: THE PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.

BY L. GAUSSEN, D.D.,  
PROFESSOR OF SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY, ORATOIRE, GENEVA.  
Edinburgh & London: Johnstone & Hunter, 1850. pp.365.

~ out-of-print and in the public domain ~

This book was originally published prior to 1850, it is therefore in the public domain and free to be posted in its entirety despite recent publication.

Reformatted for and cited in “A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century” by Dr Edward Rice,  
[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

Reformatted, with minor corrections, and using the BST Greek font, as an integral portion of  
[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/21cent\\_vol02Bibliology.pdf](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/21cent_vol02Bibliology.pdf)

Captured in [www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/gausсен\\_theopneustia.pdf](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology/gausсен_theopneustia.pdf)

Portions of this project were referenced from Biblical Studies.org.uk (20 Years of Making Biblical Scholarship Accessible) web site [http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/book\\_theopneustia.html](http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/book_theopneustia.html) where individual chapters in pdf can be read online or downloaded.

Theopneustia: The Plenary Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures  
L. Gaussen, D.D.

Edinburgh & London: Johnstone & Hunter, 1850. pp.365.

Table of Contents (All original page numbers retained as [p.###] and searchable)

Preface 5

Chapter 1: Definition of the Theopneustia, or Divine Inspiration 23

Chapter 2: Scriptural Proof of Divine Inspiration 58

Chapter 3: Brief Didactic Abstract of the Doctrine of the Divine Inspiration 106

Chapter 4: Examination of Objections 153

Chapter 5: Examination of Evasions 275

Chapter 6: On Sacred Criticism, in Relations it Bears to Divine Inspiration 323

Chapter 7: Conclusion 349 - 365

Note: \* Footnote numbers do not match those of the original.

Spell corrected original with pagination markers intact and the BST Greek font utilized by Dr. Rice, Pastor Good Samaritan Baptist Church 2017

Links to the originally published chapters from <https://biblicalstudies.org.uk>

[Preface](#)

[Chapter 1: Definition of the Theopneustia, or Divine Inspiration](#)

[Chapter 2: Scriptural Proof of Divine Inspiration](#)

[Chapter 3: Brief Didactic Abstract of the Doctrine of the Divine Inspiration](#)

[Chapter 4: Examination of Objections](#)

[Chapter 5: Examination of Evasions](#)

[Chapter 6: On Sacred Criticism, in Relations it Bears to Divine Inspiration](#)

[Chapter 7: Conclusion](#)

**Theopneustia by L. Gaussen**

# **THEOPNEUSTIA: THE PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES.**

**BY L. GAUSSEN, D.D.,**

**PROFESSOR OF SYSTEMATIC THEOLOGY, ORATOIRE, GENEVA.**

*Quæritur an In scribendo, ita acti et inspirati fuerint a Spiritu Sancto, et quoad res ipsas, et quoad verba, ut ab omni errore immunes fuerint: Adverearii negant: Nos affirmamus.*

*F. TURRETINI, Theol. elenct., t. I., loc. ii., 9.4.*

**TRANSLATED FROM THE LATEST EDITION, REVISED AND  
ENLARGED BY THE AUTHOR.**

**EDINBURGH:**

**JOHNSTONE & HUNTER, 15 PRINCES STREET;  
AND 26 PATERNOSTER ROW,  
LONDON.**

**CONTENTS.** (All original page numbers retained as [p.###] and searchable)

TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE v

PREFATORY OBSERVATIONS 5

**CHAPTER I.**

**DEFINITION OF THE THEOPNEUSTIA, OR DIVINE INSPIRATION.**

Section I. 23

Section II. 24

Section III. 26

Section IV. 32

Section V. - On the Individuality of the Sacred Writers 38

**CHAPTER II.**

**SCRIPTURAL PROOF OF THE DIVINE INSPIRATION.**

Section I. - All Scripture is Divinely Inspired 58

Section II. - All the Prophetic Utterances are given by God 59

Section III. - All the Scriptures of the Old Testament are Prophetic 67

Section IV. - All the Scriptures of the New Testament are Prophetic 73

Section V. - The Examples of the Apostles, and of their Master, attest that in their view all the Words of the Holy Books are given by God 89

**CHAPTER III.**

**BRIEF DIDACTIC ABSTRACT OF THE DOCTRINE OF THE DIVINE INSPIRATION.**

Section I. - Catechetical Sketch of the Main Points of the Doctrine 106

Section II. - On the Adversaries and Defenders of the Doctrine 139

**CHAPTER IV.**

**EXAMINATION OF OBJECTIONS.**

Section I. - The Translations 153

Section II. - Use of the Septuagint Translation 161

Section III. - The Various Readings 164

Section IV. - Errors of Reasoning or of Doctrine 197

Section V. - Errors in the Narratives - Contradictions in the Facts 207

Section VI. - Errors contrary to Natural Philosophy 244

Section VII. - The Declarations of Paul himself 271

**CHAPTER V.**

**EXAMINATION OF EVASIONS.**

Section I. - Might not Inspiration pertain to the Thoughts only, without extending to the Words? 275

Section II. - Should we except from Inspiration the Historical Books? 286

Section III. - Will the apparent insignificance of certain Details in the Bible authorize their being excepted from Inspiration? 306

**CHAPTER VI.**

**ON SACRED CRITICISM, IN THE RELATIONS IT BEARS TO DIVINE INSPIRATION.**

Section I. - Sacred Criticism is a Scientific Inquirer, and not a Judge 324

Section II. - Let Sacred Criticism be an Historian, not a Soothsayer 330

Section III. - Sacred Criticism is the Doorkeeper of the Temple, not its God 336

**CHAPTER VII.**

**CONCLUSION.**

Section I. - Retrospect 349

Section II. 355

[p. v]

**Translator's Preface.**

Soon after the first publication of the Theopneustia, the late Rev. Dr

Welsh wrote to me, urging me to translate it for the press. A series of other engagements prevented me from doing so for several years. At last, in answer to a call for a cheaper and less bulky translation than one that had meanwhile appeared in London, I applied myself to the task, and had completed it before seeing what my predecessor had published in the south. The present translation being from the latest French edition, has the advantage of all the author's improved arrangement. The importance of the subject, the high character of the author, and the admirable manner in which he has acquitted himself, required that no ordinary pains should be bestowed in doing him justice. These pains I have not spared.

I have endeavoured, as far as I could, to give the texts quoted from Scripture in the precise words of our authorized version, and to secure the utmost possible correctness in the references. The headings at the top of the pages will, it is hoped, be of considerable use to the student.

After consulting an eminent authority as to the propriety of the change, “plenary inspiration,” “divine inspiration,” or “verbal inspiration,” have been substituted throughout for the term *Theopneustie*, borrowed by the author from the Greek, and retained on the title-page. It was thought that the frequent recurrence of so unusual a word might repel ordinary readers, and make it appear that the book was exclusively for the learned.

At a time when almost all religious controversies seem to turn, more or less, on the question, How far the Holy Scriptures are inspired? and when persons of all ranks and classes are called upon to arm themselves against various errors, having their root in false or inadequate views on this subject, it seems hardly possible to overrate the value of the work now before the reader. Nor is it only as a work of controversy that it is invaluable. It is imbued throughout with a spirit of affectionate earnestness and glowing piety, which, even when it makes the greatest demand on the intellect, never suffers the heart to remain cold. Add to this, the wonderful copiousness of the illustrations, which the author seems to borrow with equal case from the simplest objects in nature, the deepest wells of learning, the remotest deductions of science, and the history at once of the most ancient and most modern times. In short, as we accompany him from page to page and chapter to chapter, we seem not so much to be reading a book, as to be listening to a devout

and accomplished friend, expatiating on a favourite subject a subject of the very greatest importance, and one amid all the details of which he is quite at home.

**DAVID D. SCOTT. *Sept. 20, 1850.***

[p.5]

### **Prefatory Observations.**

A glance at this book and its title may have prepossessed certain minds against it, by creating two equally erroneous impressions. These I would fain dissipate.

The Greek title “Theopneustia,” although borrowed from St Paul, and although it has long been used in Germany, from not having found its way into our language, may, no doubt, have led more than one reader to say to himself of the subject here treated, that it is too learned and abstruse (*scientifique*) to be popular, and too little popular to be important.

Yet I am bold to declare, that if any thing has given me at once the desire and the courage to undertake it, it is just the double conviction I entertain of its importance and its simplicity.

And, first of all, I do not think that, after we have come to know that Christianity is divine, there can be presented to our mind any question bearing more essentially on the vitality of our faith than this: “Does the Bible come from God? is it altogether from God? or may it not be true, as some have maintained, that there occur in it maxims purely human, statements not exactly true, exhibitions of vulgar ignorance and ill-sustained reasoning? in a word, books, or portions [p.6] of books, foreign to the interests of the faith, subject to the natural weakness of the writer's judgment, and alloyed with error?” Here we have a question that admits of no compromise, a fundamental question - a question of life! It is the first that confronts you on opening the Scriptures, and with it your religion ought to commence.

Were it the case, as you whom I now address will have it, that all in the Bible is not important, does not bear upon the faith, and does not relate to Jesus Christ; and were it the case, taking another view, that in that book there is nothing inspired except what, in your opinion, is important, does bear upon the faith, and does relate to Jesus Christ; then your Bible is quite a different book from that of the Fathers, of the

Reformers, and of the Saints of all ages. It is fallible; theirs was perfect. It has chapters or parts of chapters, it has sentences and expressions, to be excluded from the number of the sentences and expressions that are God's; theirs was "all given by inspiration of God," "all profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, and for rendering the man of God perfect by faith in Christ Jesus." In that case, one and the same passage is, in your judgment, as remote from what it was in theirs as earth is from heaven.

You may have opened the Bible, for example, at the 45th Psalm, or at the Song of Songs; and while you will see nothing there but what is most human in the things of the earth - a long epithalamium, or the love communings of a daughter of Sharon and her young bridegroom - they read there of the glories of the Church, [p.7] the endearments of God's love, the deep things of Jesus Christ - in a word, all that is most divine in the things of heaven; and if they found themselves unable to read of those things there, they knew at least that they were there, and there they tried to find them.

Suppose now that we both take up one of St Paul's epistles. While one of us will attribute such or such a sentence, the meaning of which he fails to seize, or which shocks his carnal sense, to the writer's Jewish prejudices, to the most common intentions, to circumstances altogether human; the other will set himself, with profound respect, to scan the thoughts of the Holy Ghost: he will believe these perfect even before he has caught their meaning, and will put any apparent insignificance or obscurity to the account of his own dullness or ignorance alone.

Thus, while in the Bible of the one all has its object, its place, its beauty, and its use, as in a tree, branches and leaves, vessels and fibres, epidermis and bark even, have all theirs; the Bible of the other is a tree of which some of the leaves and branches, some of the fibres and the bark, have not been made by God.

But there is much more than this in the difference between us; for not only, according to your reply, we shall have two Bibles, but no one can know what your Bible really is.

It is human and fallible, say you, only in a certain measure; but who shall define that measure? If it be true that man, in putting his baneful impress upon it, have left the stains of humanity there, who shall determine the depth of that impression, and the number of those

stains? You have told me that it has its human [p.8] part; but what are the limits of that part, and who is to fix them for me? Why, no one. These every one must determine for himself, at the bidding of his own judgment; in other words, this fallible portion of the Scriptures will be enlarged in the inverse ratio of our being illuminated by God's light, and a man will deprive himself of communications from above in the very proportion that he has need of them; in like manner as we see idolaters make to themselves divinities that are more or less impure, in proportion as they themselves are more or less alienated from the living and holy God! Thus, then, every one will curtail the inspired Scriptures in different proportions, and making for himself an infallible rule of that Bible, so corrected by himself, will say to it: "Guide thou me henceforth, for thou art my rule!" like those makers of graven images of whom Isaiah speaks, "who make to themselves a god, and say to it, Deliver me, for thou art my god." - (Isa. xlv. 17.)

But this is not all; what follows is of graver import still. According to your reply, it is not the Bible only that is changed, - it is you.

Yes, even in presence of the passages which you have most admired you will have neither the attitude nor the heart of a believer! How can that be, after you have summoned these along with the rest of the Scriptures before the tribunal of your judgment, there to be pronounced by you divine, or not divine, or semi-divine? What authority for your soul can there be in an utterance which for you is infallible only in virtue of yourself? Had it not to present itself at your bar, along with other sayings of the same book, which you have pro-[p.9] nounced to be wholly or partly human? Will your mind, in that case, put itself into the humble and submissive posture of a disciple, after having held the place of a judge? This is impossible. The deference you will show to it will be that perhaps of acquiescence, never that of faith; of approval, never of adoration. Do you tell me that you will believe in the divinity of the passage? but then it is not in God that you will believe, but in yourself! This utterance pleases, but does not govern you; it stands before you like a lamp; it is not within you as an unction from above - a principle of light, a fountain of life! I do not believe there ever was a Pope, however possessed with notions of the importance of his own priestly office, who could confidently address his prayers to a dead person, whom he had himself, by canonizing him of his own plenary authority, raised to the

rank of the demigods. How, then, shall a reader of the Bible, who has himself canonized a passage of the Scriptures, however possessed with a high idea of his own wisdom, possibly have the disposition of a true believer with regard to such a passage? Will his mind come down from his pontifical chair, and humble itself before this utterance of thought, which, but for himself, would remain human, or at least doubtful? No one tries to fathom the meaning of a passage which he has himself legitimated, only in virtue of a meaning which he thinks he has already found. One submits only by halves to an authority which he has had it in his power to decline, and which he has once held to be doubtful. One worships but imperfectly what he has first degraded.

Besides, and let this be carefully noted, inasmuch as [p.10] the entire divinity of such or such a passage of the Scriptures depends. in your view, not on its being found in the book of God's oracles, but on its presenting certain traits of spirituality and wisdom to your wisdom and your spirituality, the sentence that you pass cannot always be so exempt from hesitation as that you shall not retain, with regard to it, some of the doubts with which you set out. Hence your faith will necessarily participate in your uncertainties, and will be itself imperfect, undecided, conditional. As is the sentence, so will be the faith; and as is the faith, so will be the life. But such is not the faith, neither is such the life of God's elect.

But what will better show the importance of the question which is about to occupy us is, that if one of the two systems to which it *may* lead have, as we have said, all its roots imbued with scepticism, its fruit inevitably will be a new unbelief.

How do we come to see that so many thousands can every morning and. evening open their Bibles without once perceiving there doctrines which it teaches with the utmost clearness? How can they thus, during many a long year, walk on in darkness with the sun in their hands? Do they not hold these books to be a revelation from God? Yes, but prepossessed with false notions of the divine inspiration, and believing that there still exists in Scripture an alloy of human error - fain to find in it, nevertheless, its reasonable utterances of thought, in order to their being authorized to believe these divine - they make it their study, as if unconsciously, to give these a meaning that their own wisdom approves; and thus not only do they render themselves [p.11] incapable of

recognising therein the wisdom of God, but they sink the Scriptures in their own respect. In reading St Paul's epistles, for example, they will do their utmost to find in them man's justification by the law, his native innocence and bent towards that which is good, the moral omnipotence of his will - the merit of his works. But, then, what happens? Alas! just that after having given the sacred writer such forced meanings, they find his language so illconceived for his assumed object, such ill-chosen terms for what he is made to say, and such ill-sustained reasonings, that, as if in spite of themselves, they lose any respect felt for the letter of the Scriptures, and plunge into rationalism. It is thus that, after having commenced with unbelief; they reap a new unbelief as the fruit of their study; darkness becomes the recompense of darkness, and that terrible saying of Christ is fulfilled, "From him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath."

Such, then, it is evident, is the fundamental importance of the great question with which we are about to be occupied.

According to the answer which you, to whom we now address ourselves, make to it, the arm of God's Word is palsied for you; the sword of the Spirit has become blunted - it has lost its temper and its power to pierce. How could it henceforth penetrate your joints and marrow? How could it become stronger than your lusts, than your doubts, than the world, than Satan? How could it give you energy, victory, light, peace? No! It possibly may happen, at wide intervals of time, by a pure effect of God's unmerited favour, that, in spite of this dismal state of a soul, a divine utterance may come [p.12] and seize it at unawares; but it does not remain the less true, that this disposition which judges the Scriptures, and doubts beforehand of their universal inspiration, is one of the greatest obstacles that we can oppose to their acting with effect. "The word spoken," says St Paul (Heb. iv. 2), "did not profit, not being mixed with faith in them who heard it;" while the most abundant benedictions of that same Scripture were at all times the lot of the souls which received it, "not as the word of man, but which it is truly, as the word of God, working effectually in them who believe." - (1 Thess. ii. 13.)

It will thus be seen, that this question is of immense importance in its bearing upon the vitality of our faith; and we are entitled to say, that between the two answers that may be made to it, there lies the same

great gulf that must have separated two Israelites who might both have seen Jesus Christ in the flesh, and both equally owned him as a prophet; but one of whom, looking to his carpenter's dress, his poor fare, his hands inured to labour, and his rustic retinue, believed further, that he was not exempt from error and sin, as an ordinary prophet; whilst the other recognised in him Immanuel, the Lamb of God, the everlasting God, our Righteousness, the King of kings, the Lord of lords.

The reader may not yet have admitted each of these considerations; but he will at least admit that I have said enough to be entitled to conclude that it is worth while to study such a question, and that, in weighing it, you hold in your hands the most precious interests of the people of God. This is all I desired in a preface. It was the first point to which I wished to direct the reader's attention beforehand, and now comes the second.

[p.13] If the study of this doctrine be the duty of all, that study is also within the reach of all; and the author scruples not to say, that in writing his book, the dearest object of his ambition has been to make it level to the comprehension of all classes of readers.

Meanwhile, he thinks he hears many make this objection. You address yourself to men of learning, they will say; your book is no concern of ours: we confine ourselves to religion, but here you give us theology.

Theology no doubt! but, what theology? Why, that which ought to be the study of all the heirs of eternal life, and with respect to which a very child may be a theologian.

Religion and theology! let us explain what we mean; for often are both these terms abused to the injury of both, by people presuming to set the one against the other. Is not theology defined in all our dictionaries as “the science which has for its object, God and his revelation?” Now, when I was a boy at school, the catechism of my childhood made this the designation of my religion. “It is the science,” it told me, “that teaches us to know God and his Word, God and his counsels, God in Christ.” So, then, there is no difference between them, in object, means, or aim. Their object is truth; their means, the Word of God; their aim, holiness. “Sanctify them, O Father, by thy truth: thy Word is truth!” Such is the aim contemplated by both, as it was that of their dying Master. How, then, shall we distinguish the one from the

other? By this alone - that theology is religion studied more methodically, and with the aid of more perfect instruments.

Men have contrived, no doubt, to make, under the [p.14] name of theology, a confused compound of philosophy, or the traditions of men with God's word; but that was not theology - it was only scholastic philosophy.

It is true that the term Religion is not always employed in its objective sense, to signify the science that embraces the truths of our faith; but it is used also, with a subjective meaning, to designate rather the sentiments which those truths foster in the hearts of believers. Let these two meanings be kept distinct. This is what we may do, and ought to do; but to oppose the one to the other, by calling the one Religion, the other Theology, were a deplorable absurdity. This would be to maintain, in other terms, that one might have the religious sentiments without the religious doctrines from which alone they spring; this would imply that you would have a man to be moral without having any religious tenets, pious without belief, a Christian without Christ, an effect without a cause - living without a soul! Deplorable illusion! "holy Father, this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent."

But even were it rather in its objective sense that people set themselves to oppose religion to theology - that is to say, the religion a Christian learns in his native tongue in his Bible, to the religion which a more accomplished person would study in the same Bible with the aid of history and of the learned languages - still I would say, even in this case, Distinguish between the two; don't oppose them to each other! Ought not every true Christian to be a theologian as far as he can? Is he not enjoined to be learned in the Word of God, nurtured in sound doctrine, rooted and established [p.15] in the knowledge of Jesus Christ? And was it not to the multitude that Our Lord said, in the midst of the street, "Search the Scriptures."

Religion, then, in its objective meaning, bears the same relation to theology that the globe does to astronomy. They are distinct, and *yet* united; and theology renders the same services to religion that the astronomy of the geometricians offers to that of seamen. A ship captain might, no doubt, do without the *Mécanique Céleste* in finding his way to the seas of China, or in returning from the Antipodes; but even then it is

to that science that, while traversing the ocean with his elementary notions, he will owe the advantage he derives from his formulas, the accuracy of his tables, and the precision of the methods which give him his longitudes, and set his mind at ease as to the course he is pursuing. Thus too, the Christian, in order to his traversing the ocean of this world, and to his reaching the haven to which God calls him, may dispense with the ancient languages and the lofty speculations of theology; but, after all, the notions of religion with which he cannot dispense, will receive, in a great measure, their precision and their certainty from theological science. And while he steers towards eternal life with his eyes fixed on the compass which God has given him. Still it is to theology that he will owe the certainty that that heavenly magnet is the same that it was in the days of the apostles - that the instrument of salvation has been placed intact in his hands, that its indications are faithful, and that the needle never varies.

There was a time when all the sciences were mysterious, professing secrecy, having their initiated persons, [p.16] their sacred language, and their freemasonry. Physical science, geometry, medicine, grammar, history - every thing was treated of in Latin. Men soared aloft in the clouds, far above the vulgar crowd; and would drop now and then from their bark sublime a few detached leaves, which we were bound to take up respectfully, and were not allowed to criticise. Now-a-days, all is changed. Genius glories in making itself intelligible to the mass of mankind; and after having mounted up to the ethereal regions of science, there to pounce upon truth in her highest retreats, it endeavours to find a method of coming down again, and approaching near enough to let us know the paths it has pursued, and the secrets it has discovered. But if such be at present the almost universal tendency of the secular sciences, it has been at all times the distinctive character of true theology, That science is at the service of all. The others may do without the people, as the people may do without them; true theology, on the contrary, has need of flocks, as they again have need of it. It preserves their religion; and their religion preserves it in turn. Woe to them when their theology languishes, and does not speak to them! Woe to them when the religion of the flocks leave it to go alone, and no longer esteems it We ought then, both for its sake and for theirs, to hold that it should speak to them, listen to them, study in their sight, and keep its

schools open to them as our churches are.

When theology occupies the professor's chair in the midst of Christian flocks, its relations with them, constantly keeping before its eyes the realities of the Christian life, constantly recall to it also the realities of [p.17] science: man's misery, the counsels of the Father, the Redeemer's cross, the consolations of the Holy Ghost, holiness, eternity. Then, too, the Church's conscience, repressing its wanderings, overawes its hardihood, compels it to be serious, and corrects the effects of that familiarity, so readily running into profaneness, with which the science of the schools puts forth its hand and touches holy things. In speaking to it, day after day, of that life which the preaching of the doctrines of the Cross nourishes in the Church (a life, without the knowledge of which all its learning would be as incomplete as the natural history of man were it derived from the study of dead bodies), the religion of the flocks disengages theology from its excessive readiness to admire those branches of knowledge which do not sanctify. It often repeats to it the question addressed by St Paul to the perverted science of the Galatians: "Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?" It disabuses it of the wisdom of man; it imbues it with reverence for the Word of God, and (in that holy Word), for those doctrines of the righteousness of faith which are "the power of God our Saviour," and which ought to penetrate the whole soul of its science. Thus does it teach it practically how to associate, in its researches, the work of the conscience with that of the understanding, and never to seek after God's truth but under the combined lights of study and prayer.

And, on the other hand, theology renders in its turn, to Christian flocks, services with which they cannot long dispense without damage. It is it that watches over the religion of a people, to see that the lips of the [p.18] priest keep knowledge, and that the law may be had from his mouth. It is it that preserves purity of doctrine in the holy ministry of the gospel, and the just balancing of all truths in preaching. It is it that assures the simple against the confident assertions of a science inaccessible to them. It is it that goes for its answers to the same quarters whence those assertions have come; which puts its finger on the sophisms of the adversaries of truth, overawes them by its presence, and compels them, before the flocks, to avoid exaggeration, and to put some reserve on the terms they employ. It is it that gives the alarm at the first

and so often decisive moment, when the language of religion among a people begins to decline from the truth, and when error, like a rising weed, sprouts and grows into a plant. It then gives timely warning, and people hasten to root it out.

It has ever happened that when flocks have been pious, theology has thriven. She has accomplished herself with learning; she has put due honour on studies that require vigorous effort; and, the better to capacitate herself for searching the Scriptures, not only has she desired to master all the sciences that can throw light upon them, but she has infused life into all other sciences, whether by the example of her own labours, or by gathering around her men of lofty minds, or by infusing into academical institutions a generous sentiment of high morality, which has promoted all their developments.

Thus it is that, in giving a higher character to all branches of study, she has often ennobled that of a whole people. [p.19]

But, on the contrary, when theology and the people have become indifferent to each other, and drowsy flocks have lived only for this world, then theology herself has given evident proofs of sloth, frivolity, ignorance, or perhaps of a love of novelties; seeking a profane popularity at any cost; affecting to have made discoveries that are only whispered to the ear, that are taught in academies, and never mentioned in the churches; keeping her gates shut amid the people, and at the same time throwing out to them from the windows doubts and impieties, with the view of ascertaining the present measure of their indifference; until at last she breaks out into open scandal, in attacking doctrines, or in defying the integrity or the inspiration of certain books, or in giving audacious denials to the facts which they relate.

And let a man beware of believing that the whole people do not erelong feel the consequences of so enormous a mischief. They will suffer from it even in their temporal interests, and their national existence will be compromised. In degrading their religion, you proportionally lower their moral character; you leave them without a soul. All things take their measure, in a nation, according to the elevation that is given to heaven among the people. If their heaven be low, every thing is affected by it even on the earth. All there becomes erelong more confined and more creeping; the future becomes narrowed; patriotism becomes materialized; generous traditions drop out

of notice; the moral sense loses its tone; material wellbeing engrosses all regard; amid all conservative principles, one after another, disappear.  
[p.20]

We conclude then, on the one hand, that there exists the most intimate union, not only between a people's welfare and their religion, but between their religion and true theology; and, on the other hand, that if there have always been most pertinent reasons for this science being taught as such, for all and before all, never was this character more necessary for it than when treating of the doctrine which is about to occupy us. It is the doctrine of doctrines; the doctrine that teaches us all others, and in virtue of which alone they are doctrines; the doctrine which is to the believer's soul what the air is to his lungs - necessary for birth in the Christian life - necessary for living in it - necessary for advancing in it to maturity, and persevering in it.

Such, then, has been the twofold view under which this work has been composed.

Every part of it, I trust, will bear testimony to my serious desire to make it useful to Christians of all classes.

With this object I have thrown off the forms of the school. Without entirely relinquishing, I have abstained from multiplying, quotations in the ancient tongues. In pressing the wonderful unanimity of Christian antiquity on this question, I have confined myself to general facts. In fine, when I have had to treat the various questions that bear upon this subject, and which must be introduced in order to complete the doctrine which it involves, I have thrown them all into a separate chapter. And even there, against the advice of some friends, I have employed a method considered by them out of harmony with the general tone of the book, but which to me has seemed fitted to enable the [p.21] reader to take a clearer and more rapid view of the subject.

It is, then, under this simple and practical form that, in presenting this work to the Church of God, I rejoice that I can recommend it to the blessing of Him who preached in the streets, and who, to John the Baptist, pointed to this as the peculiar character of his mission: "To the poor the gospel is preached."

Well will it be if these pages confirm in the simplicity and the blissfulness of their faith those Christians who, without learning, have already believed, through the Scriptures, in the full inspiration of the

Scriptures! Well will it be if some weary and heavy-laden souls are brought to listen more closely to that God who speaks to them in every line of his holy book! Well will it be if, through any thing said by us, some travellers Zion-ward (like Jacob on his pilgrimage at the stone of Bethel), after having reposed their wearied being with too much indifference on this book of God, should come to behold at last that mysterious ladder which rises from thence to heaven, and by which alone the messages of grace can come down to their souls, and their prayers mount up to God! Would that I could induce them, in their turn, to pour the sacred unction of their gratitude and their joy, and that they also could exclaim: “Surely the Lord is in this place! this is the house of God, and the gate of heaven!”

For myself, I fear not to say, that in devoting myself to the labour this work has cost me, I have often had, to thank God for having called me to it; for while engaged in it, I have more than once beheld the divine majesty fill with its brightness the whole temple of the [p.22] Scriptures. Here have I seen all the tissues, coarse in appearance, that form the vesture of the Son of man, become white, as no fuller on earth could whiten them; here have I often seen the Book illuminated with the glory of God, and all its words seem radiant; in a word, I have felt what one ever experiences when maintaining a holy and true cause, namely, that it gains in truth and in majesty the more we contemplate it.

O my God, give me to love this Word of thine, and to possess it, as much as thou has taught me to admire it! “All flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man is as the flower of the grass: the grass withereth, the flower thereof fadeth, but the word of God abideth for ever; and it is this word which, by the gospel, has been preached unto us.”

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004. <http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>  
Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,  
[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

[p.23]

**THEOPNEUSTIA  
OR,  
PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY  
SCRIPTURES,**

Our object in this book is, with God's help, and on the sole authority of his Word, to set forth, establish, and defend, the Christian doctrine of Divine Inspiration.

**I. Definition of Theopneustia**

*Section I.*

This term is used for the mysterious power which the Divine Spirit put forth on the authors of the scriptures of the Old and New Testament, in order to their composing these as they have been received by the Church of God at their hands. "All Scripture," says an apostle, "is *theopneustic*."<sup>1</sup> [p.24] This Greek expression, at the time when St Paul employed it, was new perhaps even among the Greeks; yet though the term was not used among the idolatrous Greeks, such was not the case among the Hellenistic Jews. The historian Josephus,<sup>2</sup> a contemporary of St Paul's, employs another closely resembling it in his first book against Apion, when, in speaking of all the prophets who composed, says he, the twenty-two sacred books of the Old Testament,<sup>3</sup> he adds, that they wrote *according to the pneustia* (or the inspiration) *that comes from God*.<sup>4</sup> And the Jewish philosopher Philo,<sup>5</sup> himself a contemporary of Josephus, in the account he has left us of his embassy to the emperor Caius, making use, in his turn, of an expression closely resembling that of St Paul, calls the Scriptures "*theochrest oracles*;"<sup>6</sup> that is to say, oracles given under the agency and dictation of God.

Theopneustia is not a system, it is a fact; and this fact, like every thing else that has taken place in the history of redemption, is one of the doctrines of our faith.

<sup>1</sup> 2 Tim. iii. 16. (*Theopneust*, less euphonious, would be more exact.) <sup>2</sup> P. 1036, edit. Aurel. Allob. 1611

<sup>3</sup> See on this number our chap. iii. sect. 2, ques. 27

<sup>4</sup> Κατὰ τὴν ἐπιπνοίαν τὴν ἀπὸ Θεοῦ <sup>5</sup> P. 1022, edit. Francof

<sup>6</sup> Θεόχρηστα (ἐν χρησμῷ Θεοῦ)

## *Section II.*

Meanwhile it is of consequence for us to say, and it is of consequence that it be understood, that this miraculous operation of the Holy Ghost had not the sacred writers themselves for its object - for these were only his instruments, and were soon to pass away; but that its objects were the holy books themselves, which were destined to reveal from age to age, to the Church, the counsels of God, and which were never to pass away.

The power then put forth on those men of God, and of which they themselves were sensible only in very [p.25] different degrees, has not been precisely defined to us. Nothing authorizes us to explain it. Scripture has never presented either its manner or its measure as an object of study. What it offers to our faith is solely the inspiration of what they say - the divinity of the book they have written. In this respect it recognises no difference among them. What they say, they tell us, is theopneustic: their book is from God. Whether they recite the mysteries of a past more ancient than the creation, or those of a future more remote than the coming again of the Son of man, or the eternal counsels of the Most High, or the secrets of man's heart, or the deep things of God - whether they describe their own emotions, or relate what they remember, or repeat contemporary narratives, or copy over genealogies, or make extracts from uninspired documents - their writing is inspired, their narratives are directed from above; it is always God who speaks, who relates, who ordains or reveals by their mouth, and who, in order to this, employs their personality in different measures: for "the Spirit of God has been upon them," it is written, "and his word has been upon their tongue." And though it be always the word of man, since they are always men who utter it, it is always, too, the word of God, seeing that it is God who superintends, employs, and guides them. They give their narratives, their doctrines, or their commandments, "not with the words of man's wisdom, but with the words taught by the Holy Ghost;" and thus it is that God himself has not only put his seal to all these facts, and constituted himself the author of all these commands, and the revealer of all these truths, but that, further, he has caused them to be given to his Church in the order, and in the measure, and in the terms which he has deemed most suitable to his heavenly purpose.

Were we asked, then, how this work of divine inspiration has been

accomplished in the men of God, we should reply, that we do not know; that it does [p.26] not behove us to know; and that it is in the same ignorance, and with a faith quite of the same kind, that we receive the doctrine of the new birth and sanctification of a soul by the Holy Ghost. We believe that the Spirit enlightens that soul, cleanses it, raises it, comforts it, softens it. We perceive all these effects; we admire and we adore the cause; but we have found it our duty to be content never to know the means by which this is done. Be it the same, then, with regard to divine inspiration.

And were we, further, called to say at least what the men of God experienced in their bodily organs, in their will, or in their understandings, while engaged in tracing the pages of the sacred book, we should reply, that the powers of inspiration, were not felt by all to the same degree, and that their experiences were not at all uniform; but we might add, that the knowledge of such a fact bears very little on the interests of our faith, seeing that, as respects that faith, we have to do with the book, and not with the man. It is the book that is inspired, and altogether inspired: to be assured of this ought to satisfy us.

### Section III.

Three descriptions of men, in these late times, without disavowing the divinity of Christianity, and without venturing to decline the authority of the Scriptures, have thought themselves authorized to reject this doctrine.

Some of these have disowned the very *existence* of. this action of the Holy Ghost; others have denied its *universality*; others, again, its *plenitude*.

The first, like Dr Schleiermacher,<sup>7</sup> Dr De Wette, and many other German divines, reject all miraculous inspiration, and are unwilling to attribute to the sacred writers any more than Cicero accorded to the poets - [p.27] *affiatum spiritûs divini* – “a divine action of nature, an interior power resembling the other vital forces of nature.”<sup>8</sup>

The second, like Dr Michaelis,<sup>9</sup> and like Theodore of Mopsuestia,<sup>10</sup> while admitting the existence of a divine inspiration, would confine it to a part only of the sacred books: to the first and fourth of the four evangelists, for example; to a part of the epistles, to a part of Moses, a part of Isaiah, a part of Daniel. These portions of the Scriptures, say

they, are from God, the others are from man.

The third class, in fine, like M. Twesten in Germany, and like many divines in England,<sup>11</sup> extend, it is true, the notion of a divine inspiration to all parts of the Bible, but not to all equally (*nicht gleichmaessig*). Inspiration, as they understand it, might be universal indeed, but unequal; often imperfect, accompanied with, innocent errors; and carried to very different degrees, according to the nature of different passages: of which degrees they constitute themselves, more or less, the judges.

Many of these, particularly in England, have gone so far as to distinguish four degrees of divine inspiration: the inspiration of *superintendence*, they have said, in virtue of which the sacred writers have been constantly preserved from serious error in all that relates to faith and life; the inspiration of *elevation*, by which the Holy Ghost, further, by carrying up the thoughts of the men of God into the purest regions of truth, must have indirectly stamped the same characters of holiness and grandeur on their words; the inspiration of *direction*, under the more powerful action of which the sacred writers were under God's guidance in regard to what they said and abstained from saying; finally, [p.28]

7 Schleiermacher, der Christliche Glaube, band i. s. 115

8 De Wette, Lehrbuch Anmerk. Twesten, Vorlesungen über die Dogmatik, tome i. p. 424, &c.

9 Michaelis, Introd. to the New Testament.

10 See our chap. v. sect. 2, quest. 44.

11 Drs Pye Smith, Dick, Wilson.

the inspiration of suggestion. Here, they say all the thoughts, and even the words, have been given by God by means of a still more energetic and direct operation of his Spirit.

“The Theopneustia,” says M. Twesten, “extends unquestionably even to words, but only when the choice or the employment of them is connected with the religious life of the soul; for one ought, in this respect,” he adds, “to distinguish between the Old and New Testament, between the Law and the Gospel, between history and prophecy, between narratives and do between the apostles and their apostolical assistants.” To our mind these are all fantastic distinctions; the Bible has not authorized them; the Church of the first eight centuries of the Christian era knew nothing of them; and we believe them to be erroneous in themselves, and deplorable in their results.

Our design then, in this book, in opposition to these three systems,

is to prove the existence, the universality, and the plenitude of the divine inspiration of the Bible.

First of all, it concerns us to know if there has been a divine and miraculous inspiration for the Scriptures. We say that there has. Next, we have to know if the parts of Scripture that are divinely inspired are equally and entirely so; or, in other terms, if God has provided, in a certain though mysterious manner, that the very words of his holy book should always be what they ought to be, and that it should contain no error. This, too, we affirm to be the case. Finally, we have to know whether what is thus inspired by God in the Scriptures, be a part of the Scriptures, or the whole of the Scriptures. We say that it is the whole Scriptures:- the historical books as well as the prophecies; the Gospels as well as the Song of Solomon; the Mark and Luke, as well as those of John and Matthew; the history of the shipwreck of St Paul in the waters of the Adriatic, as well as that of the shipwreck of the old world in the waters of the flood; the scenes of [p.29] Mamre beneath the tents of Abraham, as well as those of the day of Christ in the eternal tabernacles; the prophetic prayers in which the Messiah, a thousand years before his first advent, cries in the Psalms, “My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? - they have pierced my hands and my feet - they have cast lots upon my vesture - they look and stare at me” - as well as the narratives of them by St John, St Mark, St Luke, or St Matthew. In other words, it has been our object to establish by the Word of God that the Scripture is from God, that the Scripture is throughout from God, and that the Scripture throughout is entirely from God.

Meanwhile, however, we must make ourselves clearly understood. In maintaining that all Scripture is from God, we are very far from thinking that man goes for nothing in it. We shall return in a subsequent section to this opinion; but we have felt it necessary to state it here. There, all the words are man's; as there, too, all the words are God's. In a certain sense, the Epistle to the Romans is altogether a letter of Paul's; and in a still higher sense, the Epistle to the Romans is altogether a letter of God's.

Pascal might have dictated one of his Provincial Letters to some Clermont artisan, and another to the Abbess of Port-Royal. Could the former have been on that account less Pascailan than all the rest? Undoubtedly not. The great Newton, when he wished to hand over to

the world his marvellous discoveries, might have employed some Cambridge youth to write out the fortieth, and some college servant the forty-first proposition of his immortal work, the *Principia*, while he might have dictated the remaining pages to Barrow and Halley. Should we any the less possess the discoveries of his genius, and the mathematical reasonings which lead us to refer to one and the same law all the movements in the universe? Would the whole work be any the less his? No, undoubtedly. Perhaps, however, some one at his leisure might have further taken [p.30] some interest in knowing what were the emotions of those two great men, or the simple thoughts of that boy, of the honest musings of that domestic, at the time that their four pens, all alike docile, traced the Latin sentences that were dictated to them. You may have been told that the two latter, as they plied the quill, allowed their thoughts to revert indifferently to past scenes in the gardens of the city, or in the courts of Trinity College; while the two professors, following with the most intense interest every thought of their friend, and participating in his sublime career, like eaglets on their mother's back, sprang with him into the loftiest elevations of science, borne up by his mighty wings, soaring with delight into the new and boundless regions which he had opened to them. Nevertheless, you may have been told, among the lines thus dictated, there may have been some which neither the boy nor even the professors were capable of understanding. These details are of little consequence, you would have replied; I will not waste any time upon them; I will study the book. Its preface, its title, its first line, and its last line, all its theorems, easy or difficult, understood or not understood, are from the same author, and that is enough. Whoever the writers may have been, and however different the respective elevation of their thoughts, their hand, faithful to its task, and superintended while engaged in it, has equally traced their master's thoughts on the same roll of paper; and there I can always study, with equal confidence, in the very words of his genius, the mathematical principles of Newton's philosophy.

Such is the fact of the divine inspiration of the Scriptures (nearly to this extent, that in causing his books to be written by inspired men, the Holy Ghost has almost always, more or less, employed the instrumentality of their understanding, their will, their memory, and all the powers of their personality, as we shall ere long have occasion to

repeat). And it is thus that God, who desired to make known to his elect, in a book that was to [p.31] last for ever, the spiritual principles of divine philosophy, has caused its pages to be written, in the course of a period of sixteen hundred years, by priests, by kings, by warriors, by shepherds, by publicans, by fishermen, by scribes, by tentmakers, associating their affections and their faculties therewith, more or less, according as he deemed fit. Such, then, is God's book. Its first line, its last line, all its teachings, understood or not understood, are by the same author; and that ought to suffice for us. Whoever may have been the writers - whatever their circumstances, their impressions, their comprehension of the book, and the measure of their individuality in Ibis powerful and mysterious operation - they have all written faithfully and under superintendence in the same roll, under the guidance of one and the same Master, for whom a thousand years are as one day; and the result has been the Bible. Therefore I will not lose time in idle questions; I will study the book. It is the word of Moses, the word of Amos, the word of John, the word of Paul; but still the thoughts expressed are God's thoughts, and the words are God's words. "Thou, Lord, hast spoken by the mouth of thy servant David." "The Spirit of the Lord spake by me," said he, "and his word was in my tongue."<sup>12</sup>

<sup>12</sup> Acts iv. 25; 2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2. See our chap. ii. Sect. 2.

It would then, in our view, be holding very erroneous language to say - certain passages in the Bible are man's, and certain passages in the Bible are God's. No; every verse without exception is man's; and every verse without exception is God's, whether we find him speaking there directly in his own name, or whether he employs the entire personality of the sacred writer. And as St Bernard has said of the living works of the regenerated man, "that our will does nothing there without grace, but that grace does nothing there without our will;" so ought we to say, that in the Scriptures God has done nothing but by man, and man has done nothing but by God.  
[p.32]

In fact, it is with divine inspiration as with efficacious grace. In the operations of the Holy Ghost while causing the sacred books to be written, and in those of the same divine agent while converting a soul, and causing it to advance in the ways of sanctification, man is in different respects entirely active and entirely passive. God does all

there; man does nil there; and it may be said for both of these works what St Paul said of one of them to the Philippians, “It is God that worketh in you *to will and to do*.”<sup>13</sup> Thus you will see that in the Scriptures the same operations are attributed alternately to God and to man. God converts, and it is man that converts himself. God circumcises the heart, God gives a new heart; and it is man that should circumcise his heart, and make himself a new heart. “Not only because, in order to obtain such or such an effect, we ought to employ the means to obtain such or such an effect,” says the famous President Edwards in his admirable remarks against the errors of the Arminians, “but because this effect itself is our act, as it is our duty; God *producing all, and we acting all*.”<sup>14</sup>

Such, then, is the Word of God. It is God speaking in man, God speaking by man, God speaking as man, God speaking for man! This is what we have asserted, and must now proceed to prove. Possibly, however, it will be as well that we should first give a more precise definition of this doctrine.

#### *Section IV.*

In point of theory, it were allowable to say that a religion might be divine without the books that teach it being miraculously inspired. It were possible, for example, to figure to ourselves a Christianity without divine inspiration; and one might conceive, perhaps, that all the miracles of our faith have been performed [p.33] with the single exception of this one. On this supposition (which nothing authorizes), the everlasting Father would have given his Son to the world; the creating Word, made flesh, would have submitted for us to the death of the cross, and caused to descend from heaven upon his apostles the spirit of understanding and the power of working miracles; but, all these mysteries of redemption once consummated, he might have relinquished to these men of God the care of writing, according to their own wisdom, our sacred books; and their writings would thus have presented no more than the natural language of their supernatural illuminations, of their convictions, and their charity. Such an order of things, no doubt, is but an idle supposition, directly opposed to the testimony which the scriptures have rendered to

13 Phil. ii. 13.

14 Edwards' Remarks, &c., p. 251.

what they are. But without saving here that it resolves nothing, and that, miracle for miracle, that of illumination is not less inexplicable than that of inspiration; without saying, farther, that the 'Word of God possesses a divine power which belongs to it alone - such an order of things, granting it were a reality, would have exposed us to innumerable errors, and plunged us into the most dismal uncertainty. Upon what testimony could, in that case, our faith have rested? On something said by men? But faith is founded only on the Word of God. - (Rom. x. 17.) In such a system, then, you would only have had a Christianity without Christians. Deprived of any security against the imprudence of the writers, you could not even have given their books the authority at present possessed in the Church by those of Augustine, Bernard, Luther, and Calvin, or of so many other men whom the Holy Ghost enlightened with a knowledge of the truth. We are, in fact, sufficiently aware how many imprudent expressions and erroneous propositions have found their way into the midst even of the finest pages of those admirable doctors. And yet the apostles (on the supposition we have made) would have been far more subject to [p.34] serious mistakes even than they were, since they would not have had, like the doctors of the Church, a Word of God by which to direct their own; and since they themselves would have had to compose the whole language of religious science. (A science is more than half formed when its language is formed.) What deplorable and inevitable errors must have necessarily accompanied, in their case, this revelation without divine inspiration! and in what deplorable doubts would their hearers have been left! - errors in the selection of facts, errors in the appreciation of them, errors in the statement of them, errors in the mode of conceiving the relations they bear to doctrines, errors in the expression of those very doctrines, errors of omission, errors of language, errors of exaggeration, errors in adopting certain national prejudices, or prejudices arising from a man's rank or party, errors in the foresight of the future, and in judgments pronounced upon the past.

But, thanks be to God, it is not thus with our sacred books. They contain no error; they are written throughout by inspiration of God. "Holy men spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost;" they did so,

“not with words that man's wisdom teacheth, but with words which the Spirit of God taught;” in such sort, that not one of these words should be neglected, and that we are called to respect them and to study them, even to their smallest iota and their slightest jot: for “this Scripture is pure, like silver refined seven times: it is perfect.”

These assertions, which are themselves testimonies of the Word of God, have already comprised our last definition of Divine Inspiration, and lead us to characterise it, finally, as “that inexplicable power which the Divine Spirit put forth of old on the authors of holy Scripture, in order to their guidance even in the employment of the words they used, and to preserve them alike from all error and from all omission.” This new definition, which might appear complex, is not so really; for the two traits of which it is com- [p.35] posed are equivalent, and to admit the one is to accept the other.

We propose them disjunctively to the assent of our readers, and we offer them the alternative of accepting either. One has more precision, the other more simplicity, in so far as it presents the doctrine under a form more disengaged from all questions relative to the mode of inspiration, and to the secret experiences of the sacred writers. Let either be fully accepted, and then there will have been rendered to the Scriptures the honour and the credit to which they are entitled.

What we propose, therefore, is to establish the doctrine of Divine inspiration under one or other of these two forms:-

“The Scriptures are given and warranted by God, even in their language;” and, “The Scriptures contain no error - (whereby we understand that they say all that they ought to say, and that they do not say what they ought not to say).”

Now. how shall a man establish this doctrine? By the Scriptures, and only by the Scriptures. Once that we have recognised these as true, we must go to them to be taught what they are; and once that they have told us that they are inspired of God, it belongs to them farther to tell us how they are so, and how far they are so.

To attempt the proof of their inspiration *a priori* - by arguing from that miracle being necessary for the security of our faith - would be to adopt a feeble mode of reasoning, and almost to imitate, in one sense, the presumption which, in another sense, imagines *a priori* four degrees of divine inspiration. Further; to think of establishing the entire

inspiration of the Scriptures on the consideration of their beauty, their constant wisdom, their prophetic foresight, and all the characters of divinity which occur in them, would be to build on arguments no doubt just, but contestable, or at least contested. It is solely on the declarations of holy Scripture, therefore, that we have to take our stand. [p.36]

We have no authority but that for the doctrines of our faith; and divine inspiration is just one of those doctrines.

Here, however, let us anticipate a misapprehension. It may happen that some reader, still but feebly established in his Christianity, mistaking our object, and thinking to glance through our book in search of arguments which may convince him, might find himself disappointed, and might conceive himself authorized to charge our line of argument with some vicious reasoning, as if we wanted to prove in it the inspiration of the Scriptures by the inspiration of the Scriptures. It is of consequence that we should put him right. We have not written these pages for the disciples of Porphyry, or of Voltaire, or of Rousseau; and it has not been our object to prove that the Scriptures are worthy of belief. Others have done this, and it is not our task. We address ourselves to men who respect the Scriptures, and who admit their veracity. To these we attest, that, being true, they say that they are inspired; and that, being inspired, they declare that they are so throughout: whence we conclude that they necessarily must be so.

Certainly, of all truths, this doctrine is one of the simplest and the clearest to minds meekly and rationally submissive to the testimony of the Scriptures. No doubt modern divines may be heard to represent it as full of uncertainties and difficulties; but they who have desired to study it only by the light of God's Word, have been unable to perceive those difficulties, or to find those uncertainties. Nothing, on the contrary, is more clearly or oftener taught in the Scriptures than the Inspiration of the Scriptures. Accordingly, the ancients knew nothing on this subject of the embarrassments and the doubts of the doctors of the present day; for them the Bible was from God, or it was not from God. On this point antiquity presents an admirable unanimity.<sup>15</sup> But since the moderns, in imitation of [p.37] the Talmudistic Jews and Rabbins of the middle ages, have imagined learned distinctions between four or five different degrees of inspiration, who can wonder that for them difficulties and uncertainties have been multiplied? Contesting what the Scriptures

teach, and explaining what the Scriptures do not teach, it is easy to see how they come to be embarrassed; but for this they have only their own rashness to blame.

So very clear, indeed, is this testimony which the Scriptures render to their own inspiration, that one may well feel amazed that, among Christians, there should be any diversities of opinion on so well-defined a subject. But the evil is too easily explained by the power of preconceived opinions. The mind once wholly preoccupied by objections of its own raising, sacred passages are perverted from their natural meaning in proportion as those objections present themselves; and, by a secret effort of thought, people try to reconcile these with the difficulties that embarrass them. The plenary inspiration of the Scriptures is, in spite of the Scriptures, denied (as the Sadducees denied the resurrection), because the miracle is thought inexplicable; but we must recollect the answer made by Jesus Christ, “Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not THE SCRIPTURES, nor THE POWER OF GOD?” - (Mark xii. 24, 27.) It is, therefore, because of this too common disposition of the human mind, that we have thought it best not to present the reader with our scriptural proofs until after having completed our definition of divine inspiration, by an attentive examination of the part to be assigned in it to the individuality of the sacred writers. This will be the subject of the following section. No less do we desire being able to present the reader with a more didactic expression of the doctrine that occupies us, and of some of the questions connected with it: but we have thought that a more fitting place might be found for [p.38] this development elsewhere, partly because it will be more favourably received after our scriptural proofs shall have been considered; partly because we have no desire, by employing the forms of the school, to repel, at the very threshold, unlearned readers who may have taken up these pages with the idea of finding something in them for the edification of their faith.

### *Section V. On the Individuality of the Sacred Writers.*

The individuality of the sacred writers, so profoundly stamped on the books they have respectively written, seems to many impossible to

be reconciled with a plenary inspiration. No one, say they, can read the Scriptures without being struck with the differences of language, conception, and style, discernible in their authors; so that even were the titles of the several books to give us no intimation that we were passing from one author to another, still we should almost instantly discover, from the change of their character, that we had no longer to do with the same writer, but that a new personage had taken the pen. This diversity reveals

15 See on this subject the learned dissertation in which Dr Rudelbach establishes the sound doctrines on inspiration historically, as have sought to establish them by Scripture. (Zeitschrift für die gesammte Lutherische Theologie und Kirche, von Rudelbach und Guericke, 1840.)

itself even on comparing one prophet with another prophet, and one apostle with another apostle. Who could read the writings of Isaiah and Ezekiel, of Amos and Hosea, of Zephaniah and Habakkuk, of Jeremiah and Daniel, and proceed to study those of Paul and Peter, or of John, without observing, with respect to each of them, how much his views of the truth, his reasonings, and his language, have been influenced by his habits, his condition in life, his genius, his education, his recollections - all the circumstances, in short, that have acted upon his outer and inner man? They tell us what they saw, and just as they saw it. Their memory is put into requisition, their imagination is called into exercise, their affections are drawn out - their whole being is at work, and their [p.39] moral physiognomy is clearly delineated. We are sensible that the composition of each has greatly depended, both as to its essence and its form, on its author's circumstances and peculiar turn of mind. Could the son of Zebedee have composed the Epistle to the Romans, as we have received it from the apostle Paul? Who would think of attributing to him the Epistle to the Hebrews? And although the Epistles general of Peter were without their title, who would ever think of ascribing them to John? It is thus, likewise, with the evangelists. All four are very distinctly recognisable, although they all speak of the same Master, profess the same doctrines, and relate the same acts. Such, we are told, is the fact, and the following consequences are boldly deduced from it

1. Were it God who speaks alone and constantly in the Scriptures, we should see, in their various parts, an uniformity which is not to be found there.

2. It must be admitted that two different impulses have acted at the same time on the same authors, while they were composing the Scriptures; the natural impulses of their individuality, and the miraculous impulses of inspiration.

3. There must have resulted from the conflict, the concurrence, or the balanced action of these two forces, - an inspiration variable, gradual, sometimes entire, sometimes imperfect, and oft times even reduced to the feeble measure of a mere superintendence.

4. The variable power of the Divine Spirit, in this combined action, must have been in the ratio of the importance and the difficulty of the matters treated of by the sacred author. He might even have abstained from any intervention when the judgment and the recollections of the writer could suffice, inasmuch as God never performs useless miracles.

“It belongs not to man to say where nature ends, and where inspiration begins,” says Bishop Wilson.<sup>16</sup> [p.40]

“The exaggeration we find in the notions which some have entertained of inspiration,” says Dr Twisten, “does not consist in their having extended them to all, but in their having extended them to all equally. If inspiration does not exclude the personal action of the sacred authors, no more does it destroy all influence proceeding from human imperfection. But we may suppose this influence to be more and more feeble in the writers, in proportion as the matter treated of is more intimately related to Christ.”<sup>17</sup>

16 Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity, p. 506.

17 Vorles. ueber die Dogmatik, tome i.

Dr Dick recognises three degrees of inspiration in the holy Scriptures:- “1. There are many things in the Scriptures which the writers might have known, and probably did know, by ordinary means . . . . . In these cases, no supernatural influence was necessary to enlighten and invigorate their minds; it was only necessary that they should be infallibly preserved from error. 2. There are other passages of Scripture, in composing which the minds of the writers must have been supernaturally endowed with more than ordinary vigour . . . . . 3. It is manifest, with respect to many passages of Scripture, that the subjects of which they treat must have been directly revealed to the writers.”<sup>18</sup>

5. Hence it follows, that if this plenary inspiration was sometimes necessary, still, with respect to matters at once easy and of no religious importance, there might be found in the Scriptures some harmless

errors, and some of those stains ever left by the hand of man on all he touches. While the energies of the divine mind, by an action always powerful, and often victorious, enlarged the comprehension of the men of God, purified their affections, and led them to seek out, from among all their recollections of the past, those which might be most usefully transmitted to the Church of God, the natural energies of their own minds, left to themselves in so far as regarded all details of no consequence either [p.41] to faith or virtue, may have led to the occurrence in the Scriptures of some mixture of inaccuracy and imperfection. “We must not therefore,” says M. Twisten, “attribute an unlimited infallibility to the Scripture, as if there were no error there. No doubt God is truth, and in matters of importance all that is from him is truth; but if all be not of equal importance, all does not then proceed equally from him; and if inspiration does not exclude the personal action of the sacred authors, no more does it destroy all influence of human imperfection.”<sup>19</sup>

All these authors include in their assumptions and conclusions the notion, that there are some passages in the Scriptures quite devoid of importance, and that there are others alloyed with error. We shall erelong repel with all our might both these imputations; but this is not yet the place for it. The only question we have to do with here, is that respecting the living and personal form under which the Scriptures of God have been given to us, and its alleged incompatibility with the fact of a plenary inspiration. To this we proceed to reply.

1. We begin by declaring how far we are from contesting the fact alleged, while, however, we reject the false consequences that are deduced from it. So far are we from not acknowledging this human individuality stamped throughout on our sacred books, that, on the contrary, it is with profound gratitude - with an ever-growing admiration - that we contemplate this living, actual, dramatic, humanitarian character diffused with so powerful and charming an effect through all parts of the book of God. Yes (we cordially unite with the objectors in saying it), here is the phraseology, the tone, the accent of a Moses; there, of a John: here, of an Isaiah; there, of an Amos: here, of a Daniel or of a Peter; there, of a Nehemiah, there again of a Paul. We recognise them, listen to them, see them. Here, one may say, there is no room for mistake. We admit the fact; we delight in studying it; [p.42] we profoundly admire it;

and we see in it, as we shall have occasion more than once to repeat, one additional proof of the divine wisdom which has dictated the Scriptures.

18 See an Essay on the Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures, by the late John Dick, D.D. Fourth edition. Glasgow, 1840. Chapter 1.

19 *Ut supra.*

2. Of what consequence to the fact of the divine inspiration is the absence or the concurrence of the sacred writers' affections? Cannot God equally employ them or dispense with them? He who can make a statue speak, can he not, as he pleases, make a child of man speak? He who rebuked by means of a dumb animal the madness of one prophet, can he not put into another prophet the sentiments or the words which suit best the plan of his revelations? He that caused to come forth from the wall a hand, without any mind of its own to direct it, that it might write for him those terrible words, "*Mene, mene, tekem, upharsin,*" could, he not equally guide the intelligent and pious pen of his apostle, in order to its tracing for him such words as these: "*I say the truth in Christ, and my conscience bears me witness in the Holy Ghost, that I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart, for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh, and who are Israelites?*" Know you how God acts, and how he abstains from acting? Will you teach us the mechanism of inspiration? Will you say what is the difference between its working where individuality is discoverable, and its working where individuality is not discoverable? Will you explain to us why the concurrence of the thoughts, the recollections, and the emotions of the sacred writers, should diminish aught of their theopneustia? and will you tell us whether this very concurrence may not form part of it? There is a gulf interposed betwixt the fact of this individuality and the consequence you deduce from it; and your understanding is no more competent to descend into that gulf to contest the reality of theopneustia than ours is to explain it. Was there not a great amount of individuality in the language of Caiaphas, when that wicked man, full of the bitterest spite, abandoning himself to [p.43] the counsels of his own evil heart, and little dreaming that he was giving utterance to the words of God, cried out in the Jewish council, "Ye know nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us that one man should die for the people?" Certainly there was in these words, we should say, abundance of individuality; and yet we find it written that Caiaphas *spoke this not of himself* (ἀφ' ἑαυτοῦ), but that, being high priest for that year, "he

prophesied,” unconsciously, that Jesus should die, “in order that he might gather into one the children of God that were scattered abroad.” - (John xi. 49-52.)

Why, then, should not the same Spirit, in order to the utterance of the words of God, employ the pious affections of the saints, as well as the wicked and hypocritical thoughts of his most detestable adversaries?

3. When a man tells us that if, in such or such a passage, the style be that of Moses or of Luke, of Ezekiel or of John, then it cannot be that of God - it were well that he would let us know what is God's style. One would call our attention, forsooth, to the accent of the Holy Ghost - would show us how to recognise him by the peculiar cast of his phraseology, by the tone of his voice; and would tell us wherein, in the language of the Hebrews or in that of the Greeks, his supreme individuality reveals itself!

4. It should not be forgotten, that the sovereign action of God, in the different fields in which it is displayed, never excludes the employment of second causes. On the contrary, it is in the concatenation of their mutual bearings that he loves to make his mighty wisdom shine forth. In the field of creation he gives us plants by the combined employment of all the elements - heat, moisture, electricity, the atmosphere, light, the mechanical attraction of the capillary vessels, and the manifold operations of the organs of vegetation. In the field of providence, he accomplishes the development of his vastest plans by means of the unexpected concurrence of a thousand millions of human [p.44] wills, alternately intelligent and yielding, or ignorant and rebellious. “Herod and Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel” (influenced by so many diverse passions), “were gathered together,” he tells us, only “to do whatsoever his hand and counsel had determined before to be done.” Thus, too, in the field of prophecy does he bring his predictions to their accomplishment. He prepares, for example, long beforehand, a warlike prince in the mountains of Persia, and another in those of Media; the former of these he had indicated by name two hundred years before; he unites them at the point named with ten other nations against the empire of the Chaldeans; he enables them to surmount a thousand obstacles; and makes them at last enter the great Babylon, at the moment when the seventy years, so long marked out for the captivity of the Jewish people, had come to a close. In the field of his miracles, even, he is pleased still

to make use of second causes. There he had only to say, “Let the thing be, and it would have its being;” but he desired, by employing inferior agents, even in that case to let us know that it is he that gives power to the feeblest of them. To divide the Red Sea, he not only causes the rod of Moses to be stretched out over the deep - he sends from the east a mighty wind, which blows all night, and makes the waters go back. To cure the man that was born blind, he makes clay and anoints his eyelids. In the field of redemption, instead of converting a soul by an immediate act of his will, he presents motives to it, he makes it read the Gospel, he sends preachers to it; and thus it is that, while it is he who “gives us to will and to do according to his good pleasure,” he “begets us by his own will, by the word of truth.” Well, then, why should it not be thus in the field of inspiration (theopneustia)? Wherefore, when he sends forth his Word, should he not cause it to enter the understanding, the heart, and the life of his servants, as he puts it upon their lips? Wherefore should he not associated their personality with what they reveal to us? Where - [p.45] fore should not their sentiments, their history, their experiences, form part of their inspiration (theopneustia)?

5. What may, moreover, clearly expose the error involved in this alleged difficulty, is the extreme inconsistency shown in the use that is made of it? In fact, in order to impugn the plenary inspiration of certain portions of the Scriptures, the individuality with which they are marked is insisted on; and yet it is admitted that other parts of the sacred books, in which this character is equally manifest, must have been given directly by God, even to the most minute details. Isaiah, Daniel, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and the author of the Apocalypse, have each stamped upon their prophecies their peculiar style, features, manner - in a word, their mark; just as Luke, Mark, John, Paul, and Peter have been able to do in their narratives, or in their letters. There is no validity, then, in the objection. If it proved any thing, it would prove too much.

6. What still farther strikes us in this objection and in the intermittent system of inspiration with which it is associated, is its triple character of complication, rashness, and childishness. Complication; for it is assumed that the divine action, in dictating the Scriptures, intermitted or fell off as often as the passage falls in the scale of difficulty, or in the scale of importance; and thus God is made to retire or advance successively in the mind of the sacred writer during the

course of one and the same chapter, or one and the same passage! Rashness; for the majesty of the Scriptures not being recognised, it is boldly assumed that they are of no importance, and require no wisdom beyond that of man, except in some of their parts. We add childishness; one is afraid. it is alleged, to attribute to God useless miracles, - as if the Holy Ghost, after having, as is admitted, dictated, word for word, one part of the Scriptures, must find less trouble in doing nothing more elsewhere than aiding the sacred author by enlightening him, or leaving him to write by himself under mere superintendence!

[p.46]

7. But this is by no means all. What most of all makes us protest against a theory according to which the Scriptures are classed into the *inspired*, the *half-inspired*, and the *uninspired* (as if this sorry doctrine behaved to flow from the individuality stamped upon them), is its direct opposition to the Scriptures. One part of the Bible is from man (people venture to say), and the other part is from God. And yet, mark what its own language on the subject is. It protests that *ALL Scripture is given by inspiration of God.*” It points to no exception. What right, then, can we have to make any, when itself admits none? Just because people tell us, if there be in the Scriptures a certain number of passages which could not have been written except under plenary inspiration, there are others for which it would have been enough for the author to have received some eminent gifts, and others still which might have been composed even by a very ordinary person! Be it so; but how does this bear upon the question? When you have been told who the author of a book is, you know that all that is in that book is from him - the easy and the difficult, the important and the unimportant. If, then, the whole Bible “is given by inspiration of God,” of what consequence is it to the question that there are passages, in your eyes, more important or more difficult than others? The least among the companions of Jesus might no doubt have given us that 5th verse of the 11th chapter of St John, “Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus;” as the most petty schoolmaster also might have composed that first line of Athalie, “Into his temple, lo! I come, Jehovah to adore.” But were we told that the great Itacine employed some village schoolmaster to write out his drama, at his dictation, should we not continue, nevertheless, still to attribute to him all its parts - its first line, the notation of the scenes, the

names of the *dramatis personæ*, the indications of their exits and their entrances, as well as the most sublime strophes of his choruses? if, then, God himself declares to us [p.47] his having dictated the whole Scriptures, who shall dare to say that that 5th verse of the 11th chapter of St John is less from God than the sublime words with which the Gospel begins, and which describe to us the eternal Word? Inspiration, no doubt, may be perceptible in certain passages more clearly than in others; but it is not, on that account, less real in the one case than in the other.

In a word, were there some parts of the Bible without inspiration, no longer could it be truly said that the whole Bible is divinely inspired. No longer would it be throughout the Word of God, It would have deceived us.

8. Here it is of special importance to remark, that this fatal system of a gradual, imperfect, and intermittent inspiration, has its origin in that misapprehension to which we have more than once had occasion to advert. It is because people have almost always wished to view inspiration in the man, while it ought to have been seen only in the book. It is “ALL SCRIPTURE,” it is *all that is written*, that is inspired of God. We are not told, and we are not asked, how God did it. All that is attested to us is, that He has done it. And what we have to believe is simply that, whatever may have been the method he took for accomplishing it.

To this deceptive point of view, which some have thought good to take in contemplating the fact of inspiration, the three following illusions may be traced.

First; in directing their regards to inspiration in the sacred author, people have naturally been led to figure it to themselves as an *extraordinary excitation* in him, of which he was conscious, which took him out of himself; which animated him, after the manner of the ancient Pythonesses, with an *afflatu divino*, a divine fire, easily discernible; in such sort, that wherever his words are simple, calm, familiar, they have been unable to see how divine inspiration could be attributed to him.

Next; in contemplating inspiration in persons, peo- [p.48] ple have farther been led to attribute to it *different degrees* of perfection, seeing they knew that the sacred authors had themselves received very different measures of illumination and personal holiness. But if you contemplate

inspiration in the book, then you will immediately perceive that it cannot exist there in degrees. A word is from God, or it is not from God. If it be from God, it is not so after two different fashions. Whatever may have been the spiritual state of the writer, if all he writes be divinely inspired, all his words are from God. And (mark well) it is according to this principle that no Christian will hesitate, any more than Jesus Christ has done, to rank the scriptures of Solomon with those of Moses, any more than those of Mark or of Matthew with those of the disciple whom Jesus loved - nay, with the words of the Son of God himself. They are all from God.

Finally; by a third illusion, from contemplating inspiration in the men who wrote the Scriptures, not in the Scriptures which they wrote, people have been naturally led to deem it absurd that God should *reveal* miraculously to any one *what that person knew already*. They would, on this ground, deny the inspiration of those passages in which the sacred writers simply tell what they had seen, or simply state opinions, such as any man of plain good sense might express without being inspired. But it will be quite otherwise the moment inspiration is viewed, not as *in the writer*, but as *in that which is written*. Then it will be seen that all has been traced under God's guidance - both the things which the writer knew already and those of which he knew nothing. Who is not sensible, to give an examples that the case in which *I should dictate* to a student a book on geometry, altogether differs from that in which, after having *instructed him* more or less perfectly in that science, I should employ him to compose a book on it himself under my auspices? In the latter work, it is true, he would require my intervention only in the difficult propositions; but then, who would think of [p.49] saying the book was mine? In the former case, on the contrary, all parts of the book, easy and difficult alike, from the quadrature of the transcendental curves to the theory of the straight line or of the triangle, would be mine. Well, then, so is it with the Bible. It is not, as some will have it, a book which God employed men, whom he had previously enlightened, to write under his auspices. No - it is a book which he dictated to them; it is the word of God; the Spirit of the Lord spake by its authors, and his words were upon their tongues.

9. The style of Moses, Ezekiel, David, St Luke, and St John, may be at the same time God's style, is what a child might tell us.

Let us suppose that some modern French author had thought good, at the commencement of the present century, to aim at popularity by borrowing for a time the style, we shall say, of Chateaubriand; might it not then be said with equal truth, but in two different senses, that the style was the author's and yet the style too of Chateaubriand? And if, to save the French from some terrible catastrophe by bringing them back to the Gospel, God should condescend to employ certain prophets among them, by the mouths of whom he should proclaim his message, would not these men have to preach in French? What, then, would be their style, and what would you require in it, in order to its being recognised as that of God? If such were his pleasure, one of these prophets might speak like Fénélon, another like Bonaparte; in which case there is no doubt that it would be, in one sense, the curt, barking, jerking style of the great captain; also, and in the same sense, the sustained and varied flow of the priest of Cambrai's rounded eloquence; while in another, and a higher and truer sense, it would, in both these mouths, be the style of God, the manner of God, the word of God. No doubt, on every occasion on which he has revealed himself, God might have caused an awful voice to resound from heaven, as of old from the top of Sinai, or on the [p.50] banks of the Jordan.<sup>20</sup> His messengers, at least, might have been only angels of light. But even then what languages would these angels have spoken? Evidently those of the earth! And if he behoved on this earth to substitute for the syntax of heaven and the vocabulary of the archangels, the words and the constructions of the Hebrews or the Greeks, why not equally have borrowed their manners, style, and personality?

10. This there is no doubt that he did, but not so as that any thing was left to chance. "Known unto him are all his works from the beginning of the world;"<sup>21</sup> and just as, year after year, he causes the tree to put forth its leaves as well for the season when they respire the atmospheric elements, and, cooperating with the process at the roots, can safely draw nourishment from their juices, as for that in which the caterpillars that are to spin their silk on its branches are hatched and feed upon them; just as he prepared a gourd for the very place and the very night on which Jonah was to come and seat himself to the east of Nineveh, and when the next morning dawned, a gnawing worm when the gourd was to be withered; so, too, when he would proceed to the

most important of his doings, and cause that Word to be written which is to outlast the heavens and the earth, the Lord God could prepare long beforehand each of those prophets, for the moment and for the testimony to which he had foreordained them from eternity. He chose them, in succession, for their several duties, from among all men born of women; and, with respect to them, fulfilled in its perfection that saying, “Send, O Lord, by the hand thou shouldst send.”<sup>22</sup>

As a skilful musician, when he would execute a long score by himself, takes up by turns the funereal flute, the shepherd's pipe, the merry fife, or the trumpet that summons to battle; so did Almighty God, when he would make us hear his eternal word, choose out from [p.51] of old the instruments which it seemed fit to him to inspire with the breath of his spirit. “He chose them before the foundation of the world, and separated them from their mother's womb.”<sup>23</sup>

Has the reader ever paid a visit to the astonishing organist, who so charmingly elicits the tourist's tears in the Cathedral at Freiburg, as he touches one after another his wondrous keys, and greets your ear by turns with the march of warriors on the riverside, the voice of prayer

20 Exod. xix.; John xii. 39.

21 Acts xv. 18.

22 Exod. iv. 13.

23 Gal. i. 15; Eph. i. 4.

sent up from the lake during the fury of the storm, or of thanksgiving when it is hushed to rest? All your senses are electrified, for you seem to have seen all, and to have heard all. Well, then, it was thus that the Lord God, mighty in harmony, applied, as it were, the finger of his Spirit to the stops which he had chosen for the hour of his purpose, and for the unity of his celestial hymn. He had from eternity before him all the human stops which he required; his Creator's eye embraces at a glance this range of keys stretching over threescore centuries; and when he would make known to our fallen world the everlasting counsel of his redemption, and the coming of the Son of God, he put his left hand on Enoch, the seventh man from Adam,<sup>24</sup> and his right on John, the humble and sublime prisoner of Patmos. The celestial anthem, seven hundred years before the flood, began with these words, “Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his saints, to execute judgment upon all;” but already, in the mind of God, and in the eternal harmony of his work, the voice of John had answered to that of Enoch, and closed the hymn,

three thousand years after him, with these words, “Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him! Even so, Lord Jesus, come quickly. Amen!” And during this hymn of thirty centuries, the Spirit of God never ceased to breathe in all his messengers; the angels, an apostle tells us, desired to look into its wondrous depths.<sup>25</sup> God's elect were moved, and life eternal came down into the souls of men.

Between Enoch and St John, listen to Jeremiah, twenty-four centuries after the one, and seven hundred years before the other, “Before I formed thee in the belly,” saith the Lord, “I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.”<sup>26</sup> In vain did this alarmed man exclaim, “Ah, Lord God! behold, I cannot speak: for I am a child.” The Lord answers him, “Say not, I am a child: for thou shalt speak whatsoever I command thee;” and the Lord put forth his hand and touched his mouth, “Behold,” said he, “I have put my words in thy mouth.”

Between Enoch and Jeremiah, listen to Moses. He, too, struggles on Mount Horeb against the call of the Lord, “Alas, O my Lord, I am not eloquent; send, I pray thee, by the hand of him whom thou wilt send.” But the anger of the Lord is kindled against Moses. “Who hath made man's mouth?” he says to him. “Now therefore go, and I will be with thy mouth, and will teach thee what thou shalt say.”<sup>27</sup>

Between Jeremiah and John, listen to Paul of Tarsus, “When it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb, to reveal his Son in me, he called me by his grace, that I might preach him among the heathen.”<sup>28</sup>

You see, then, it was sometimes the artless and sublime simplicity of John; sometimes the impassioned, elliptical, rousing, and logical energy of Paul; sometimes the fervour and solemnity of Peter; it was Isaiah's magnificent, and David's lyrical poetry; it was the simple and majestic narratives of Moses, or the sententious and royal wisdom of Solomon - yes, it was all this; it was Peter, it was Isaiah, it was Matthew, it was John, it was Moses; yet it was God.

24 Jude 14.

25 1 Peter i. 12.

26 Jerem. i. 5-7.

27 Exod. iv. 10, &c. &c.

28 Gal. i. 5.

“Are not all these which speak Galileans?” the people exclaimed on the day of Pentecost; yes, they [p.53] are so; but the message that is on their lips comes from another country - it is from heaven. Listen to it; for tongues of fire have descended on their heads, and it is God that speaks to you by their mouths.

11. Finally, we would fain that people should understand that this human individuality to which our attention is directed in the Scriptures, far from leaving any stain there, or from being an infirmity there, stamps upon them, on the contrary, a divine beauty, and powerfully reveals to us their inspiration.

Yes, we have said that it is God who speaks to us there, but it is also man:- it is man, but it is also God. Admirable Word of God! it has been made man in its own way, as the eternal Word was! Yes, God has made it also come down to us full of grace and truth, like unto our words in all things, yet without error and sin! Admirable 'Word, divine Word, yet withal full of humanity, much-to-be-loved Word of my God! Yes, in order to our understanding it, it had of necessity to be put upon mortal lips, that it might relate human things; and, in order to attract our regard, behoved to invest itself with our modes of thinking, and with all the emotions of our voice; for God well knew whereof we are made. But we have recognised it as the 'Word of the Lord, mighty, efficacious, sharper than a two-edged sword; and the simplest among us, on hearing it, may say like Cleopas and his friend, “Did not our hearts burn within us while it spoke to us?”

With what a mighty charm do the Scriptures, by this abundance of humanity, and by all this personality with which their divinity is invested, remind us that the Lord of our souls, whose touching voice they are, does himself bear a human heart on the throne of God, although seated on the highest place, where the angels serve him and adore him for ever! It is thus, also, that they present to us not only that double character of variety and unity which already embellishes all the other works of God, as Creator of the heavens and the earth; but, further, that mingling of familiarity and [p.54] authority, of sympathy and grandeur, of practical details and mysterious majesty, of humanity and divinity, which is recognisable in all the dispensations of the same God, as Redeemer and Shepherd of his Church.

It is thus, then, that the Father of mercies, while speaking in his prophets, behoved not only to employ their manner as well as their voice, and their style as well as their pen; but, further, often to put in operation their whole faculties of thought and feeling. Sometimes, in order to show us his divine sympathy there, he has deemed it fitting to associate their own recollections, their human convictions, their personal experiences, and their pious emotions, with the words he dictated to them; sometimes, in order to remind us of his sovereign intervention, he has preferred dispensing with this unessential concurrence of their recollections, affections, and understanding.

Such did the Word of God behove to be.

Like Immanuel, full of grace and truth; at once in the bosom of God and in the heart of man; mighty and sympathizing; heavenly and of the earth; sublime and lowly; awful and familiar; God and man! Accordingly it bears no resemblance to the God of the Rationalists. They, after having, like the disciples of Epicurus, banished the Divinity far from man into a third heaven, would have had the Bible also to have kept itself there. “Philosophy employs the language of the gods,” says the too famous Strauss of Ludwigsburg, “while religion makes use of the language of men.” No doubt she does so; she has recourse to no other; she leaves to the philosophers and to the gods of this world their empyrean and their language.

Studied under this aspect, considered in this character, the Word of God stands forth without its like; it presents attractions quite unequalled; it offers to men of all times, all places, and all conditions, beauties ever fresh; a charm that never grows old, that always satisfies, never pails. With it, what we find with respect to human books is reversed; for it pleases and fascinates, [p.55] extends and rises in your regard the more assiduously you read it. It seems as if the book, the more it is studied and studied over again, grows and enlarges itself, and that some kind unseen being comes daily to stitch in some fresh leaves. And thus it is that the souls, alike of the learned and the simple, who have long nourished themselves on it, keep hanging upon it as the people hung of old on the lips of Jesus Christ.<sup>29</sup> They all think it incomparable; now powerful as the sound of mighty waters; now soft and gentle, like the voice of the spouse to her bridegroom; but always perfect, “always restoring the soul, and making wise the simple.”<sup>30</sup>

To what book, in this respect, would you liken it? Go and put beside it the discourses of Plato, or Seneca, or Aristotle, or Saint Simon, or Jean Jacques. Have you read Mahomet's books? Listen to him but for one hour, and your ears will tingle while beaten on by his piercing and monotonous voice. From the first page to the last, it is still the same sound of the same trumpet; still the same Medina horn, blown from the top of some mosque, minaret, or warcamel; still sybilline oracles, shrill and harsh, uttered in an unvarying tone of command and threat, whether it ordain virtue or enjoin murder; ever one and the same voice, surly and blustering, having no bowels, no familiarity, no tears, no soul, no sympathy.

After trying other books, if you experience religious longings open the Bible; listen to it. Sometimes you find here the songs of angels, but of angels that have come down among the children of Adam. Here is the deep-sounding organ of the Most High, but an organ that serves to soothe man's heart and to rouse his conscience, alike in shepherd's cots and in palaces; alike in the poor man's garrets and in the tents of the desert. The Bible, in fact, has lessons for all conditions; it brings upon the scene both the lowly and the great; it [p.56] reveals equally to both the love of God, and unveils in both the same miseries. It addresses itself to children; and it is often children that show us there the way to heaven and the great things of Jehovah. It addresses itself to shepherds and herdsmen; and it is often shepherds and herdsmen who lift up their voices there, and reveal to us the character of God. It speaks to kings and to scribes; and it is often kings and scribes that teach us there man's wretchedness, humiliation, confession, and prayer. Domestic scenes, confessions of conscience, pourings forth of prayer in secret, travels, proverbs, revelations of the depths of the heart, the holy

29 Luke xix. 48: ος λαὸς ὅπας ἐξεκρέματο.

30 Ps. xix. 7.

courses pursued by a child of God, weaknesses unveiled, falls, recoveries, inward experiences, parables, familiar letters, theological treatises, sacred commentaries on some ancient Scripture, national chronicles, military annals, political statistics, descriptions of God, portraits of angels, celestial visions, practical counsels, rules of life, solutions of cases of conscience, judgments of the Lord, sacred hymns, predictions of future events, narratives of what passed during the days preceding our creation, sublime odes, inimitable pieces of poetry; - all

this is found there by turns; and all this meets our view in most delightful variety, and presenting a whole whose majesty, like that of a temple, is overpowering. Thus it is, that, from its first to its last page, the Bible behaved. to combine with its majestic unity the indefinable charm of human-like instruction, familiar, sympathetic, personal, and the charm of a drama extending over forty centuries. In the Bible of Desmarets, it is said, “There are fords here for lambs, and there are deep waters where elephants swim.”

But behold, at the same time, what unity, and, lo! what innumerable and profound harmonies in this immense variety! Under all forms it is still the same truth; ever man lost, and God the Saviour; ever man with his posterity coming forth out of Eden and losing the tree of life, and the second Adam with his people re-entering paradise, and regaining possession of the [p.57] tree of life; ever the same cry uttered in tones innumerable, “O heart of man, return to thy God, for he pardoneth! We are in the gulf of perdition; let us come out of it; a Saviour hath gone down into it he bestows holiness as he bestows life.”

“Is it possible that a book at once so sublime and so simple can be the work of man?” was asked of the philosophers of the last century by one who was himself too celebrated a philosopher. And all its pages have replied, No - it is impossible; for every where, traversing so many ages, and whichever it be of the God-employed writers that holds the pen, king or shepherd, scribe or fisherman, priest or publican, you every where perceive that one same Author, at a thousand years' interval, and that one same eternal Spirit, has conceived and dictated all; - every where, at Babylon as at Horeb, at Jerusalem as at Athens, at Rome as at Patmos, you will find described the same God, the same world, the same men, the same angels, the same future, the same heaven:- every where, whether it be a poet or a historian that addresses you, whether it be in the plains of the desert in the age of Pharaoh, or in the prisons of the capitol in the days of the Caesars - every where in the world the same ruin; in man the same impotency; in the angels the same elevation, the same innocence, the same charity; in heaven the same purity, the same happiness, the same meeting together of truth and mercy, the same mutual embracing of righteousness and peace; the same counsels of a God who blotteth out iniquity, and who, nevertheless, doth not clear the guilty.

We conclude, therefore, that the abundance of humanity to be found in the Scriptures, far from compromising their divine inspiration, is only one farther mark of their divinity.

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004. <http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>  
Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,  
[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

[p.58]

## II. Scriptural Proof of the Divine Inspiration.

Let us open the Scriptures. - What do they say of their inspiration?

### *Section I. All Scripture is Divinely Inspired.*

We shall commence by reproducing here that oft-repeated passage, 2 Tim. iii. 16, “*All Scripture is given by inspiration of God!*”<sup>1</sup> that is to say, all parts of it are given by the Spirit or by the breath of God.

This statement admits of no exception and of no restriction. Here there is no exception; it is ALL SCRIPTURE; it is *all that is written* (πᾶσα γραφή); meaning thereby the thoughts after they have received the stamp of language. - No restriction; all Scripture is in such wise a work of God, that it is represented to us as uttered by the divine breathing, just as human speech is uttered by the breathing of a man’s mouth. The prophet is the mouth of the Lord.

The purport of this declaration of St Paul remains the same in both the constructions that may be put upon his words, whether we place, as our versions do, the affirmation of the phrase on the word θεόπνευστό; (*divinely inspired*), and suppose the verb to be under [p.59] stood (*all Scripture is divinely inspired, profitable . . .*); or, making the verb apply to the words that follow, we understand θεόπνευστος (*divinely inspired*) only as a determinative adjective (*all Scripture divinely inspired of God, is profitable . . .*). - This last construction would even give more force than the first to the apostle’s declaration. For then, as his statement would necessarily relate to the whole Scripture of the *holy Letters* (τὰ ἅγια γράμματα), of which he had been speaking, would assume, as an admitted and incontestable principle, that the simple mention of the *holy Letters* implies of itself that *Scriptures inspired by God* are meant.

Nevertheless it will be proper to give a farther expression of this same truth, by some other declaration of our holy books.

<sup>1</sup> See further upon this passage, our Chap. III. question 27.

## Section II. All the Prophetic Utterances are Given by God.

St Peter in his second epistle, at the close of the first chapter, thus expresses himself: “Knowing this first, that no Scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man; but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” - Note on this passage:

1. That it relates to *written* revelations (προφητεία γραφῆς)
2. That *never* (οὐ πότε) did any of these come through the impulsion or the government of a *will of man*;
3. That it was as *urged* or *moved by the Holy Ghost* that those holy men wrote and spoke;
4. Finally, that their writings are called by the name of *prophecy*.

It will be proper then, before we proceed farther, to have the scriptural meaning of these words *prophecy*, *prophesy*, *prophet* (נָבִיא), precisely determined; because it is indispensable for the investigation with which we [p.60] are occupied, that this be known, and because the knowledge of it will throw much light on the whole question.

Various and often very inaccurate meanings have been given to the biblical term prophet; but an attentive examination of the passages in which it is employed, will soon convince us that it constantly designates, in the Scriptures, “a man whose mouth utters the words of God.”

Among the Greeks, this name was at first given only to the interpreter and the organ of the *vaticinations* pronounced in the temples (ἐξηγητὴς θεῶν μαντείων). This sense of the word is fully explained by a passage in the *Timæus* of Plato.<sup>2</sup> The most celebrated prophets of pagan antiquity were those of Delphos. They conducted the Pythoness to the tripod, and were charged with the interpretation of the oracles of the god, or the putting of them into writing.

And it was only afterwards, by an extension of this its first meaning, that the name of prophet was given among the Greeks to poets, who, commencing their songs with an invocation of Apollo and the Muses, were deemed to give utterance to the language of the gods, and to speak under their inspiration.

A prophet, in the Bible, is a man, then, in whose mouth God puts the words which he wishes to be heard upon earth; and it was farther by

allusion to the fulness of this meaning that God said to Moses,<sup>3</sup> that Aaron should be his prophet unto Pharaoh, according as he had told him

<sup>2</sup> Tom. IX. ed. Bipont., p. 392.

<sup>3</sup> Exod. vii. 1.

(at chap. iv. ver. 16): “He shall be to thee instead of a mouth, and thou shalt be to him instead of God.”

Mark, in Scripture, how the prophets testify of the Spirit that makes them speak, and of the wholly divine authority of their words: you will ever find in their language one uniform definition of their office, and of their inspiration. They speak; it is, no doubt, their [p.61] voice that makes itself heard; it is their person that is agitated; it is, no doubt, their soul also that often is moved; - but their words are not only theirs; they are, at the same time, the words of Jehovah.

“The mouth of the Lord hath spoken;” - “the Lord hath spoken,” they say unceasingly.<sup>4</sup> - “I will open my mouth in the midst of them,” saith the Lord to his servant Ezekiel. - “The Spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his word was in my tongue,” said the royal psalmist.<sup>5</sup> - “Hear the word of the Lord!” It is thus that the prophets announce what they are about to say.<sup>6</sup> - “Then was the word of the Lord upon me,” is what they often say. - “The word of God came unto Shemaiah;” - “the word of God came to Nathan;” - “the word of God came unto John in the wilderness;”<sup>7</sup> - “the word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord;”<sup>8</sup> - “the burden of the word of the Lord by Malachi;”<sup>9</sup> - “the word of the Lord that came unto Hosea;”<sup>10</sup> “In the second year of Darius, came the word of the Lord by Haggai, the prophet.”<sup>11</sup>

This word came down upon the men of God when it pleased, and often in the most unlooked-for manner.

It is thus that God, when he sent Moses, said to him, “I will be with thy mouth;”<sup>12</sup> and that, when he made Balaam speak, “he put a word in Balaam’s mouth.”<sup>13</sup> The apostles, too, quoting a passage from David in their prayer, express themselves in these words: “Thou, Lord, hast said by the mouth of thy servant David.”<sup>14</sup> And St Peter, addressing the multitude of the disciples: “Men and brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the HOLY [p.62] GHOST, BY THE MOUTH OF DAVID, spake before concerning Judas.”<sup>15</sup> The same apostle also, in the holy place, under Solomon’s porch, cried to the people of Jerusalem, “But those

<sup>4</sup> Micah iv. 4; Jer. ix. 12, xiii. 15, xxx. 4, 1. 1, ii. 12; Isa. viii. II; Amos iii. 1; Exod. iv. 30; Deut.

xviii. 21, 22; Josh. xxiv. 2.

5 2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2.

6 Isa. xxviii. 14; Jer. xix. 20, x. 1, xvii. 20.

7 1 Kings xii. 22; 1 Chron. xvii. 3; Luke iii. 2.

8 Jer. xi. 1, vii. 1, xviii. 1, xxi. 1, xxvi. 1, xxvii. 1, xxx. 1; and in many other places. See Ezek. i. 2; Jer. i. 1, 2, 9, 14; Ezek. iii. 4, 10, 11; Hos. i. 1, 2, &c.

9 Mal. i. 1 10 Hos. 1. 1, 2.

11 Hag. 1. 1.

12 Exod. iv. 12, 13.

13 ἐνέβαλεν (οἱ ὅ); Num. xxiii. 3.

14 Acts iv. 25.

15 Acts i. 16.

things which God before HAD SHOWED BY THE MOUTH OF ALL HIS PROPHETS, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.”<sup>16</sup>

In the view of the apostles, then, David in his psalms, and all the prophets in their writings, whatever might be the pious emotions of their souls, were only the mouth of the Holy Ghost. It was David who SPOKE; it was the prophets WHO SHOWED; but it was also God THAT SPARE BY THE MOUTH of David, his servant; it was God WHO SHOWED BY THE MOUTH of all his prophets. - (Acts i. 16, iii. 18-21, iv. 25.)

And, yet again, let the reader be so good as carefully to examine, as it stands in the Greek, that expression which recurs so often in the Gospel, and which is so conclusive, “That it might be fulfilled which was spoken BY THE PROPHET, - (and even) which was spoken OF THE LORD BY THE PROPHET, (ΔΙΑ τοῦ προφήτου, - and even - ΥΠΟ τοῦ κυρίου ΔΙΑ τοῦ προφήτου), saying.”<sup>17</sup>.....

It is in a quite analogous sense that holy scripture gives the name of *prophets* and of *false prophets* to impostors, who lied among the Gentiles, in the temples of the false gods, whether they were only common cheats, falsely pretending to visions from God, or whether they were really the mouth or an occult power, of a malevolent angel, of a spirit of Python.<sup>18</sup>

And it is, farther, in the same sense that St Paul, in quoting a verse of Epimenides, a poet, priest, and soothsayer among the Cretans, called him “*one of their prophets*,” because all the Greeks consulted him as an oracle; because Nicias was sent into Crete by the Athen- [p.63] ians to fetch him to purify their city; and because Aristotle, Strabo,<sup>19</sup> Suidas,<sup>20</sup> and Diogenes Laertius,<sup>21</sup> tell us that he undertook to foretell the future, and to discover things unknown.

From all these quotations, accordingly, it remains established, that in the language of the Scriptures the *prophecies* are “the words of God put into the mouth of man.”

Accordingly, it is by a manifest abuse also, that in common language people seem to understand no more by that word than a miraculous *prediction*. The prophecies could reveal the past as well as the future; they denounced God’s judgments; they interpreted his Word; they sang his praises; they consoled his people; they exhorted souls to holiness; they testified of Jesus Christ.

And as “*no prophecy came by the will of man*,”<sup>22</sup> a prophet, as we have already intimated, was such only at intervals, “*and as the Spirit gave him utterance*.” - (Acts ii. 4.) 16 Acts. iii. 18.

17 Matt. i. 22, ii. 5, 15, 23, xiii. 35, xxi. 4, xxvii. 9, iv. 14, viii. 17, xii. 17.

18 Acts xiii. 6; Jer. xxix. 1-8; 2 Kings xviii. 19. The LXX. often render נביא by ψευδοπροφήτης. (Jer. vi. 13, xxvi. 7, 8, 11-16, xxvii. 1, xxix. 1-8; Zech. xiii. 2).

19 Georg. lib. x.

20 In voce Επίμεν

21 Vita Epimen.

22 2 Pet. 1. 21.

A man prophesied sometimes without foreseeing it, sometimes too without knowing it, and sometimes even without desiring it.

I have said, without foreseeing it; and often at the very moment when he could least expect it. Such was the old prophet of Bethel. - (1 Kings xiii. 20.) I have said, without knowing it; such was Caiaphas. - (John xi. 51.) Finally, I have said, without desiring it; such was Balaam, when, wishing three times to curse Israel, he could not, three successive times, make his mouth utter any words but those of benediction. - (Numb. xxiii. xxiv.)

We shall give other examples to complete the demonstration of what a prophecy generally is, and thus to arrive at a fuller comprehension of the extent of the action of God in what St Peter calls *written prophecy* (προφητείαν γραφῆς). [p.64]

We read in the 11th of Numbers (25th to the 29th verses), that, as soon as the Lord made the Spirit to rest upon the seventy elders, “they prophesied;” but (it is added) “they did not continue.” The Spirit, then, came upon them at an unexpected moment; and after he had thus “spoken by them,” and his word “had been upon their tongue,” (2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2), they preserved nothing more of this miraculous gift, and were prophets only for a day.

We read in the First Book of Samuel (xii.), with what unforeseen power the Spirit of the Lord seized young king Saul at the moment when, as he sought for his father's she-asses, he met a company of prophets who came down from the holy place. "What is this that is come to the son of Kish," said they one to another; "Is Saul also among the prophets?" We read at the 19th chapter, something still more striking. Saul sends to Ramah men who were to take David; but no sooner did they meet Samuel and the company of prophets over whom he was set, than the Spirit of the Lord came upon these men of war, and "they also prophesied." Saul sends others, and "they also prophesy." Saul at last goes thither himself, and "he also prophesied all that day and all that night before Samuel." "The Spirit of God," we are told, "WAS UPON HIM."

But it is particularly by an attentive study of the 12th and 14th chapters of the First Epistle to the Corinthians, that one obtains an exact knowledge of what the action of God, and the part assigned to man severally, were in prophecy.

The apostle there gives the Church of Corinth the rules that were to be followed in the use of this miraculous gift. His counsels will be found to throw a deal of light on this important subject. One will then recognise at once the following facts and principles:-

1. The Holy Ghost at that time conferred upon the faithful, for the common advantage, a great variety of gifts (xii. 7-10); - to one that of miracles; to another [p.65] that of healing; to another, discerning of spirits; to another, divers kinds of tongues, which the man himself did not understand when he spoke them; to another, the interpretation of tongues; to another, in fine, *prophecy* - that is, uttering with his own tongue words dictated by God.

2. One and the selfsame Spirit divided severally as he would these different miraculous powers.<sup>23</sup>

3. These gifts were a just subject of Christian desire and ambition. (ζηλοῦτε, xiv. 1, 39.) But the one that was to be regarded as the most desirable of all, was that of *prophesying*; for one could speak an unknown tongue without edifying any body, and that miracle was "useful rather to the unbelievers than to believers;" whereas "he that prophesied spoke unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort." - (1 Cor. xiv. 1-3.)

4. That prophecy - that is to say, those words that fell miraculously on the lips that the Holy Ghost had chosen for such an office - that prophecy assumed very different forms. Sometimes the Spirit gave a psalm, sometimes a doctrine, sometimes a revelation; sometimes, too, it was a miraculous interpretation of that which others had miraculously expressed in strange tongues.<sup>24</sup>

5. In those prophecies there was evidently a work of God and a work of man. They were the words of the Holy Ghost; but they were also the words of the prophet. It was God that spoke, but in men, by men, for men; and there you would have found, as on other occasions, the sound of their voice - perhaps also the habitual peculiarities of their style - perhaps, moreover, allusions to their own experience, to their position at the time, to their individuality.

6. These miraculous facts continued in the primitive Church throughout the long career of the apostles. St Paul, who wrote his letter to the Corinthians twenty [p.66] years after the death of Jesus Christ, speaks of them as a common and habitual order of things, for some time existing among them, and which ought still to continue.

7. The prophets, although they were the mouth of God to make his words heard, were not, however, absolutely passive while engaged in prophesying.

“The spirits of the prophets,” says St Paul, “are subject to the prophets” (1 Cor. xiv. 22); that is to say, that the men of God, while his prophetic word was on their lips, could nevertheless check its escape by the repressive action of their own wills; nearly as a man suspends, when he wishes to do so, the almost involuntary course of his respiration. Thus, for example, if any revelation came upon one of those that were sitting, the first that spoke had then “to hold his peace, sit down, and let him speak.”

Let us now apply these principles and these facts to the prophecy of Scripture (τῇ προφητείᾳ γραφῇ), and to the passage of St Peter, for the explanation of which we have adduced them.

“No prophecy of the Scripture,” says he “is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by a will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” - (2 Pet. i. 21.)

<sup>23</sup> Verse ii. See also Eph. iv. 7; and Acts xix. 1 to 6.

<sup>24</sup> Ver. 26 to 31; and 1 Sam. x. 6; xviii. 10.

Here, then, we have the plenary and entire inspiration of the Scriptures clearly established by the apostle; here we have the SCRIPTURE assimilated to those prophecies which we have just defined. It “came not by a will of man;” it is entirely dictated by the Holy Ghost; it gives us the very words of God; it is entirely (ἑνθεος and θεόπνευστος) given by the breath of God.

Who would dare then, after such declarations, to maintain, that in the Scriptures the expressions are not inspired? They are WRITTEN PROPHECIES (πάσα προφητεία γραφῆς). One sole difficulty, accordingly, is all that can any longer be opposed to our conclusion. The testimony and the reasoning on which it rests, are so clearly valid, that one can elude them only by this objection. We agree, it will be said, that written prophecy [p.67] (προφητεία γραφῆς) has, without contradiction, been composed by that power of the Holy Ghost which was put forth in the prophets; but the rest of the book, the Epistles, the Gospels, and the Acts, the Proverbs, the Books of Kings, and so many other purely historical writings, are not entitled to be put in the same rank.

Here, then, let us pause; and, before replying, see clearly the extent of our argument.

It ought already to be fully acknowledged, that *all that part of the Scriptures* at least called PROPHECY, whatever it be, has been *completely dictated by God*; so that the words as well as the thoughts have been given by him.

But who now will permit us to establish a distinction between any one of the books of the Bible, and all the other books? Is not all given by prophecy? Certainly all has equally God’s warrant; this is what we proceed to prove.

### *Section III. All the Scriptures of the Old Testament are Prophetic.*

And, first of all, all the Scriptures are without distinction called THE WORD OF GOD. This title is sufficient of itself to demonstrate to us, that if Isaiah began his prophecies by inviting the heavens and the earth to give ear because the Lord had spoken,<sup>25</sup> the same summons ought to come forth for us from all the books of the Bible, for they are all called “The Word of God.” “Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth;

for the Lord hath spoken!”

Nowhere shall we find a single passage that permits us to detach one single part of it as less divine than all the rest. When we say that this whole book is the Word of God, do we not attest that the very phrases of which it is composed have been given by him? [p.68]

25 Isa. i. 2.

But the whole Bible is not only Called “*The Word of God*,” (ὁ λόγος τοῦ Θεοῦ); it is called, without distinction, THE ORACLES OF GOD (τὰ λόγια τοῦ Θεοῦ).<sup>26</sup> Who knows not what oracles were held to be in the ideas of men in ancient times? Was there a word that could more absolutely express a verbal and complete inspiration? And as if this term, which St Paul employs, were not sufficient, we farther hear Stephen, filled with the Holy Ghost, call them the LIVING ORACLES (λόγια ζῶντα); “Moses,” he says, “received the lively oracles, to give them unto us.” - (Acts vii. 38.)

All the Scriptures then, without exception, are a continuous word of God; they are his miraculous voice; they are his written prophecies and his lively oracles. Which of their various parts, then, would you dare to cut off? The apostles often distinguish *two parts in them*, when they call them “Moses and the Prophets.” Jesus Christ distinguished them *into three parts*<sup>27</sup> when he said to his apostles, “That all things must be fulfilled which were written in Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me.” According to this division, then, in which our Lord speaks according to the language of that time, the Old Testament would he made up of these three parts, - Moses, the Prophets, and the Psalms; as the New Testament is composed of the Gospels, the Acts, the Epistles, and the Book of the Revelation. Which, then, of these three parts of the Old Testament, or which of these four parts of the New, would you dare to withdraw from the *Scripture of the prophets* (προφητείας γραφῆς), or from the inspired Word (ἐνθέου λόγου - γραφῆς θεοπνεύστου)?

Would it be Moses? But what more holy and more divine, in the whole Old Testament, than the writings of that man of God? He was in such sort a prophet that his holy books are placed above all the rest, and are called emphatically THE LAW. He was in such sort a prophet, that another prophet, speaking of his [p.69] books alone, said, “The law of the Lord is perfect” (Ps. xix. 7); “The words of the Lord are pure words,

as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.” - (Ps. xii. 6.) He was in such sort a prophet of God, that he is compared by himself to none but the Son of God. “This is that Moses,” it is written, “who said to the children of Israel, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, LIKE UNTO ME; him shall ye hear.” - (Acts vii. 37.) He was in such sort a prophet, that he was accustomed to preface his orders with these words: “Thus saith the Lord.” He was in such sort a prophet, that God said to him, “Who hath made man’s mouth? have not I, the Lord? Now therefore go; and I will be with thy mouth, and teach thee what thou shalt say.” - (Exod. iv. 11.) Finally, he was in such sort a prophet, that it is written, “And there arose not a prophet since in Israel like unto Moses, whom the Lord knew face to face.” - (Deut. xxxiv. 10.)

What other part of the Old Testament, then, would you exclude from the prophetic Scriptures? Shall it be the second? – that which Jesus Christ calls *The Prophets*?, and which comprises all the Old Testament, exclusive of Moses and the Psalms, and sometimes exclusive of Moses alone? It is well worth noting, that Jesus Christ, and the apostles, and the whole people, habitually call by the name of *prophets* all the authors of the Old Testament. They were wont to say, in order to designate the whole Scriptures, “Moses and the prophets.” - (Luke xxiv. 25, 27, 44; Matt. v. 17, vii. 12, xi. 13, xii. 40; Luke xvi. 16, 29, 31, xx. 42; Acts i. 20, iii. 21, 22,

26 Rom iii. 2.

27 Luke xxiv. 44.

vii. 35, 37, viii. 28, xxvi. 22, 27, xxviii. 23; Rom. i. 2, iii. 21, x. 5, &c. &c.) Jesus Christ called not their books *The Prophets*:- they were prophets. Joshua, then, was a prophet; the authors of the Chronicles were prophets, quite as Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, and all the rest were, down to Malachi.

They wrote then, all of them, *the prophetic Scriptures* (προφητεῖαν γραφῆς); all, the words of which St [p.70] Peter has said, “that none of them came by a will of man;” all, those ἱερὰ γράμματα, those holy letters, which the apostle declares to be “divinely inspired.”<sup>28</sup> The Lord said of all of them as of Jeremiah, “Lo, I have put my words in thy mouth;”<sup>29</sup> and as of Ezekiel, “Son of man, go, speak unto them MY words: speak unto them, and tell them, Thus SAITH THE LORD GOD.”<sup>30</sup>

And that all the phrases, all the words, were suggested to them by God, is demonstrated by a fact stated to us more than once, and in the study of their writings frequently brought under our eye, to wit - that they were charged to transmit to the Church oracles, the meaning of which was to remain veiled to their own minds. Daniel, for example, declares more than once, that he was unable to seize the prophetic meaning of the words that proceeded from his own lips, or were traced with his hand.<sup>31</sup> The types, impressed by God on all the events of primitive history, were not to be recognised till many centuries after the death of the men who were commissioned to relate to us their leading features; and the holy Ghost informs us that the prophets, after having written out their sacred pages, set themselves to study them with the, most respectful attention, as they would have done with the other Scriptures, “searching what, or what manner of time THE SPIRIT OF CHRIST which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.”<sup>32</sup> Behold, then, these men of God bending over their own writings. There they ponder the words of God and the thoughts of God. Can this cause you any surprise, seeing that they have written for the elect of the earth, and for the principalities and powers of heaven, the doctrines and the glories of the Son of God, and seeing these are things “into which the angels desire to look ?”<sup>33</sup> [p.71]

So much for Moses and for the Prophets; but what will you say of the Psalms? Shall we consider these less given by the spirit of prophecy than all the rest? Are not the authors of the Psalms always called *prophets*?<sup>34</sup> And if they are sometimes, like Moses, distinguished from the other prophets, is it not evidently in order that a place of greater eminence may be assigned them? “David was a prophet,” says St Peter. - (Acts ii. 30.) Mark what he himself says he is: “The Spirit of the Lord SPAKE BY ME,” says he, “and HIS WORD WAS UPON MY TONGUE.” - (2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2.) “What David wrote,” and even his words in detail, “he wrote SPEAKING BY THE HOLY Ghost,” said our Lord. - (Mark xii. 36.) The apostles also,

28 2 Tim. iii. 16.

29 Jer. i. 1,2, 9.

30 Ezek. iii. 10, 11.

31 Dan. xii. 4, 8, 9, viii. 27, x. 8, 21.

32 1 Pet. i. 10,11, 12.

33 Eph. iii 10, 11.

34 Matt. xiii. 35; for Asaph (Ps. lxxvii.)

quoting him (in their prayer), take care to say, “This Scripture must needs have been fulfilled which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake.” - (Acts i. 16.) “Lord, thou art God, who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said.” - (Acts iv. 25.) What do I say? These psalms were to such a degree all dictated by the Holy Ghost, that the Jew’s, and the Lord Jesus Christ himself, call them by the name of THE LAW;<sup>35</sup> all their utterances had the force of *law*; their smallest words were from God. “Is it not written in your LAW?” said Jesus while quoting them, and in quoting them even for a SINGLE WORD (as we shall soon have occasion to show).

The whole Old Testament then is, in a scriptural sense of the expression, a WRITTEN PROPHECY (προφητεία γραφῆς). It is plenarily inspired therefore by God, seeing that, according to the testimony of Zachariah, “it is God who spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began;<sup>36</sup> and [p.72] because, according to that of Peter, “they spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.”<sup>37</sup>

It is true that thus far our reasonings, and the testimonies on which they are founded, directly relate to the books of the Old Testament only; and it might possibly be objected to us that as yet we have proved nothing for the New.

We shall begin, before we reply, with asking, If it were likely that the Lord could have designed giving successive revelations to his people, and that, nevertheless, the latest and the most important of these should be inferior to the first? We would ask, If it be rational to imagine that the first Testament, which contained only “the shadows of things that were to come,” could have been dictated by God in all its contents; while the second Testament, which sets before us the grand object to which all those shadows relate, and which describes to us the works, the character, the person, and the sayings even of the Son of God, was to be less inspired than the first? We would ask, If one can believe that the Epistles and the Gospels, which were destined to repeal many of the ordinances of Moses and the Prophets, could be less divine than Moses and the Prophets; and that the Old Testament could be throughout an utterance of thought on the part of God, while it was to be replaced, or at least modified and consummated, by a book emanating partly from

man and partly from God?

But there is no need even of our having recourse to these powerful inductions in order to establish the prophetic inspiration of the Gospel; nay, its superiority to Moses and the prophets. [p.73]

35 John x. 34. St Paul (Rom. iii. 19) calls the whole Old Testament equally by the name of LAW, and more especially Isaiah, the Proverbs, and the Psalms (which he quotes). This remark has not escaped Chrysostom (Homil. viii.): ἐνταῦθα τοὺς ψαλμοὺς Νόμον ἐκάλεσεν and Theophalact adds, καὶ τὰ τοῦ Ἡσαίου.

36 Luke i. 70.

37 2 Pet. I. 21. See also Matt. I. 22, xxii. 43; Mark xii.36.

#### *Section IV. All the Scriptures of the New Testament are Prophetic.*

The whole tenor of Scripture places the writers of the New Testament in the same rank with the prophets of the Old; and even when it establishes any difference between them, it is always in putting the last in date above the first, in so far as one of God's sayings is superior (not doubtless in divinity, not in dignity, but in authority) to the saying that preceded it.

Let the reader be so good as attend to the following passage of the apostle St Peter. It is very important, inasmuch as it lets us see that, in the lifetime of the apostles, the book of the New Testament was already almost entirely formed, in order to make one whole together with that of the Old. It was twenty or thirty years after the day of Pentecost that St Peter felt gratified in referring to ALL THE EPISTLES OF PAUL, his beloved brother, and spoke of them as sacred writings which, even so early as his time, formed part of the Holy Letters (ιερόν γραμμάτων), and behoved to be classed with THE OTHER SCRIPTURES (ὥς καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς, γραφὰς). He assigns them the same rank, and declares that “unlearned men can wrest them but to their own destruction.” Mark this important passage; “Our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; as also IN ALL HIS EPISTLES, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the OTHER SCRIPTURES, unto their own destruction.”<sup>38</sup>

The apostle, at the second verse of the same chapter, had already placed himself, along with the other apostles, on the same rank, and assumed the same authority, as the sacred writers of the Old Testament, when he said: [p.74] “That ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken BEFORE by the holy PROPHETS, and of the commandment OF US the APOSTLES of the Lord and Saviour.”

The writings of the apostles, then, were that which those of the Old Testament were; and these being a WRITTEN PROPHECY - that is to say, something spoken altogether by God - the latter are no less so.

But we have said the Scripture goes much farther in the rank it assigns to the writers of the New Covenant. It teaches us to consider them as even superior to those of the Old, whether as respects the importance of their *mission*, or the glory of the *promises* made to them, or the greatness of the *gifts* conferred on them - or, in fine, the eminence of the *rank* assigned to them.

1. First, let us distinctly perceive what their mission was, compared with that of the ancient prophets; and it will at once be seen, from passages bearing on this point, that their inspiration could not be inferior to that of their predecessors.

When Jesus sent the apostles whom he had chosen (it is written), he said to them: “Go ye therefore, and teach all nations; teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I AM WITH YOU alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.”<sup>39</sup> “But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be

38 2 Peter iii. 15, 16.

39 Matt. xxviii. 19, 20.

witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth?”<sup>40</sup> “Peace be unto you: as my Father HATH SENT ME, even SO SEND I YOU.”<sup>41</sup>

Such was their mission. They were the immediate *envoys* (ἀποστέλλοι) of the Son of God; they went to all nations; they had the assurance that their Master would be present with the testimony they were to bear to him in the holy Scriptures. Did they require, then, less inspiration for their going to the ends of the earth, and [p.75] to make disciples of all nations, than the prophets required “forgoing to Israel and teaching that one people, the Jews?” Had they not to promulgate all the doctrines, all the ordinances, all the mysteries of the kingdom of

God? Had they not to bear “the keys of the kingdom of heaven” in such sort, that whatsoever they should bind or loose on earth should be bound or loosed in heaven?”<sup>42</sup> Had not Jesus Christ expressly conferred the Holy Ghost upon them for this end, that sins might be remitted or retained with regard to those to whom they should remit or retain them? Had he not breathed upon them, saying, “Receive the Holy Ghost?” Had he not to reveal to them the wondrous character of the Word made flesh, and of the Creator so abased as to take upon him the form of a creature, and even to die upon the cross? Had they not to report his inimitable words? Had they not to perform on earth the miraculous intransmissible functions of his representatives and of “his ambassadors, as if it had been Christ that spoke by them?”<sup>43</sup> Were they not called to such a glory, “that, in the great final regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, they also should sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel?”<sup>44</sup> If, then, the prophetic Spirit was necessary for the former men of God, in order to show the Messiah under the shadows, was it not much more necessary for them, in order to their bringing him out into the light, and to their evidently setting him forth as crucified amongst us,<sup>45</sup> “in such a manner that he that despiseth them despiseth him, and he that heareth them heareth him?”<sup>46</sup> Let one judge by all these traits what the inspiration of the New Testament behoved to have been, compared with that of the Old; and let one say whether, while the latter was wholly and entirely prophetic, that of the New could be any thing less.

2. But this is not all; listen further to the *promises* [p.76] that were made to them for the performance of such a work. No human language can express with greater force the most absolute inspiration. These promises were for the most part addressed to them on three great occasions: first, when sent out for the first time to preach the kingdom of God;<sup>47</sup> next, when Jesus himself delivered public discourses on the gospel before

40 Acts 1. 8.

41 John xx. 21.

42 Matt. xviii. 18, xvi. 19.

43 2 Cor. v. 20.

44 Matt. xix. 28.

45 Gal. iii. i.

46 Luke x. 16; Matt. x. 40.

47 Matt. x. 19, 20.

an immense multitude, gathered by tens of thousands around him;<sup>48</sup> third, when he uttered his last denunciation against Jerusalem and the Jewish nation.<sup>49</sup>

“But when they deliver you up, take no thought HOW or WHAT ye shall speak (πὸς ἢ τί), for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not YE that speak, but the SPIRIT OF YOUR FATHER WHICH SPEAKETH IN YOU.”

“And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates and powers, TAKE YE NO THOUGHT HOW or WHAT thing ye shall answer, or WHAT ye shall say; for the Holy Ghost shall teach you IN THE SAME HOUR what ye ought to say.” “Take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, NEITHER DO YE PREMEDITATE, but WHATSOEVER shall be GIVEN you in that hour, that speak ye; for it is NOT YE THAT SPEAK, but the Holy Ghost.”

On these different occasions, the Lord assured his disciples that *the fullest inspiration* would regulate their language in the most difficult and important moments of their ministry. When they should have to speak to princes, they were to feel *no disquietude*; they were not even to *premeditate*, they were not even to *take thought* about it, because there would then be *immediately given to them* by God, not only *the things* they were to say, but the *words* also in which those things were to be expressed; not only τί, but πὸς λαλήσονται. - (Matt. x. 19, 20.) They behoved to cast themselves entirely on him; it would be *given* them *entirely*; it would be given them by *Jesus*; it would be given them *in that* [p.77] *same hour*; it would be given them in such a manner, and in such plenitude, that they should be able then to say that it was *no more they*, but the Holy Ghost, the SPIRIT OF THEIR FATHER, which spoke IN THEM;<sup>50</sup> and that then also it was not only an irresistible wisdom that was given them, it was a *mouth*.<sup>51</sup> “Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer; for I will give you a mouth and wisdom which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay or resist.”

Then (as with the ancient prophets, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel) it shall be the Holy Ghost that will speak by them, as God spoke by his holy prophets since the world began.<sup>52</sup> In one sense, indeed, it was *they* that were to speak; but it shall be the Holy Ghost who will teach them (Luke xii. 12) in that same hour what they are to say; so that, in another

sense, “it was to be the *Holy Ghost* himself that was to speak by their lips.”

We ask if it were possible, in any language, to express more absolutely the most entire inspiration, and to declare with more precision, that the very words were then vouched by God and given to the apostles?

No doubt, in these promises there is no direct reference to the support which the apostles were to receive as writers; and that they bear rather on what they were to expect, when they had to

48 Luke xii. 12.

49 Mark xiii. 11; Luke xxi. 14, 15.

50 Matt. x. 20; Mark xiii. 14.

51 Luke xxi. 14, 15.

52 Acts iii. 21.

appear before priests, before governors, and before kings. But is it not evident enough, that if the most entire inspiration were assured to them<sup>53</sup> for passing exigencies, to shut the mouths of some wicked men, to conjure the perils of a day, and to subserve interests of the narrowest range; if it were promised them, notwithstanding that the very words of their answers should then be given to them by means of a calm, mighty, but inexplicable operation of the Holy Ghost, - is it not evident enough that the same assistance could not be refused to those same men, when, like the ancient prophets, they had to continue the book of [p.78] God’s oracles; and so to hand down to all succeeding ages the laws of the kingdom of heaven, and describe the glories of Jesus Christ and the scenes of eternity? Can any one suppose that the mea who, before Ananias, or Festus, or Nero, were in such sort “the mouth of the Holy Spirit,” that then it was no longer they that spoke, but that Spirit, should, when writing the everlasting Gospel, have returned to the condition of ordinary beings merely enlightened, denuded of their previous inspiration, no longer speaking by the Holy Ghost, and thenceforward employing only words dictated by human wisdom, (θελήματι ἀνθρώπου καὶ ἐν διδακτοῖς ἀνθρώπινης σοφίας λόγοις)? This is quite inadmissible.

3. See them, further, commencing their apostolic ministry on the day of Pentecost: see *what gifts* they received.

Tongues of fire descend on their heads; they are filled with the Holy Ghost; they leave their upper chamber, and a vast multitude hears them proclaim, in fifteen different languages, the wonderful works of

God; they speak AS THE SPIRIT GIVES THEM UTTERANCE;<sup>54</sup> they speak (it is said) THE WORD OF GOD (ἐλάλουν τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ).<sup>55</sup> Assuredly, the words of those foreign languages must have been then supplied to them as well as the things, the expression as well as the thoughts, the πὼς as well as the τί - (Matt. x. 19.; Luke xii. 11.) Now then will it be believed, that the Spirit could have taken care to dictate all that they behoved to say, for preachings at the corners of the streets, for words which passed away with the sound of their voices, and which, after all, reached only some thousands of hearers; while those same men, when they came afterwards to write for all earth's nations, and for all ages of the Church, "the lively oracles of God," were to be deprived of their first assistance? Will it be believed, that after having been more than the ancient prophets as respects preaching in public, they were to be less than those [p.79] prophets, and were to become ordinary men, when they took the pen to finish the Book of the Prophets, to write their Gospels, their Epistles, and the Book of the Revelation? The unreasonableness and inadmissibility of such a supposition are felt at once.

4. But here we have to say something still more simple and more peremptory. We would speak of the *rank* that is assigned them; and indeed, after what we said of the prophets of the Old Testament, we might even have limited ourselves to this simple fact, that the apostles were all of them PROPHETS, and MORE THAN PROPHETS.

<sup>53</sup> Luke xii. 12.

<sup>54</sup> Acts II. 2.

<sup>55</sup> Acts iv. 31

Their writings, therefore, are WRITTEN PROPHECIES (προφητεία γραφῆς), as much, and even more, than those of the Old Testament; and hence we are led to conclude once more, that all Scripture in the New Testament, as well as in the Old, is inspired of God, even to its smallest particles.

I have said that the apostles were all prophets. They often declare this; but, not to multiply quotations unnecessarily, we content ourselves here with appealing to the two following passages of the apostle St Paul.

The first is addressed to the Ephesians (iii. 4, 5): "Whereby," he tells them, "when ye read WHAT I WROTE before in a few words, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ, which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is NOW revealed

unto his holy APOSTLES AND PROPHETS by the Spirit.”

One clearly sees, then, here the *apostle* and *prophet* Paul, the apostles and prophets Matthew, John, Jude, Peter, James, received by the Spirit the revelation of the mystery of Christ; and wrote about it as PROPHETS.

Further, it is of the same mystery, and of the writings of the same prophets, that that same apostle speaks in the second of the passages we have indicated, that is, in the last chapter of his Epistle to the Romans.<sup>56</sup> [p.80]

“Now to him that is of power to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, but now is made manifest, and by the SCRIPTURES OF THE PROPHETS (διὰ τε γραφῶν προφητικῶν), according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: to God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen!”

Here, then, we have the authors of the New Testament again called PROPHETS; we have their writings called PROPHETICAL WRITINGS (γραφὰι προφητικάι, the equivalent of the προφητεία γραφῆς; of St Peter). And Since we have already Seen that “no prophecy ever came by the will of him that uttered it, but that it was as moved and impelled by the Holy Ghost that holy men of God spake;” the prophets of the New Testament spoke therefore like those of the Old, and according to the commandment of the everlasting God. They were all of them prophets.<sup>57</sup>

But we may advance a step farther; for, as we have said, they were MORE THAN PROPHETS. Here again we have a remark of the learned Michaelis.<sup>58</sup> Loose as are his principles on the inspiration of a part of the New Testament, this has not escaped his notice. It is clear, according to him, looking to the context, that, in the judgment pronounced by Jesus Christ on John Baptist (Matt. xi. 9, 11), the terms *great* and *little* of the 11th verse, apply only to the title of *prophet* which precedes; them at the 9th verse; so that Jesus Christ there he dares, that if John Baptist is the *greatest of the prophets* - if he is even *more than a prophet* -

<sup>56</sup> Rom. xvi. 25, 27

<sup>57</sup> See further Luke xi. 49; Eph. ii. 20, iii. 5, iv. 11; Gal. i. 12; I Pet. i. 12; 1 Cor. xii. 28; 1 Thess. ii. 15.

<sup>58</sup> Introd., t. 1. p. 118, French edition.

*still the least of the prophets of the New Testament is greater than John Baptist;* that is to say, greater than the greatest of the Old Testament prophets.<sup>59</sup>

Besides, this superiority of the *apostles and prophets* [p.81] of the New Testament, is more than once attested to us in the apostolical writings.

Every where, when mention is made of the different offices established in the Churches, the apostles are placed above the prophets.

Take, for example, a very remarkable passage of the 1st Epistle to the Corinthians. The apostle's object is to make known to us the gradations of excellence and dignity among the several miraculous charges constituted by God in the primitive Church, and he expresses himself as follows:- "And God hath set some in the Church, *first* APOSTLES, *secondarily* PROPHETS, *thirdly* TEACHERS, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues."<sup>60</sup>

At the fourth chapter of his Epistle to the Ephesians, at verse ii, he again puts the apostles ABOVE the prophets.

At chapter ii. ver. 20, he calls the apostles, APOSTLES and PROPHETS. And at chapter xiv. of the 1st Epistle to the Corinthians, he places himself ABOVE the prophets whom God had raised up in that Church. His wish is, that every one of them, if he have really received the Holy Ghost, should employ the gifts he has received in acknowledging that the things that he wrote unto them were the commandments of the Lord; and so fully convinced is he that what he writes is dictated by inspiration of God, that, after having dictated ORDERS to the Churches, and concluded them with these words, which nothing short of the highest inspiration could sanction, *It is thus I ORDAIN in all the Churches*, he goes farther, he proceeds to rank himself ABOVE THE PROPHETS; or rather, being himself a prophet, he calls upon the spirit of prophecy in them to acknowledge the words of Paul as the words of the Lord; and he ends with these remarkable expressions:- "What? came the word of God out from you? iv.. If any man think himself to be a PROPHET, or SPIRITUAL, let him acknowledge that the things that I WRITE UNTO YOU are the COMMANDMENTS OF THE LORD."<sup>61</sup>

The writings of the Apostles, then, are (like those of the ancient

prophets) the commandments of the everlasting God; they are “written prophecies” (προφητεία γραφῆς) as much as the Psalms, and Moses, and the prophets (Luke xxiv. 44); and all their authors then could say with St Paul, CHRIST SPEAKS IN ME (2 Cor. xiii. 3; 1 Thess. ii. 13); what I say is the word of God, and the things I speak are taught me by the Holy Ghost (1 Cor. ii. 13); quite as David before them had said, “The spirit of the Lord spake by me, and his word was in my tongue.”<sup>62</sup>

59 Ib., and Luke vii. 28-30.

60 1 Cor. xii. 28.

61 Πνευματικός, 1 Cor. xiv. 37; See too xv. 45, and Jude 19.

62 2 Sam. xxiii. 2.

Mark, besides, their own words, when they speak of what they are. Would it be possible to declare more clearly than they have done, that words as well as subject have been given them by God. “As for us,” they say, “*we have the mind of Christ.*” - (1 Cor. ii. 16.) “For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received THE WORD OF God which ye heard of us, ye received not the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the WORD OF GOD.” - (1 Thes. ii. 13.) “He therefore that despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.” - (1 Thes. iv. 8.)

Such then, in fine, is the word of the New Testament. It is like that of the Old, a word uttered by prophets, and by prophets greater even than those that preceded them; in such sort, for example, as has been very well remarked by Michaelis,<sup>63</sup> that an epistle commencing with these words, “Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ,”<sup>64</sup> thereby gives us a higher attestation of his divine authority and his divine inspiration, than could have been given even by the writings of the most illustrious prophets of the Old Testament when they began with these words, “Thus saith the Lord”<sup>65</sup> - “The [p.83] vision of Isaiah” - “The word that Isaiah saw”<sup>66</sup> - “the words of Jeremiah iv.. to whom the word of the Lord came”<sup>67</sup> - “Hear the word of the Lord” - or such like analogous expressions. And if there be in the New Testament some books where such inscriptions are not to be found, their inspiration is no more compromised thereby than this or that book of the Old Testament (the second or the ninety-fifth psalm, for example);<sup>68</sup> which, although they have not the names of the prophets that composed them, are not the less quoted as divine by Jesus Christ and his apostles.

The objection has sometimes been started that Luke and Mark were

not apostles, properly so called; and that consequently they did not receive the same inspiration as the other sacred writers of the New Testament. True, they were not apostles; but they were certainly prophets, and they were even greater than the greatest of those of the Old Testament. - (Luke vii. 26, 28.) Without insisting here on the ancient traditions,<sup>69</sup> which say that both were of the number of the seventy disciples whom Jesus sent at first to preach in Judea, or at least of those one hundred and twenty on whom the tongues of the Holy Ghost descended on the day of Pentecost; are such objectors not aware that the apostles had received the power of conferring, by the imposition of hands, miraculous gifts on all who believed, and that they exercised this power in all the countries and all the cities whither they directed their steps? And since St Luke and St Mark were, amid so many other prophets, the fellow-workers chosen by St Paul and St Peter, is it not clear enough that these two apostolic men must have bestowed upon such associates the gifts which they dispensed to so many besides who had believed? Do we

63 Introd. tome 1, p. 118, 119, &c., French edition.

64 Rom. 1, i; GaL 1.1; Cor. i.1, &c.; 1 Pet. 1.1; 2 Pet. i.1.

65 Isa. lvi. 1; xlii. 1, and *passim*.

66 Isa. i. 1, ii. 2, and elsewhere.

67 Jer. i. 2.

68 Acts iv. 25, xiii. 33; Heb. I. 5, iii. 7, 17, iv. 3, 7, v. 5.

69 Epiph., Heeres., 51 and others - Orig., De recta in Deum fide. Dorotheus in Synopsi. - Procop. Diacon., apud Bolland., 25th April.

not see Peter and John first go down to Samaria to confer these gifts on the believers of that city; this [p.84] followed by Peter coming to Caesarea, there to shed them on all the Gentiles who had heard the word in the house of the centurion Cornelius?<sup>70</sup> Do we not see St Paul bestow them abundantly on the believers of Corinth, on those of Ephesus, on those of Rome?<sup>71</sup> Do we not see him, before employing his dear son Timothy as his fellow-labourer, causing spiritual powers to descend upon him?<sup>72</sup> And is it not evident that St Peter must have done as much for his dear son Mark,<sup>73</sup> as St Paul did for his companion Luke?<sup>74</sup> Silas, whom St Paul had taken to accompany him (as he took Luke and John, whose surname was Mark), Silas was a prophet at Jerusalem.<sup>75</sup> Prophets abounded in all the primitive churches. Many were seen to come down from Jerusalem to Antioch;<sup>76</sup> a great many were to be found in Corinth;<sup>77</sup> Judas and Silas were prophets in Jerusalem. Agabus was such in Judea;

farther, four daughters, still in their youth, of Philip the evangelist, were prophetesses in Cesarea;<sup>78</sup> and in the Church of Antioch, there were to be seen many believers who were prophets and doctors;<sup>79</sup> among others Barnabas (St Paul's first companion), Simeon, Manaen, Saul of Tarsus himself; and, finally, that Lucius of Cyrene, who is thought to be the Lucius whom Paul (in his Epistle to the Romans) calls his kinsman,<sup>80</sup> and whom (in his Epistle to the Colossians) he calls Luke *the physician*;<sup>81</sup> in a word, the St Luke whom the ancient fathers call indifferently Lucas, Lucius, and Lucanus.

From these facts, then, it becomes sufficiently evident that St Luke and St Mark ranked at least among the prophets whom the Lord had raised up in such numbers in all the Churches of the Jews and the Gentiles, [p.85] and that from among all the rest they were chosen by the Holy Ghost to be conjoined with the apostles in writing the sacred books of the New Testament.

But, moreover (and let this be specially noticed), the prophetic authority of St Mark and St Luke is far from resting solely on these inductions. It rests on the testimony even of the apostles of Jesus Christ. It ought not to be forgotten, that it was under the long protracted government of those men of God, that the divine canon of the Scriptures of the New Testament was collected and transmitted to all the Churches. By a remarkable dispensation of God's providence, the lives of the greater number of the apostles were prolonged to a great many years. St Peter and St Paul lived to edify the Church of God for above thirty-four years

70 Acts viii. 15, 17.

71 Acts xix. 6, 7; 1 Cor. xii. 28, xiv; Horn. 1. 11, xv. 19, 29.

72 1 Tim. iv. 14; 2 Tim. i. 6.

73 1 Pet. v. 13.

74 Acts xiii. 1, xvi. 10, xxvii. 1; Rom. xvi. 21; Col. iv. 11; 2 Tim. iv. 11; Philem. 24; 2 Cor. viii. 18.

75 Acts xv. 32.

76 Acts xi. 38.

77 1 Cor. xii. 19, 20 xiv. 31, 39.

78 Acts xi. 28, xxi. 9, 10.

79 Acts xiii. 1 2.

80 Rom. xvi. 21 81 Col. iv. 14.

after the resurrection of their Master; nay, St John continued his ministry, in the province of Asia, in the centre of the Roman empire, for more than thirty years longer, after their death. The book of the Acts,

which was written by St Luke subsequently to his Gospel,<sup>82</sup> had been already diffused through the Church a long while (I mean to say, for ten years at least) before the martyrdom of St Paul. But St Paul, even long before going to Rome, had already diffused the gospel abundantly from Jerusalem as far as Illyricum.<sup>83</sup> The apostles maintained a constant correspondence with the Christians of all countries; they were daily called to meet the cares they had to sustain with respect to all the Churches.<sup>84</sup> St Peter, in his second letter, addressed to the catholicity of God's Churches, spoke to them even then of ALL THE EPISTLES of St Paul as incorporated with the Old Testament. And for more than half a century, all the Christian Churches were formed and conducted under the superintendence of these men of God. It was, accordingly, with the assent, and under the prophetic government, of these apostles, called as they were to bind and to [p.86] loose, and to become, next to Christ, the twelve foundations of the universal Church, that the *canon of the Scriptures* was formed, and that the new people of God received its lively oracles, to transmit them to us.<sup>85</sup> And it is thus that the Gospel of Luke, that of Mark, and the book of Acts, have been received by common consent, on the same authoritative grounds, and with the same submission as the apostolical books of Matthew, of Paul, of Peter, and John. These books, then, have the same authority for us as all the rest; and we are called upon to receive them equally, "not as the word of men, but as it is in truth the word of God, which worketh effectually in all that believe"<sup>86</sup>

We venture to believe that these reflections will suffice for enabling the reader to comprehend how little ground there is for the distinction which Michaelis,<sup>87</sup> and some other German doctors, have made bold to establish with respect to inspiration, between the two evangelists and the other writers of the New Testament. It even appears to us, that it was in order to obviate any such supposition that Luke took care to place at the head of his gospel the four verses that serve as a preface to it. You see, in fact, that his object there is to contrast the certainty and divinity of his own account with the uncertainty and the human character of those narrations, which *many* (πολλοί) *had taken in hand to set forth* (ἐπεχείρησαν ἀνατάξασθαι) on the facts connected with the gospel - facts, he adds, *most surely believed among us*, that is to say, among the apostles and prophets of the New Testament (τῶν πεπληροφορημένων

ἐν μιν πραγμάτων, the word in the original signifying the highest degree of certainty, as may be seen, Rom. iv. 21; xiv. 5; 2 Tim. iv. 5, 17.) And therefore, adds St Luke, *it seemed good to ME also, having had perfect understanding of all things*<sup>88</sup> FROM ABOVE, *to write of them unto thee in order.* [p.87]

82 Acts i. 1.

83 Rom. xv. 19.

84 2 Cor. xi. 28.

85 Acts vii. 83; Rom. iii. 2.

86 1 Thes. ii. 13.

87 Introd., vol. i. pp. 112-129, English ed.

88 Παρακολουθηκῶς. - Thus Demosthenes de Corona, i. 55. Παρακολουθηκῶς τοῖς πράγμασιν ἀπ' ἀρχῆς. Theophrast., Char. Proem, 4: Σὸν δι παρακολουθῆσαι καὶ εἰδῆσαι, εἰ ὀρθῶς λέγω - Josephus, in the first lines of his book against Apion, opposes this same word παρακολουθηκῶς (*diligenter assecutus*) to τῷ πυνθανομένῳ (*sciscitanti ab aliis*).

St Luke had obtained this knowledge FROM ABOVE; that is to say, by the wisdom which comes from above, “and which had been given him.” It is very true that the meaning ordinarily attached to this last expression, in this passage, is from *the very first*, as if instead of the word ἄνωθεν (*from above*), there were here the same words ἀπ' ἀρχῆς (*from the commencement*), which we find in verse second. But it appears to us that the opinion of Erasmus, of Gomar, of Henry, of Lightfoot, and other commentators, ought to be preferred as more natural, and that we must take the word ἄνωθεν here in the sense in which St John and St James have used it, when they say: “Every perfect gift cometh from above (James i. 17) – “Thou couldst have no power against me, except it were given thee *from above*” (John xix. 11) – “Except a man be born *from above*, he cannot see the kingdom of God” (John iii. 3) – “The wisdom that cometh *from above* is first pure.” - (James iii. 15, 17.) The prophet Luke, then, “had obtained from above a perfect understanding of all things that Jesus began both to do and teach, until the day in which he was taken up.”

Meanwhile, whatever translation one may prefer giving to these words, it is by other arguments that we have shown how Luke and Mark were prophets, and how their writings, transmitted to the Church by the authority of the apostles, are incorporated with those of the apostles, as well as with all the other books of the everlasting Word of God.

Such, then, is the extent to which our argument has conducted us, and this is, we have had to acknowledge, on the very authority of holy

Scripture. It is, first of all, that the inspiration of the words of the prophets was entire; that the Holy Ghost spake by them, and that the Word of the Lord was upon their tongue. It is, [p.88] next, that whatever was written in the Bible, having been so written by prophecy, all the sacred books are *holy letters* (ἱερὰ γράμματα), *written prophecies* (προφητεῖαι γραφῆς): and *Scriptures given by divine inspiration* (γραφὰὶ θεόπνευστοι.) Every thing there is from God.

Nevertheless, the reader will be pleased to remember (we once more repeat it here, although we have had occasion more than once to say it already), that it does not necessarily follow that the prophets of the Old and New Testament were thrown into a state of excitation and enthusiasm, which took them out of themselves; we must, on the contrary, beware of entertaining any such idea. The ancient Church attached so much importance even to this principle, that under the reign of the emperor Commodus, according to what Eusebius says, Miltiades (the illustrious author of a Christian Apology) “composed a book for the express purpose of establishing,” against Montanus and the false prophets of Phrygia, “*that true prophets ought to be masters of themselves, and ought not to speak in ecstasy.*”<sup>89</sup> The action of God was exerted upon them without their passing entirely out of their ordinary condition.

“The spirits of the prophets,” says St Paul, “are subject to the prophets.”<sup>90</sup> Their intellectual faculties were at the time directed, not suspended. They knew, they felt, they willed, they

<sup>89</sup> Hist. Eccles., lib. v. c. 17. Ὁ ἐν ὑποδείκνυσι περὶ τοῦ μηδένα Προφήτην ἐν ἐκστάσει λαλεῖν. - See also Niceph., lib. iv. c. 24. See the same principles in Tertullian (against Marcion, lib. iv. c. 22); in Epiphanius (Adv. hær., lib. ii. hær., 48, c. 3); in Jerome (Præmium in Nahum.); in Basil the Great (Commentar. in Esaiam, proem, 5).

<sup>90</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 32.

recollected, they understood, they approved. They could say, “It seemed good to me to write;” and, as apostles, “It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us to write.”<sup>91</sup> And the words as well as the thoughts were given them; for, after all, words are themselves but second thoughts relating to language, and having recourse to it for the selection of expressions. In both cases, to explain the gift is equally easy and equally difficult.

Meanwhile, as respects inspiration, there is something in holy Scripture that strikes us if possible still more than all those declarations

of the apostles and of Jesus Christ himself, and that is the examples they present to us.

*Section V. The Examples of the Apostles and of their Master  
Attest that, in their Views ALL the Words of the Holy Books  
are Given by God.*

First of all, consider what use is made by the apostles themselves of the Word of God, and the terms in which they quote it. See how, in doing this, they not only think it enough to say, “God hath said;”<sup>92</sup> “the Holy Ghost saith;”<sup>93</sup> “God saith in such a prophet;”<sup>94</sup> but observe, farther, when they quote it, with what respect they speak of what are for them its smallest particles; how attentively they weigh every word; with what a religious assurance they often insist on a single word, in order to deduce from it the most serious consequences, and the most fundamental doctrines.

For ourselves, we confess nothing more strongly impresses us than this view of the subject; nothing has begot in us so deep and firm a confidence in the entire inspiration of the Scriptures.

The preceding reasonings and testimonies seem of themselves sufficient to carry conviction to every attentive mind; but if we felt conscious of any need on our own part of having our belief of this truth fortified, we feel that we should not go so far in search of reasons. It would be enough for us to inquire what holy Scrip- [p .90] ture was in the view of God’s apostles, and how far, according to their apprehension, its language was inspired. What, for example, were St Paul’s sentiments on the subject? For we make no pretension to be more enlightened divines than the twelve apostles. Cleaving to the dogmatical theology of St Peter and the exegetical of St Paul, among all the systems ever

91 Acts i. 3, xv. 28.

92 Eph. iv.8; Heb. i. 8.

93 Acts xiii. 2, xxviii. 23; Heb. iii. 1, x. 25, and elsewhere.

94 Rom. ix. 25.

broached on the inspiration of the Scriptures, theirs is what we have decidedly resolved to prefer.

Hear, then, the apostle Paul when he quotes them, and proceeds to

comment upon them. On such occasions he discusses their minutest expressions; and often, when about to deduce the most important consequences from them, he employs arguments which, were it we that should employ them in discussions with the doctors of the Socinian school, would be treated as childish or absurd. For such a respect for the words of the text, we should be sent back to the sixteenth century with its gross orthodoxy and its superannuated theology. Mark with what reverence the apostle dwells upon their most minute expressions; with what confidence he expects the submission of the Church, while he notes the use of such a word rather than of such another; with what studiousness and affection he as it were presses every one of them in his hands till the last drop of meaning has been obtained from it.

Among so many examples which we might adduce, let us confine ourselves, for brevity's sake, to the Epistle to the Hebrews.

See how, at verse 8th of chapter ii., after quoting these words, "Thou hast put all things under his feet," the sacred author argues from the authority of the word *all*.

See how, at the 11th verse, in quoting the 22d Psalm, he argues from the expression *my brethren*, that the Son of God behoved to put on the nature of man.

See how, at the 27th verse of chapter xii., in quoting the prophet Haggai, he argues from the word *once more*, "Yet once more."

See at the 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, and 9th verses, how [p.91] largely he argues from these words *my son*, of the 3d chapter of the Proverbs, "My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord."

See how, at the 10th chapter, in quoting the 40th Psalm, he argues from the words *Lo I come*, set against the words. "Thou wouldest not."

See how, at chapter viii., from the 8th to the 14th verses, in quoting Jeremiah xxxi. 31, he argues from the word *new*.

See, at chapter iii. 7-19, and iv. 2-11, with urgency in quoting the 95th Psalm, he argues from the word "*to-day*," from the words "*I have sworn*," and, above all, from the words "*my rest*," illustrated by that other expression of Genesis, "And God *rested* on the seventh day."

See how, at verses 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6, he argues from these words *servant* and *my house*, taken from the book of Numbers, "My servant Moses, who is faithful in all my house."

See, especially at chapter vii., the use he makes successively of all

the words of the 110th Psalm; mark how he takes up each of its expressions, one after another, in order to deduce from them the very highest doctrines: “The Lord hath sworn;” “he hath sworn by himself;” “Thou art a priest;” “Thou art a priest for ever;” “Thou art a priest after the order of Melchisedec;” “of Melchisedec king of Sedec,” and “of Melchisedec king of Salem.” The exposition of the doctrines contained in each of these words will be found to occupy three chapters, the 5th, the 6th, and the 7th.

But here I pause. Can we fail to conclude from such examples, that, in the view of the apostle Paul, the Scriptures were inspired by God, even to their most minute expressions? Let each of us, then, place himself in the school of the man to whom and been given, by the Spirit of God, the knowledge of the mystery of Christ, as to a holy apostle and prophet.<sup>95</sup> One must [p.92] necessarily either account him an enthusiast, and reject in his person the testimonies of the Holy Bible, or receive with him the precious and fruitful doctrine of the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures.

O ye who read these lines, to what school will ye attach yourselves? to that of the apostles, or to that of the doctors of this age? “If any man take away from the words of this book” (this I testify, says St John), “God shall take away his part out of the Book of Life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this Book.”<sup>96</sup>

But, farther, let us turn from the apostles, prophets as they are - men sent by God for the establishment of his kingdom, the pillars of the Church, the mouths of the Holy Ghost, ambassadors of Jesus Christ; let us, for an instant, turn from them as men who had not yet quite thrown off their Jewish traditions and clownish prejudices, and let us go to the Master. Let us inquire of him what the Scriptures were in his view of them. Here is the grand question. The testimonies to which we have appealed are peremptory, no doubt; and the doctrine of a plenary and entire inspiration is taught as clearly in Scripture as that of the resurrection of the dead can be; that ought of itself to be enough for us; but we repeat, nevertheless, here is an argument which for us renders all else superfluous. How did Jesus Christ appeal to the Holy Bible? What were his views of the letter of the Scriptures? What use did he make of it, he who is its object and inspirer, beginning and end, first and last? he whose Holy Spirit, says St Peter, animated all the prophets of the Old

Testament (2 Peter i. 21), who was in heaven in the bosom of the Father at the same time that he was seen here below, dwelling among us and preaching the gospel to the poor? Among the most ardent defenders of their verbal inspiration, we know not one that ever expressed himself with more respect for the altogether divine authority and everlasting endurance of their most minute expressions than was done by the man Jesus. And we scruple not to say, that were any modern writer to quote the Bible, as Jesus Christ did, with the view of deducing from it any doctrine, he would forthwith have to be ranked among the most zealous partisans of the doctrine we defend. I am asked, What is your view of the Holy Letters? I answer, What thought my Master of them? how did he appeal to them? what use did he make of them? what were their smallest details in his eyes?

Ah! speak to them thyself, Eternal Wisdom, Un-created Word, Judge of judges! and as we proceed to repeat to them here the declarations of thy mouth, show them the majesty in which

95 Eph. iii. 4, 5.

96 Rev. xxii. 18, 19.

the Scriptures appeared to thee - show them the perfection thou didst recognise in them, that everlasting endurance, above all, which thou didst assign to their smallest iota, and which will make them outlast the universe, after the very heavens and the earth have passed away!

We are not afraid to say it: when we hear the Son of God quote the Scriptures, every thing is said, in our view, on their divine inspiration - we need no farther testimony. All the declarations of the Bible are, no doubt, equally divine; but this example of the Saviour of the world has settled the question for us at once. This proof requires neither long nor learned researches; it is grasped by the hand of a child as powerfully as by that of a doctor. Should any doubt, then, assail your soul, let it turn to the Lord of lords; let it behold him in presence of the Scriptures!

Follow Jesus in the days of his flesh. With what serious and tender respect does he constantly hold in his hands “the volume of the Book,” to quote every part of it, and note its shortest verses. See how one word, one single word, whether of a psalm or of an historical book, has for him the authority of a law. Mark with what confident submission he receives *the whole Scripture*; without ever contesting its sacred [p.94] canon; for he knows that “salvation cometh of the Jews,” and that, under the infallible providence of God, “to them were committed the oracles

of God.” Did I say, he receives them? From his childhood to the grave, and from his rising again from the grave to his disappearance in the clouds, what does he bear always about with him, in the desert, in the temple, in the synagogue? What does he continue to quote with his resuscitated voice, just as the heavens are about to exclaim, “Lift up your heads, ye everlasting doors, and the king of glory shall come in?” It is the Bible, ever the Bible; it is Moses, the Psalms, and the prophets: he quotes them, he explains them, but how? Why, verse by verse, and word by word.

In what alarming and melancholy contrast, after beholding all this, do we see those misguided men present themselves in our days, who dare to judge, contradict, cull, and mutilate the Scriptures. Who does not tremble, after following with his eyes the Son of Man as he commands the elements, stills the storms, and opens the graves, while, filled with so profound a respect for the sacred volume, he declares that he is one day to judge by that book the quick and the dead? Who does not shudder, whose heart does not bleed, when, after observing this, we venture to step into a Rationalist academy, and see the professor’s chair occupied by a poor mortal, learned, miserable, a sinner, responsible, yet handling God’s Word irreverently; when we follow him as he goes through this deplorable task before a body of youths, destined to be the guides of a whole people - youths capable of doing so much good if guided to the heights of the faith, and so much mischief if tutored in disrespect for those Scriptures which they are one day to preach? With what peremptory decision do such men display the phantasmagoria of their hypotheses; they retrench, they add, they praise, they blame, and pity the simplicity which, reading the Bible as it was read by Jesus Christ, like him clings to every syllable, and never dreams of finding error in the [p.95] Word of God! They pronounce on the intercalations and retrenchments that Holy Scripture must have undergone - intercalations and retrenchments never suspected by Jesus Christ; they lop off the chapters they do not understand, and point out blunders, ill-sustained or illconcluded reasonings, prejudices, imprudences, and instances of vulgar ignorance.

May God forgive my being compelled to put this frightful dilemma into words, but the alternative is inevitable! Either Jesus Christ exaggerated and spoke incoherently when he quoted the Scriptures thus,

or these rash wretched men unwittingly blaspheme their divine majesty. It pains us to write these lines. God is our witness that we could have wished to recall, and then to efface them; but we venture to say, with profound feeling, that it is in obedience, it is in charity, that they have been penned. Alas! in a few short years both the doctors and the disciples will be laid in the tomb, they shall wither like the grass; but not one jot or tittle of that divine book will then have passed away; and as certainly as the Bible is the truth, and that it has changed the face of the world, as certainly shall we see the Son come in the clouds of heaven, and judge, by his eternal Word, the secret thoughts of all men!<sup>97</sup> . . .

“All flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away: but the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you;”<sup>98</sup> this is the word which will judge us.

Now, then, we proceed to close our proofs, by reviewing, under this aspect, the ministry of Jesus Christ. Let us follow him from the age of twelve to his descent into the grave, or rather, to his passing into the cloud, in which he went out of sight; and throughout the whole course of that incomparable career, let us see what the Scriptures were in the eye of Him who “upholds all things by the word of his power.” [p.96]

First of all, let us contemplate him at the age of twelve years. He grew, like one of the children of men, in wisdom and in stature; he is in the midst of the doctors in the temple of Jerusalem; he ravishes with his answers those who hear him; for, said they, “he knows the Scriptures without having studied them.”<sup>99</sup>

Behold him from the time he commenced his ministry. See him filled with the Holy Ghost; he is led into the wilderness, there to sustain, as the first Adam did in Eden, a mysterious contest with the powers of darkness. The impure spirit dares to approach him, bent on his overthrow; but how will the Son of God repel him, even he who had come to destroy the works of the Devil? Solely with the Bible. His only weapon, three successive times, in his divine hands, is the sword of the Spirit, the Bible. He quotes, thrice successively, the Book of Deuteronomy.<sup>100</sup> On every fresh temptation, he, the Word made flesh, defends himself by a sentence of the oracles of God, and by a sentence, too, the whole force of which lies in the use of a single word, or of two words; first of these words (πρὸ μόνῳ), *bread alone*; then of those words,

“Thou shalt not tempt the Lord (ὄκ ἐκπειράσεις Κύριον);” then, finally, of these two words (θεὸν προσκυνήσεις), Thou *shalt worship God*.

What an example for us! His whole reply, his whole defence is this:- “It is written;” “Get thee behind me, Satan, for it is written;” and as soon as this terrible and mysterious contest closed, the angels drew near to minister to him.

97 Rom. ii. 16; John xii. 48; Matt. xxv. 31.

98 1 Pet. i. 24, 25.

99 John vii. 15.

100 Deut. vii. 3, vi. 13, x. 20; Matt. iv. 1, 11.

But, mark this farther, such was the respect of the Son of man for the authority of every word of the Scriptures, that the impure spirit himself, powerful as he was in evil, and who knew what all the words of the Bible were in his antagonist’s eyes, could fancy no surer means of shaking his will than by quoting to him (but at the same time mutilating) a verse of the 91st [p.97] psalm; and forthwith Jesus Christ, to confound him, thinks it is enough to reply once more with, “It is written.”

See how his priestly ministry commenced - with the use of the Scriptures; and see how his prophetic ministry commenced soon after - with the use of the Scriptures.

Once engaged in his work, let us follow him as he goes from place to place doing good, displaying in his poverty his creative power ever for the relief of others, never for his own. He speaks, and it is done; he casts out devils, he turns the storm into a calm, he raises the dead. Yet, amid all these tokens of greatness, observe what the Scriptures are to him. The Word is ever with him; not in his hands, for lie knows it thoroughly, but in his memory and in his incomparable heart. Mark how he speaks of it! When he unrols the sacred volume, it is as if an opening were made in heaven, that we may hear Jehovah’s voice. With what reverence, with what submission, does he expound the Scriptures, comment upon them, quote them word by word! See how it becomes his grand concern to heal men’s diseases and to preach the Scriptures, as it was afterwards to die and to fulfil the Scriptures!

See who comes, “as his custom was,” into the synagogue on the Sabbath-day; for we are told he taught in their synagogues.<sup>101</sup> He goes into that at Nazareth; and what do we find him doing there - he, the everlasting Wisdom, possessed by Jehovah in the beginning of his way, brought forth when there were no depths, before the mountains were

settled, and before the hills?<sup>102</sup> He rises and takes the Bible, opens it at Isaiah, reads some words there; then having closed the book, he sits down, and while the eyes of all that are in the synagogue are fastened on him, he begins to say, “This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears.”<sup>103</sup>

See him as he passes through Galilee, and mark how [p.98] he employs himself there. “The volume of the book” is still in his hands; he explains it line by line, word by word; he points out to our respect its most minute expressions, as he would those of “the ten words” uttered on Sinai.

See him once more in Jerusalem, before the pool of Bethesda; what do we find him saying to the people? “Search the Scriptures.” - (John v.) See him in the holy place, in the midst of which he had dared to say aloud, “In this place is one greater than the holy place.” - (Matt. xii. 6.) Follow him into the presence of the Sadducees and the Pharisees, while he reprehends them successively with these words, “It is written,” as he had done in the case of Satan.

101 Luke iv. 15, 16.

102 Prov. viii. 22, 25.

103 Luke iv. 21.

Listen to his reply to the Sadducees who denied the resurrection of the body. How does he refute them? By ONE SOLE WORD of an HISTORICAL passage of the Bible; by a single verb in the present tense, instead of that same verb in the past tense. “Ye greatly err,” said he to them, “NOT KNOWING THE SCRIPTURES. Have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham!” It is thus that he proves to them the doctrine of the resurrection. God, on Mount Sinai, four hundred years after the death of Abraham, says to Moses, not “I *was*,” but “I *am*” the God of Abraham; I am that now (אֲנִי אֱלֹהֵי אֲבְרָהָם), which the Holy Ghost translates - (Ἐγώ εἰμι ὁ Θεὸς Ἀβραάμ). There is a resurrection, then; for God is not the God of a few handfuls of dust, the God of the dead, the God of nothing: he is the God of the living. Those men therefore are, in the view of God, still alive.<sup>104</sup>

Next, behold him in the presence of the Pharisees. It is again by the letter of the Word that he proceeds to confound them.

Some had by this time followed him into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan, and came to him asking to be informed what were his

doctrines on the subject of [p.99] marriage and divorce. Now, what followed on the part of Jesus Christ? He might certainly have given an authoritative reply, and announced his own laws on the subject. Is he not himself the King of kings and Lord of lords? But no; it was to the Bible that he made his appeal, still for the same purpose of making it the basis of doctrine; it was to these simple words taken from a purely historical passage in Genesis,<sup>105</sup> - "HAVE YE NOT READ, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female; so that they twain shall be one flesh? What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder."<sup>106</sup>

But listen to him, especially when in the temple he would prove to other Pharisees, by the Scriptures, the divinity of the expected Messiah. Here likewise, to demonstrate this, he still insists on the use of A SINGLE WORD, which he proceeds to take from the Book of Psalms: "If the Messiah be the son of David," said he, "how doth David, BY THE SPIRIT, call him LORD; saying (at the 110th Psalm), The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit. thou on my right hand? If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?"

How happens it, that among those Pharisees none was found to say in reply, "What! do you mean to insist on a single word, and still more on a term borrowed from a poesy eminently lyrical, where the royal Psalmist might, without material consequence, have employed too lively a construction, high-flown expressions, and words which, doubtless, he had not theologically pondered before throwing them into his verses? Would you follow such a mode of minutely interpreting each expression as is at once fanatical and servile? Would you worship the letter of the Scriptures to such an extreme? Would you build a whole doctrine upon a word?"

104 Matt. xxii. 31, 32.

105 Gen. i. 27, ii. 24.

106 Matt. xix. 4, 5, 6.

Yes, I do, is Christ's reply; yes, I will throw myself on a single word, because that word is God's! And, [p.100] to cut short all your objections, I tell you that it is BY THE SPIRIT that David wrote all the words of his hymns; and I ask you "how, if the Messiah be his son, David, BY THE SPIRIT, can call him his Lord, when he says, The Lord said unto my Lord?"

Students of God's Word, and you especially who are to be his

ministers, and who, as your preparation for preaching it, would desire first of all to have received it into a good and honest heart, behold what every saying, every single word of the Book of God, was in the regard of your Master. Go and do likewise!

But more than this. Again let us listen to him, even on the cross. There he poured out his soul as an offering for sin; all his bones were out of joint; he was poured out as water; his heart was like wax, melted in the midst of his bowels; his tongue cleaved to his jaws; he was about to give up his spirit to his Father. But, previous to this, what do we find him do? He desires to collect his remaining strength, in order to recite a psalm which the Church of Israel had sung on her religious festivals for a thousand years, and which told over, one after another, all his sorrows and all his prayers: “*Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani* (my God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me)?” He does even more than this: listen to him. There remained in the Scriptures one word which had not yet been fulfilled. Vinegar had still to be given him on that cross (this the Holy Ghost had declared a thousand years before in the 69th Psalm). “After this,” it is written, “Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and having bowed his head, he gave up the ghost.”<sup>107</sup>

When David sang the 69th Psalm on Sosannim, and the 17th Psalm on Ajeleth, did he know the prophetic meaning of all these words, of those hands and feet [p.101] that were pierced, of that gall poured out, of that vinegar, of those garments that were parted, of that vesture on which a lot was cast, of that mocking populace, wagging their heads and making mouths? It matters little to us his understanding it; the Holy Ghost at least understood it, and David spake BY THE SPIRIT, said Jesus Christ. The heaven and the earth shall pass away; but there was not in that book a jot or tittle that could pass away till all was fulfilled. - (John x. 35; Matt. v. 18).

Meanwhile, behold something, if possible, more striking still. Jesus Christ rises from the tomb; he has overcome death; he is about to return to the Father, there to resume that glory which he had with the Father before the world began. Let us follow him, then, during those fleeting moments with which he would still favour the earth. What words are now about to proceed from that mouth, again restored to life? Why,

words from Holy Scripture. Still he quotes it, explains it, preaches it. See him, first of all, on the way to Emmaus, walking with Cleopas and his friend; afterwards in the upper chamber; and, later still, on the borders of the lake. How is he employed? In expounding the sacred books; he begins with Moses, he

107 John xix. 25-30.

continues through all the Prophets and the Psalms; he shows them what had been said concerning him in all the Scriptures; he opens their minds to understand them; he makes their hearts burn within them as he speaks of them.<sup>108</sup>

But we have not yet done. All these quotations show us what the Holy Bible was in the eyes of Him “in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” (Col. ii. 3); and “by whom all things subsist” (Col. i. 17). But on the letter of the Scriptures, listen further to two declarations, and a last example of our Lord.

“It is easier,” says he, “for heaven and earth to [p.102] pass, than for one tittle (κεράια) of the law to fall;<sup>109</sup> and by the law Jesus Christ understood the whole of the Scriptures, and even, more particularly, the Book of Psalms.<sup>110</sup> What terms could possibly be imagined capable of expressing, with greater force and precision, the principle which we defend; that is to say, the authority, the entire divine inspiration, and the perpetuity of all the parts, and of the very letter of the Scriptures? Ye who study God’s Word, here behold the theology of your Master! Be ye then divines after his manner; be your Bible the same as that of the Son of God! Of that not a single tittle can fall.

“Till heaven and earth pass,” saith he, “one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.” - (Matt. v. 18.) All the words of the Scriptures, accordingly, even to the smallest stroke of a letter, are no less than the words OF JESUS CHRIST; for he hath also said, “heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall not pass away.” - (Luke xxi. 33.)

The impugnors of these doctrines ask us if we are bold enough to maintain that Holy Scripture is a law of God even in its words, as hyssop, or as an oak, is a work of God even in its leaves. We reply, with all the Fathers of the Church, Yes, even in its “words, even to (ὅλα ὧν, ἡ μία κεράια) one jot or one tittle!”

But, passing from these two declarations, let us finally direct our

attention to a last example given by our Lord which we have not yet adduced.

It is still Jesus Christ who is about to quote the Scriptures, but claiming for their smallest words such an authority, that one is compelled to rank him among the most ardent partisans of verbal inspiration, and that we do not think, that had we before us all the writings of divines the most uncompromising in their orthodoxy, we should any where find an example of more profound respect for the letter of Scripture, and for the plenitude of their divine inspiration. [p.103]

It was winter. Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's (the eastern) porch; the Jews came about him, upon which he said to them, "I give eternal life unto my sheep, and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand: I and the Father are one." People were astonished at such language; but he assumed a still bolder tone, until at last the Jews,

108 Luke xxiv. 21, 44.

109 Luke xvi. 17.

110 John x. 34, as did also the Jews, xii. 34; Rom. iii. 19.

exclaiming that it was blasphemy, took up stones to stone him, telling him they did so, "because thou, being a man, makest thyself God."111

Now then, let the reader carefully mark the several points involved in the answer made by Jesus Christ. He quotes a saying taken from one of the psalms, and proceeds to rest the whole of his doctrine on that single saying: for "he made himself equal with God;" says John elsewhere (v. 18). In maintaining the most sublime and most mysterious of his doctrines, and, in order to legitimize the most extraordinary of his pretensions, he appeals to certain words in the 82d Psalm. But, mark well! before pronouncing the words he takes care to interrupt himself; he pauses in a solemn parenthesis, and exclaims in a tone of authority, *And the Scripture cannot be broken* (καὶ οὐ δύναται λυθῆναι γραφή)!

Has sufficient attention been paid to this? Not only is our Lord's argument here founded entirely on the use made by the Psalmist of a single word, and not only does he proceed to establish the most astonishing of his doctrines on this expression; but further, in thus quoting the Book of Psalms in order to make us understand that in his eyes the whole book was dictated by the Holy Ghost, and that every word of it carried the authority of the law, Jesus calls it by the name of

LAW, and says to the Jews, “Is it not written in your law, I have said ye are gods?” These words are placed in the middle of a hymn; they might seem to have escaped from the unreflecting fervour of the prophet [p.104] Asaph, or from the burning raptures of his poetry. And were we not to admit the full inspiration of *all that is written*, one might be tempted to tax them with indiscretion, since the imprudent use which the Psalmist may have made of them, might have led the people to usages elsewhere censured by the Word of God, and to idolatrous imaginations. How then, once more we ask, was there no rationalist scribe from the universities of Israel to be found there, under Solomon’s porch, to say to him, “You cannot, Lord, claim the authority of that expression. The use that Asaph makes of it can have been neither considerate nor becoming. Although inspired as respects the thoughts suggested by his piety, he no doubt did not maturely weigh every little word with a very scrupulous regard to the use that might possibly be made of them a thousand years after his own day.. It were rash, therefore, to insist upon them.”

But now, let the reader mark, how our Lord anticipates the profane rashness of such an objection. Observe well: he solemnly reproves it; he proceeds to pronounce words concerning himself which would be blasphemy in the mouth of an archangel. “I and the Father are one;” but he interrupts himself, and immediately after saying, “Is it not written in your law, ye are gods?” he stops, and, fixing his eyes with a look of authority on the doctors who surround him, he exclaims, “AND THE SCRIPTURE CANNOT BE BROKEN!” As if he had said, “Beware! there is not in the sacred books a single word to be found fault with, nor a single word that one can neglect. This which I cite in this 82d Psalm, has been traced by the hand that made the heavens.” If then, he has been willing to give the name of gods to men, in so far as they were christ’s (anointed ones), and types of the true Christ, who is emphatically the Anointed One, and taking care nevertheless to call to mind “that they should die like men,” how shall it not still more appertain to me to take that name to myself? I, “the everlasting

111 John x. 27, and following verses.

[p.105] Father,”<sup>112</sup> Emmanuel, the God-man, who do the works of my Father, and on whom the Father hath put his seal?

Here, then, we ask of every serious reader (and our argument, be it

well observed, is altogether independent of the orthodox meaning or the Socinian meaning people may choose to give to the words of Jesus Christ); we ask, Is it possible to admit that the Being who makes such a use of the Scriptures DOES NOT BELIEVE IN THEIR PLENARY VERBAL INSPIRATION? And if he could have imagined that the words of the Bible were left to the free choice and pious fancies of the sacred writers, would he ever have dreamed of founding such arguments on such a word? The Lord Jesus, our Saviour and our Judge, believed then in the most complete inspiration of the Scriptures; and for him the first rule of all hermeneutics, and the commencement of all exegesis, was this simple maxim applied to the most minute expressions of the written word, “AND THE SCRIPTURE CANNOT BE BROKEN.”

Let, then, the Prince of Life, the light of the world, reckon all of us as his scholars! What he believed let us receive. What he respected let us revere. Let us press to our sickly hearts that Word to which he submitted his saviour heart, and all the thoughts of his holy humanity, and to it let us subject all the thoughts of our fallen humanity. There let us look for God, even in its minutest passages; in it let us daily dip the roots of our being, “like the tree planted by the rivers of waters, which bringeth forth his fruit in his season, and his leaf shall not wither.”

112 Isa. ix. 6, vii. H; John vi. 27.

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004.<http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>  
Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,  
[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

[p.106]

### **III Brief Didactic Abstract of the Doctrine of the Divine Inspiration.**

It has been our desire that this work should not bear so strictly theological a character, as that Christian women, or other persons not conversant with certain studies, and not acquainted with the sacred languages, should be deterred from the perusal of it. Nevertheless, we should be wanting to part of our object if the doctrine were not, on some points, stated with more precision. We have to request, therefore, that in order to avoid being led off, under another form, into an excessive length of development, we may be allowed to exhibit it here in a more didactic shape, and to sum it up in a short catechetical sketch. We will do little more than indicate the proper place of the points already treated; and will enter somewhat at large into the consideration of those only that have not yet been mentioned.

#### *Section I. Catechetical Sketch of the Main Points of the Doctrine.*

I. What, then, are we to understand by divine inspiration?

Divine inspiration is the mysterious power put forth [p.107] by the Spirit of God on the authors of holy writ, to make them write it, to guide them even in the employment of the words they use, and thus to preserve them from all error?

II. What are we told of the spiritual power put forth on the men of God while they were writing their sacred books?

We are told that they were *led* or *moved* (φερόμενοι) “not by the will of man, but by the Holy Ghost; so that they set forth the things of God, not in words which man’s wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth.”<sup>1</sup> “God,” says the apostle,<sup>2</sup> “spake BY THE PROPHETS at sundry times, and in divers manners (πολυμερῶς και πολυτρόπως);” sometimes enabling them to understand what he made them say; sometimes without doing so; sometimes by dreams<sup>3</sup> and by visions which he afterwards made them relate; sometimes by giving them

<sup>1</sup> 2 Peter i. 21; 1 Cor. ii. 13.

<sup>2</sup> Heb. i. 1.

3 Num. xii. 6; Job xxxiii. 15; Dan. i. 17, ii. 6, vii. 1; Gen. xx. 6, xxxi. 10; 1 Kings iii. 5; Matt. 1. 20, ii. 12, 22; Acts ii. 17.

words internally (λόγῳ ἐνδιάθετῳ), which he caused them immediately to utter; sometimes by words transmitted to them externally (λόγῳ προφορικῳ), which he caused them to repeat.<sup>4</sup>

III. But what passed in their hearts and minds while they were writing?

This we cannot tell. It is a fact which, subject besides to great varieties, could not be for us an object either of scientific inquiry or of faith.

IV. Have not modern authors, however, who have written on this subject, often distinguished in the Scriptures three or four degrees of inspiration (*superintendence, elevation, direction, suggestion*)? This is but idle conjecture; and the supposition, [p.108] besides, is in contradiction with the Word of God, which knows but one kind of inspiration. Here, there is none true but suggestion.

V. Do we not see, however, that the men of God were profoundly acquainted, and often even profoundly affected, with the sacred things which they taught, with the future things which they predicted, with the past things which they related?

No doubt they might be so - nay, in most instances they were so - but they might not have been so; this happened in different measures, of which the degree remains to us unknown, and the knowledge of which is not required of us.

VI. What then must we think of those definitions of divine inspiration, in which Scripture seems to be represented as the altogether human expression of a revelation altogether divine; - what, for example, must we think of that of Baumgarten,<sup>5</sup> who says, that inspiration is but the means by which revelation, at first immediate, became mediate, and took the form of a book (*medium quo revelatio immediata, mediata facta, inque libros relata est?*) These definitions are not exact, and may give rise to false notions of inspiration. I say they are not exact. They contradict facts. Immediate revelation does not necessarily precede inspiration; and when it precedes it, it is not its measure. The empty air

prophesied;<sup>6</sup> a hand coming forth from a wall wrote the words of God;<sup>7</sup> a dumb animal reprov'd the madness of a prophet.<sup>8</sup> Balaam prophesied without any desire to do so; and the believers of Corinth did so without even knowing the meaning of the words put by the Holy Ghost on their lips.<sup>9</sup> [p.109]

4 Nurn. xx. 6, xxiv. 4; Job vii. 14; Gen. i. 15, xx. 3; Ps. lxxxix. 19; Matt. xvii. 9; Acts ii. 17, ix. 10-12, x. 3, 17, 19, xi. 5, xii. 9, xvi. 9, 10; 2 Cor. xii. 1, 2.

5 De Discrimine Revelat. et Inspirationis.

6 Gen. iii. 14, &c., iv. 6; Exod. iii. 6, &c., xix. 3, &c.; Deut. iv. 12; Matt. iii. 17, xvii. 5.

7 Dan. v. 5.

8 2 Pet. ii. 16.

9 1 Cor. xiv.

I would next observe, that these definitions produce or conceal false notions of inspiration. In fact, they assume its being nothing more than the natural expression of a supernatural revelation; and that the men of God had merely of themselves, and in a human way, to put down in their books what the Holy Ghost made them see in a divine way, in their understandings. But inspiration is more than this. Scripture is not the mind of God elaborated by the understanding of man, to be promulgated in the words of man; it is at once the mind of God and the word of God.

VII. The Holy Ghost having in all ages illuminated God's elect, and having moreover distributed miraculous powers among them in ancient times, in which of these two orders of spiritual gifts ought we to rank inspiration?

We must rank it among the extraordinary and wholly miraculous gifts. The Holy Ghost in all ages enlightens the elect by his powerful inward virtue; he testifies to them of Christ;<sup>10</sup> gives them the unction of the Holy One; teaches them all things, and convinces them of all truth.<sup>11</sup> But, besides these *ordinary* gifts of illumination and faith, the same Spirit shed *extraordinary* ones on the men who were commissioned to promulgate and to write the oracles of God. Divine inspiration was one of those gifts.

VIII. Is the difference, then, between illumination and inspiration a difference of kind or only of degree?

It is a difference of kind, and not of degree only.

IX. Nevertheless, did not the apostles, besides *inspiration*, receive from the Holy Ghost *illumination* in extraordinary measure, and in its most eminent degree?

In its most eminent degree, is what none can affirm; in an extraordinary degree, is what none can contradict. [p.110]

The apostle Paul, for example, did not receive the gospel from any man, but by a revelation from Jesus Christ.<sup>12</sup>

He wrote “ALL HIS EPISTLES,” St Peter tells us,<sup>13</sup> not only in words taught by the Holy Ghost,<sup>14</sup> as had been the OTHER SCRIPTURES (of the old Testament), but according to a wisdom which had been given to him.<sup>15</sup> He had the knowledge of the mystery of Christ.<sup>16</sup> Jesus Christ had promised to give his disciples, not only “a mouth, but wisdom to testify of him.”<sup>17</sup> David, when he seemed to speak only of himself in the Psalms, KNEW that it was of the Messiah, that his words were to be understood: “Being a prophet, and knowing that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, God would raise up Christ to sit on his throne.”<sup>18</sup>

10 John xv. 26.

11 1 John ii. 20-27; John xiv. 16-26; vii. 38, 39.

12 Gal. i. 12-16; 1 Cor. xv. 3 13 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16.

14 1 Cor. xi. 13.

15 2 Pet. iii. 15, 16.

16 Eph. iii. 3.

17 Luke xxi. 15.

18 Acts ii. 30.

X. Why, then, should we not say that divine inspiration is but illumination in its most exalted and abundant measure?

We must beware of saying so; for thus we should have but a narrow, confused, contingent, and constantly fluctuating idea of inspiration. In fact, -

1. God, who often conjoined those two gifts in one man, often also saw fit to disjoin them, in order that he might give us to understand that they essentially differ, the one from the other, and that, when united, they are independent. Every true Christian has the holy Ghost,<sup>19</sup> but every Christian is not inspired, and such an one who utters the words of God, may not have received either life-giving affections or life-giving light.

2. It may be demonstrated by a great many examples, that the one

of these gifts was not the measure of the other; and that the divine inspiration of the prophets did not observe the ratio of their knowledge, any more than that of their holiness. [p.111]

3. Far, indeed, from the one of those gifts being the measure of the other, one may even say that divine inspiration appeared all the more strikingly the more that the illumination of the sacred writer remained in arrear of his illumination. When you behold the very prophets, who were most enlightened by God's Spirit, heading over their own pages after having written them, and endeavouring to comprehend the meaning which the Spirit in them had caused them to express, it should become manifest to you that their divine inspiration was independent of their illumination.

4. Even supposing the prophet's illumination raised to its utmost pitch, still it did not reach the altitude of the divine idea, and there might be much more meaning in the word dictated to them than the prophet was yet cognisant of David, doubtless, in hymning his psalms, knew<sup>20</sup> that they referred to "Him who was to be born of his loins, to sit upon his throne forever." Most of the prophets, like Abraham their father, saw the day of Christ, and when they saw it, were glad;<sup>21</sup> they searched what the Spirit of Christ, which was in them, did signify, when it testified beforehand of the sufferings of the Messiah, and the glory that should follow.<sup>22</sup> Yet notwithstanding all this, our Lord attests to us that the simplest Christian, the least (in knowledge) in the kingdom of God, knows more on that subject than the greatest of the prophets.<sup>23</sup>

5. These gifts differ from each other in essential characters, which we will presently describe.

6. Finally, it is always the inspiration of the book that is presented to us as an object of faith, never the inward state of him that writes it. His knowledge or ignorance nowise affects the confidence I owe to his words; and my soul ought ever to look not so much to the lights of his understanding as to the God of all 19 1 John ii. 20-27; Jer. xxxi. 34; John vi. 43.

<sup>20</sup> Acts ii. 30.

<sup>21</sup> John viii. 56.

<sup>22</sup> 1 Peter i. 11.

<sup>23</sup> Mat. xi. 11. Michaelis Introd. tome i. p. 116-129, French translation. (That author thinks, that in this passage *the least* means *the least prophet*.) [p.112]

holiness, who speaks to me by his mouth. The Saviour desired, it is

true, that most of those who related his history should also have been witnesses of what they related. This was, no doubt, in order that the world might listen to them will, the greater confidence, and might not start reasonable doubts as to the truth of their narratives. But the Church, in her faith, looks much higher than this: to her the intelligence of the writers is imperfectly known, and a matter of comparative indifference - what she does know is their inspiration. It is never in the breast of the prophet that she goes to look for its source; it is in that of her God. "Christ speaks in me," says St Paul, "and God hath spoken to our fathers in the prophets."<sup>24</sup> "Why look ye so earnestly on us," say to her all the sacred writers, "as though by our own power or holiness we had done this work?"<sup>25</sup> Look upwards.

XI. If there exist, then, between these two spiritual graces of illumination and inspiration a specific difference, in what must we say that it consists?

Though you should find it impossible to say what that difference is, you would not the less be obliged by the preceding reasons to declare that it does exist. In order to be able fully to reply to this question, it were necessary that you should know the nature and the mode of both these gifts; whereas the Holy Ghost has never explained to us, either how he infuses God's thoughts into the understanding of a believer, or how he puts God's words into the mouth of a prophet. Nevertheless, we can here point out two essential characters by which these two operations of the Holy Ghost have always shown themselves to be distinct: the one of these characters relates to their duration, the other to their measure.

In point of duration, illumination is continuous, whereas inspiration is intermittent. In point of mea- [p.113] sure, illumination admits of degrees, whereas inspiration does not admit of them.

XII. What are we to understand by saying that illumination is continuous, and inspiration intermittent?

The illumination of a believer by the Holy Ghost is a permanent work. Having commenced for him on the day of his new birth, it goes on increasing, and attends him with its rays to the termination of his course. That light, no doubt, is but too much obscured by his acts of

faithlessness and negligence, but never more will it leave him altogether. “His path,” says the wise man, “is like the shining light, shining more and more unto the perfect day.”<sup>26</sup> “When it pleased God, who separated me from my mother’s womb, to reveal his Son in me,”<sup>27</sup> he preserves to the end the knowledge of the mystery of Jesus Christ, and can at all times set forth, its truths and its glories. As it was not flesh and blood that had revealed these things to him, but the Father,<sup>28</sup> that unction which he received from the Holy One<sup>29</sup> abides in him, says

24 2 Cor. xiii. 5; Heb. i. 1 (ἐν).

25 Acts iii. 12.

26 Prov. iv. 18.

27 Gal. i. 15.

28 Matt. xvi. 17.

St John, and he needs not that any man teach him; but as the mine anointing teacheth him of all things, and is truth, so, even as he hath been taught by it, he will remain in it. Illumination, therefore, abideth on the faithful; but it is not so with miraculous gifts, nor with the divine inspiration, which is one of those gifts.<sup>30</sup>

As for miraculous gifts, they were always intermittent with the men of God, if we except the only man who “received not the Spirit by measure.”<sup>31</sup> The apostle Paul, for example, who at one time restored Eutychus to life, and by whom God wrought such special miracles<sup>32</sup> (so as that it sufficed that handkerchiefs and aprons should touch his body and be laid upon the sick, in order to cures being effected); at other times could not relieve either his colleague Trophimus or his [p.114] beloved Epaphroditus, or his son Timothy.<sup>33</sup> It is the same with inspiration, which is only the most excellent of miraculous gifts. In the Lord’s prophets, it was exerted only by intervals. The prophets, and even the apostles, who (as we shall show) were prophets, and more than prophets,<sup>34</sup> did not prophesy as often as they pleased. Inspiration was sent to them by intervals; it came upon them according as the Holy Ghost saw fit to give it to them (καθὼς τὸ Πνεῦμα ἐδίδου αὐτοῖς ἀποφθεγγεσθαι);<sup>35</sup> for “never did prophecy come by the will of man,” says St Peter;<sup>36</sup> “but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.” God spake in the prophets (ἐν τοῖς προφήταις), says St Paul, when he wished to do so, at sundry times (πολυμερῶς), as well as in divers manners (πολυτρόπως). On such a day, and at such a time, it is often written, “the word of Jehovah was upon such a man (רַב־יְהוָה וְלִי)

יְהוָה).” “In the tenth year, on the twelfth day of the tenth month, the word of Jehovah came to me,” said the prophet.<sup>37</sup> In the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius, the word of the Lord came unto John, the son of Zacharias (ἐγένετο ἡμᾶ Θεοῦ ἐπὶ Ἰωάννην);<sup>38</sup> and on the eighth day, Zacharias, his hither, was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying. . . .<sup>39</sup>

So then we ought not to imagine that the divine infallibility of the language of the prophets (and even of the apostles), lasted longer than the times in which, they were engaged in their miraculous task, and in which, the Spirit caused them to speak. Without divine inspiration, they were in most instances enlightened, sanctified, amid preserved by God, as holy and faithful men, in our own days may still be; but then they no more spoke as moved by the holy Ghost; - “their language might still be worthy of the most respectful at- [p.115] tention; but it was a holy man that spoke; it was no longer God: they again became fallible.”

29 1 John ii. 20-27.

30 1 Cor. xiv. 1; Acts xix. 6.

31 John iii. 34.

32 Acts xix. 11, 12.

33 2 Tim. iv. 20; Philip. ii. 27; 1 Tim. v. 23.

34 Eph. iii. 4, 5, iv. 11; Rom. xvi. 25, 27.

35 Acts ii. 4.

36 2 Peter i. 21.

37 Jer. i. 2, xxix. 30, and elsewhere.

38 Luke iii. 1, 2.

39 Luke i. 59, 67, 41, 42.

XIII. Can any examples be adduced of this fallibility being attached to their language, when unaccompanied with Divine inspiration?

A multitude of instances occur. Men are often, after having been for a time the mouth of the Lord, seen to become false prophets, and mendaciously to pretend to utter the words of Jehovah, after the Spirit had ceased to speak in them; “although the Lord sent them not, neither commanded them, neither spake unto them.” “They speak a vision of their own heart, not out of the mouth of the Lord.”<sup>40</sup>

But without referring to those wicked men, or to the profane Saul, or to Balaam, who were for some time numbered among the prophets, shall it be thought that all the words of king David were infallible during the course of that long year which he passed into adultery? Yet “these,”

saith the Scripture, “be the last words of David, the sweet psalmist of Israel: THE SPIRIT OF THE LORD SPAKE BY ME, AND HIS WORD WAS IN MY TONGUE.”<sup>41</sup> Shall it be thought that all the words of the prophet Solomon still continued infallible, when he fell into idolatry in his old age, and the salvation of his soul became a problem for the Church of God? And to come down to Christ’s holy *apostles and prophets* (Eph. iii. 5), shall it be thought that all the words of Paul himself were infallible and that he still could say that “Christ spoke by him”<sup>42</sup> when there was a sharp contention (παροξυσμός) betwixt him and Barnabas;<sup>43</sup> or when, in the midst of the council, under a mistaken impression with regard to the person of the High Priest, he “spoke evil of the Ruler of his people,” and cried, “God shall strike thee, thou whited wall;” or further (since there may remain some doubt as to the character of this reprimand), shall it be thought that all the words [p.116] of the apostle St Peter were infallible, when, at Antioch, he showed himself “so much to be blamed” (κατεγνωσμένος); when he feared those that came from St James; when he dissembled; and when he forced the apostle St Paul “to withstand him to his face before them all, because he walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel (οὐκ ἦν ὀρθοποδῆσας)?”<sup>44</sup>

XIV. What, then, are we to conclude from this first difference which we have recognized as existing between illumination and inspiration, with respect to the duration of those gifts?

We must conclude from it,

1. That these two operations of the Holy Ghost differ in their essence, and not in their degree only.

2. That the infallibility of the sacred writers depended not on their illumination (which, although raised to aim extraordinary measure in the case of some of them, they nevertheless enjoyed in common with all the saints), but solely on their divine inspiration.

40 Jer. xiv. 14, xxiii. 11, 16; Ezek. xiii. 2, 3.

41 2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2.

42 2 Cor. xiii. 3 43 Acts xv. 39.

44 See Gal. ii. 11, 14.

3. That divinely-inspired words, having been miraculous, are also all of them the words of God.

4. That as our faith in every part of the Bible rests no longer on the

illumination of the writers, but on the inspiration of their writings, it may dispense henceforth with the perplexing study of their internal state, of the degree in which they were enlightened, or of that of their holiness; but must stay itself in all things on God, in nothing on man.

XV. If such have been the difference between illumination and inspiration in the prophets and the apostles, as respects the *duration* of those gifts, what has it been as respects their *measure*?

Illumination is susceptible of degrees; inspiration does not admit of them. A prophet is more or less enlightened by God; but what he says is not more or [p.117] less inspired. It is so, or it is not so; it is from God, or it is not from God; here there is neither measure nor degree, neither increase nor diminution. David was enlightened by God; John Baptist more than David; a simple Christian possibly more than John Baptist; an apostle was more enlightened than that Christian and Jesus Christ more than that apostle. But the inspired word of David, what do I say? the inspired word of Balaam himself is that of God, as was that of John Baptist, as was that of St Paul, as was that of Jesus Christ! IT IS THE WORD OF GOD. The most enlightened of the saints cannot speak by inspiration, whilst the most wicked, the most ignorant, and the most impure of men, may speak not of his own will (ἂν ἑαυτοῦ οὐκ ἐπιεῖν), but by inspiration (ἀλλὰ προφητεύσαι).<sup>45</sup>

In a man who is truly regenerated, there is always the divine spirit and the human spirit, which operate at once - the one enlightening, the other darkening; amid the illumination will be so much the greater, the more that of the divine Spirit surpasses that of the human spirit. In the prophets, and, above all, in the apostles, these two elements also are to be found. But, thanks be to God, our faith in the words of Scripture nowise depends on the unknown issue of that combat which was waged between the Spirit and the flesh in the soul of the sacred writers. Our faith goes directly to the heart of God.

XVI. Can much harm result from the doctrine according to which the language of inspiration would be no more than the human expression of a superhuman revelation, and, so to speak, of a natural reflection of a supernatural illumination?

One or other of two evils will always result from it; either the

oracles of God will be brought down to the level of the words of the saints, or these last will be raised to the level of the Scriptures. [p.118]

This is a deplorable consequence, the alternative involved in which has been reproduced in all ages. It became unavoidable.

45 John xi. 51.

All truly regenerated men being enlightened by the Holy Ghost, it would follow, according to this doctrine, that they would all possess, though in different degrees, the element of inspiration; so that, according to the arbitrary idea which you would form to yourselves of their spiritual condition, you would be led inevitably sometimes to assimilate the sacred writers to them, sometimes to raise them to the rank of writers inspired from above.

XVII, Might religious societies be mentioned in which the former of these two evils is realized; I mean to say, where people have been led, by this path, to lower the Scriptures to the level of the sayings of saints?

All the systems of the Protestant doctors who assume that there is some mixture of error in the Holy Scriptures, are based on this doctrine; from Semler and Ammon to Eichhorn, Paulus, Gabler, Schuster, and Restig; from M. de Wette to the more respectable systems of Michaelis, Rosenmüller, Scaliger, Capellus, John he Clerc, or of Vossius. According to these theories, the divine light with which the intellects of the sacred writers was enlightened, might suffer some partial eclipses, through the inevitable effect of their natural infirmities, of a defect of memory, of innocent ignorance, of popular prejudice; so that traces of these have remained in their writings, and so that we can perceive in these where their shadows have fallen.

XVIII. Might religious societies be mentioned also, where the latter of these evils has been consummated; I mean to say, where, in consequence of having been willing to confound inspiration with illumination, saints and doctors have been elevated to the rank of divinely inspired men?

Of these, two in particular may be mentioned, the Jews and the Latins. [p.119]

XIX. What have the Jews done?

They have considered the rabbins of the successive ages of the Dispersion as endowed with an infallibility which put them on a level with (if not above) Moses and the prophets. They have, to be sure, attributed a kind of divine inspiration to holy Scripture; but they have prohibited the explanation of its oracles otherwise than according to their traditions. They have called the immense body of those commandments of men the oral law (הוררה כל פה), the *Doctrine*, or the *Talmud* (הלמוד), distinguishing it into the *Mishna*, or Second Law (מִשְׁנָה), and *Gémara*, *compliment* or perfection (גְּמָרָא). They have said that it passed from God to Moses, from Moses to Joshua, from Joshua to the prophets, from the prophets to Esdras, from Esdras to the doctors of the great Synagogue, and from them to the rabbins Antigone, Soccho, Shemaia, Hillel, Scammai, until at last Juda the saint deposited it in the *traditions* or *repetitions* of the law (מִבְּיֹדָה, δευτερώσεις), which afterwards, with their commentary or complement (the *gémara*), formed, first, the Talmud of *Jerusalem*, and afterwards that of *Babylon*.

“One of the greatest obstacles that we have to encounter in dealing with the Jews,” says the missionary MacCaul, “is their invincible prejudice in favour of their traditions and of their commentaries, so that we cannot prevail on them to buy our Bibles without notes or commentaries.”<sup>46</sup>

46 Letter from Warsaw, 22d March 1827.

The law they say is salt; the mishna, pepper; the talmuds, aromatics:” “the Scripture is water; the mishna, wine; the *gémara*, spiced wine.” “My son,” says rabbi Isaac, “learn to pay more attention to the words of the scribes than to the words of the law.” “Turn away your children” (said rabbi Eleazar, on his death bed, to his scholars, who asked him the way of life), “turn away your children from the study of the Bible, and place them at the feet of the wise.” “Learn my [p.120] son,” says the rabbi Jacob, “that the words of the scribes are more agreeable than those of the prophets!”<sup>47</sup>

XX. And what has been the result of these monstrous principles?

It is, that by this means millions and millions of immortal souls, although wandering upon the earth, although weary and heavy laden, although every where despised and persecuted, have contrived to carry the book of the Old Testament, intact and complete, among all the

nations of the whole world, without ceasing to read it in Hebrew every Sabbath, in thousands of synagogues, for the last eighteen hundred years . . . without, notwithstanding all this, recognising there that Jewish Messiah whom we all adore, and the knowledge of whom would be at this day their deliverance, as it behoves one day to be their happiness amid their glory!

“Full well,” said Jesus to them, “full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.”<sup>48</sup>

#### XXI. And what have the Latins done?

They have considered the fathers, the popes, and the councils of the successive ages of the Roman Church, as endowed with an infallibility which puts them on a level with Jesus, the prophets, and the apostles, if not above them. They have differed greatly, it is true, from each other on the doctrine of the inspiration of the Scriptures; and the faculties of Douay and Louvain, for example, have vigorously opposed<sup>49</sup> the opinion of the Jesuits, who would see nothing in the operation of the [p.121] Holy Ghost but a direction preserving the sacred writers from error; but all have forbidden the explanation of the Scriptures otherwise than by their traditions,<sup>50</sup> They have thought themselves entitled to say, in all their councils, as did the apostles and prophets at Jerusalem, “*It hath seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us.*” They have declared that it appertained to them to pronounce upon the true meaning of holy Scripture. They have called the immense body of those commandments of men, the *oral law*, the *unwritten traditions*, the *unwritten law*. They

47 In the Talmud of Jerusalem - Encycl. Method, at the word *Juifs*.

48 Mark vii. 9, see also xiii. and Matt. xv. 3-9. The mischief of those traditions begins at last to reveal itself to the Jews of our days: “The time is come,” says the Israelite doctor Creissenach (*Entwickelungs Geschichte des Mosaischen Ritual Gesetzes*, Pref.), “the time is come when the Talmud will precipitate the Jewish religion into the most profound and humiliating downfall, if all the popular teachers of the Jews do not loudly declare that its statutes are of human origin, and may be changed.”

49 Censure of 1588.

50 Council of Trent, session 4, 2d decree of 28th April 1546. - Bellarmin. De Eccl. lib. iii. cap. 14; lib. iv. cap. 3, 5, 6, 7, 8. - Coton, lib. ii. cap. 24, 34, 35. - De Perron contre Tilenus.

have said that they have been transmitted by God, and dictated by the mouth of Jesus Christ, or of the Holy Ghost, by a continual succession.

“Seeing,” says the Council of Trent,<sup>51</sup> that the saving truth and discipline of manners are contained in the written books amid the unwritten traditions, which, having been received by the apostles from

the mouth of Jesus Christ, or from the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, by succession of time are come down to us, following the example of the apostolic fathers, the Council receives with the same affection and reverence (*pari pietatis et reverentia affectu*), and honours all the books of the Old and New Testament (seeing that God is their author), and *together with them* the TRADITIONS relating to faith as well as manners, as having been dictated by the mouth of Jesus Christ or of the holy Ghost, and preserved in the Catholic Church by continual succession.” “If any one receive not the whole of the said books, with all their parts, as holy and canonical as they have been wont to be read in the Catholic Church, and in the old vulgate translation” (that of Jerome,<sup>52</sup> which, especially in Job and the Psalms is [p.122] crammed with very numerous, very serious, and very evident errors, and has even been corrected abundantly since by other popes),<sup>53</sup> “or knowingly despises the said traditions, let him be accursed!”

They have thus put the bulls of the bishops of Rome, and the decrees of their synods, above the Scriptures. “Holy Scripture,” say they, “does not contain all that is necessary for salvation, and is not sufficient.”<sup>54</sup> “It is obscure.”<sup>55</sup> “It does not belong to the people to read Holy Scripture.”<sup>56</sup> “We must receive with obedience of faith many things that are not contained in Scripture.”<sup>57</sup> “We must serve God, according to the tradition of the ancients.”<sup>58</sup> The bull *Exsurge* of Leo X.<sup>59</sup> places in the number of Luther’s heresies his having said, “That it is not in the power of the Church, or of the Pope, to establish articles of faith.” The bull *Unigenitus*<sup>60</sup> condemns to perpetuity, as being respectively false, captious, scandalous, rash, suspected of heresy, savouring of heresy, heretical, impious, blasphemous, &c., the following propositions:- it is profitable at all times, in all places, and for all sorts of persons, to study the Scriptures, and to become acquainted with their spirit, piety, and mysteries,” (on 1 Cor. xvi. 5.)<sup>61</sup> “The reading of Holy Scripture in the hands of a man of business, and a financier, shows that it is intended for every body,” (on Acts viii. 28.)<sup>62</sup> “The holy obscurity of the Word of God is no ground for the laity’s being dispensed from reading it,” (on

<sup>51</sup> Council of Trent, first decree, session 4.

<sup>52</sup> It was in vain that the Abbot Isidore Clarius represented at the Council that there was temerity in ascribing inspiration to a writer who himself assures us that he had none (Father Paul, Hist. of the Council of Trent, p. 148 of Edition London, 1676).

- 53 See Thomas James, *Bellum Papale sive Concordia Discors Sexti V. et Clementis VIII.*  
54 Bellarmin. *De Verbo Dei*, lib. iv.  
55 Idem, lib. iii. - Charron, *Verite* 3. - Coton, lib. ii. cap. 19. - Bayle, *traité*.  
56 Bellarmin. *De Verbo Dei*, Jib. ii. cap. 19.  
57 Bellarmin. lib. iv. cap. 3, and De Perron contre Tilenus. - Coton, lib. ii. cap. 24.  
58 Id. Bellarmin. lib. iv. cap. 5. - Coton, Jib. ii. cap. 34, 35. - Council of Trent, sess. 4.  
59 1520, Concil., Harduini, t. ix. p. 1893.  
60 Clement XI. of 8th September 1713.  
61 Proposition 79.  
62 Proposition 80 [p.123]

Acts viii. 39.) “The Lord’s day ought to be sanctified by the reading of books of piety, and especially of the Scriptures. They are the milk which God himself, who knows our hearts, has supplied for them. It is dangerous to desire being weaned from it.” - (Acts xv. 29. “It is a mistake to imagine that the knowledge of the mysteries of religion ought not to be communicated to that sex (women) by the reading of the holy books, after this example of confidence with which Jesus Christ manifests himself to this woman (the Samaritan).” “It is not from the simplicity of women, but from the proud learning of men, that abuse of the Scriptures has arisen, and heresies have been generated.” - (John iv. 26.) “It amounts to shutting the mouth of Christ to Christians, and to wresting from their hands the holy book, or to keep it shut to them by depriving them of the means of hearing it.” - (1 Thess. v. 2.) “To interdict Christians from reading it, is to interdict children from the use of light, and to subject them to a kind of excommunication,” (on Luke xi. 33.)<sup>63</sup>

Still more lately, in 1824, the encyclical epistle of Pope Leo XII. mournfully complains of the Bible Societies, “which,” it says, “violate the traditions of the fathers (!!!) and the Council of Trent, by circulating the Scriptures in the vernacular tongues of all nations.” (“*Non vos latet, venerandi fratres, societatem quamdam, dictam vulgo BIBLICAM, per totum orbem audacter vagari quw*” *spretis S. S. Patrum traditionibus (!) et contra notissimum Tridentini Concilii decretum in id collatis viribus ac modis omnibus intendit, ut in vulgares linguas nationum omnium sacra vertantur vol potius pervertantur Biblia.*”) “In order to avert this pest,” he says, “our predecessors have published several constitutions, . . . tending to show how pernicious for the faith and for morals this perfidious institution (the Bible Society) is! (et ostendatur quantopere fidei et moribus vaferrimum hocce inventum noxium sit!)” [p.124]

XXII. And what has been the result of these monstrous principles?

It is this, that millions and millions of immortal souls in France, in Spain, in Italy, in Germany, and in America, and even in the Indies, although they carry every where intact and complete the New Testament, although they have not ceased to read it in Latin, every Lord's day, in thousands and thousands of churches, for twelve hundred years . . . have been turned away from the fountains of life, have, like the Jews, "paid more attention to the words of the scribes than to those of the law;" have diverted their children, according to the counsel of Eleazer, "from the study of the Bible, to place them at the feet of the wise." They have found, like rabbi Jacob, "the words of the scribes more agreeable than those of the prophets." It is thus that they have contrived, for twelve centuries, to maintain doctrines the most contrary to the Word of God,<sup>64</sup> on the worship of images;<sup>65</sup> on the exaltation of the priests; on their forced celibacy; on their auricular confession; on the absolution which they dare to give; on the magical power which they attribute even to the most impure among them, of creating his God with three Latin words, *opere oprato*; on an ecclesiastical priesthood, of which Scripture has never said a word; on prayers to the dead; on the spiritual pre-eminence of the city which the Scripture has

63 Exod. xx. 4, 5.

64 Exod. xx. 4, 5.

65 Quisquis ehanguerit erga venerabilium imaginum adorationem (προσκύνησιν), hunc anathematizat sancta nostra et universalis synodus! (was written to the Emperor, in the name of the whole Second Council of Nice). (Concil., tom. vii, p. 585).

called Babylon; on the use of an unknown tongue in worship; on the celestial empire of the blessed but humble woman to whom Jesus himself said, "Woman, what have I to do with thee?" on the mass; on the taking away of the cup; on the interdiction of the Scriptures to the people; on indulgences; on purgatory; on the universal episcopate of an Italian priest; on the interdiction of meals; so that just as people [p.125] annul the sole priesthood of the Son of man by establishing other priesthoods by thousands, just as they annul his divinity by acknowledging thousands of demi-gods or dead men, present in all places, hearing throughout the whole earth the most secret prayers of human beings, protecting cities and kingdoms, working miracles in favour of their worshippers; . . . just so, also, they annul the inspiration

of Scripture, by acknowledging by thousands other writings which share in its divine authority, and which surpass and swallow up its eternal infallibility!

It was in opposition to the very similar tenets maintained by the heretics of his time, that Saint Irenaeus said, “For when convicted by the Scriptures, they turn about and accuse the Scriptures themselves, as if they were imperfect, and wanting in authority, and uncertain, and as if one could not find the truth in them, if ignorant of tradition; for that was given, not in writing, but by the living voice.”<sup>66</sup>

“Full well,” says Jesus to them too, “ye reject the commandments of God, that ye may keep your own traditions! *Bene irritum facitis præceptum Dei, ut traditionem vestram servetis!*” - (Mark vii. 9.)

XXIII. Without pretending anyhow to explain how the holy Ghost could dictate the thoughts and the words of the Scriptures (for the knowledge of this mystery is neither given to us, nor asked of us), what is it that one can perceive in this divine action?

Why, two things; first, an *impulsion*, that is, an action on the *will* of the men of God, in order to make them speak and write; and, secondly, a *suggestion*, that is to say, an action on their understandings amid on their organs, in order to their producing, first, *within them* [p.126] more or less exalted notions of the truth they were about to utter; and, then, *without them* such human expressions as were most divinely suitable to the eternal thought of the Holy Ghost.

XXIV. Meanwhile, must it be admitted that the sacred writers were no more than merely the pens, hands, and secretaries of the Holy Ghost?

They were, no doubt, hands, secretaries, and pens; but they were, in almost every case, and in very different degrees, living pens, intelligent hands, secretaries docile, affected by what they wrote, and sanctified.

XXV. Was not the Word of God, however, often written as suggested by the occasion?

66 Adv. Hæres., lib. iii. cap. 2. “Cum enim ex Scripturis arguuntur, mu accusatioinem convertuntur ipsarum Scripturarum, quasi non recte habeant, neque sint ex auctoritate, et quia varie sunt dictæ, et quia non possit ex his inventiri veritas ab his qui nescient traditionem. Non enim per litteras traditam illam, sed per vivam vocem.”

Yes no doubt; and the occasion was prepared by God, just as the writer was. “The Holy Ghost,” says Claude,<sup>67</sup> “employed the pen of the evangelists ... and of the prophets. He supplied them with the occasions on which they wrote; he gave them the wish and the strength to do so; the matter, form, order, economy, expressions, mire from his immediate inspiration and direction.”

XXVI. But do we not clearly recognise, in the greater part of the sacred books, the individual character of the person who writes?

Far from disowning this, we, on the contrary, admire its being so. The individual character which comes from God, and not from sin and the fall, was prepared and sanctified by God for the work to which it had been destined by God.

XXVII. Ought we, then, to think that all has been equally inspired of God, in each of the books of Holy Scripture?

Scripture, in speaking of what it is, does not admit any distinction. All these sacred books, without ex- [p.127] ception, are the word of the Lord. ALL SCRIPTURE, says St Paul (πᾶσα γραφή), IS INSPIRED BY GOD.

This declaration, as we have already said, is susceptible of two constructions, according as we place the verb, not expressed but understood, before or after the Greek word which we here translate *inspired by God*; - both these constructions invincibly establish, that in the apostle's idea, all without exception, in each and all of the books of the Scriptures, is dictated by the Spirit of God. In fact, in both the apostle equally attests that these HOLY LETTERS (τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα), of which he had been speaking to Timothy, are all *divinely inspired Scriptures*.

Now, we know that in the days of Jesus Christ, the whole Church meant ONE SOLE AND THE SAME COLLECTION OF BOOKS by *the Scripture*, the *Holy Scripture* or *the Scriptures*, or the *Holy Letters*, or the Law and the Prophets, (γραφὴ, <sup>68</sup> ἡ γραφή ἰγία, <sup>69</sup> αἱ γραφαί, <sup>70</sup> ὅς νόμος καὶ οἱ προφῆται, <sup>71</sup> ὅς τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα <sup>72</sup>). These were the twentytwo sacred books which the Jews held from their prophets, and on which they were all perfectly agreed.<sup>73</sup>

This entire and perfect divine inspiration of all the Scriptures of the Jews was so fully, in the days of Jesus Christ, the doctrine of the whole of that ancient people of God (as it was that of Jesus Christ, of Timothy, and of St Paul), that we find the following testimony to it in the works of the Jewish general Josephus (who had reached his thirtieth year<sup>74</sup> at the time when

67 Claude. Œuvres Posthumes, vol. iv. p. 228 68 Peter i. 20; John xix, 37.

69 John x. 35, xvii. 12; Rom. i. 2.

70 John v. 39; Matt. xxi. 42, xxvi. 54; Rom. xv. 4; 1 Con xv. 3.

71 Acts xxiv. 14; Luke xvi. 16, 29, 31; Matt. v. 17, 18; John x. 34.

72 2 Tim. iii. 15.

73 See Krebs and Læsner, on 2 Tim. iii. 15.

74 He was born in the year 37. See his Life, Edim. Aureliae Allobr. p. 999.

the Apostle Paul wrote his Second Epistle to Timothy). “Never” (says he, in speaking of “the twenty-two books”<sup>75</sup> of the Old Testament, which he calls τὰ ἴδια [p.128] γράμματα, as St Paul calls them here τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα), “never, although many ages have elapsed, has any one dared either to TAKE AWAY, or to ADD, or to TRANSPOSE in these any thing whatever;<sup>76</sup> for it is with all the Jews, as it were an inborn conviction (ΠΑΣΙ δε σύμφυτόν ἐστιν), from their very earliest infancy,<sup>77</sup> to call them GOD’S TEACHINGS, to abide in them, and, if necessary, to die joyfully in maintaining them.”<sup>78</sup>

“They are given to us” (he says further) “by the inspiration that comes from God (κατὰ τὴν ἐπιπνοίαν τὴν ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ); but as for the other books, composed since the times of Artaxerxes, they are not thought worthy of a like faith.”<sup>79</sup>. . . . .

These passages from Josephus are not quoted here as aim authority for our faith, but as an historical testimony, showing the sense in which the apostle St Paul spoke, and attesting to us that, in mentioning the holy letters (τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα), and in saying that they are all divinely inspired Scriptures, he meant to declare to us that, in his eyes, there was nothing in the sacred. books which was not dictated by God.

Now, since the books of the New Testament are ἱερὰ γράμματα, *Holy Scriptures, the Scriptures, the Holy Letters*, as well as those of the Old; since the apostles have put their writings, and since St Peter, for example, has put ALL THE LETTERS OF PAUL (πάσας τὰς ἐπιστολάς) in the same rank with the REST OF THE SCRIPTURES (ὥς καὶ τὰς λοιπὰς ΓΡΑΦΑΣ), hence we ought to conclude that all is inspired by God in all the books of the Old and New Testament. [p.129]

XXVIII. But if all the sacred books (τὰ ἱερὰ γράμματα) are divinely inspired, how can we discover that such and such a book is a sacred book, and that such another is not one?

This, in a great measure, is a purely historical question.

XXIX. Yet, have not the Reformed Churches maintained that it was by the Holy Ghost that they recognised the divinity of the sacred books; and, for example, has not the Confession of Faith of the Churches of France said in its 4th article, that we know these books to be canonical, and a very certain rule of our faith, not so much by the common accord and

75 Contra Apion, lib. i. p. 1837. (δύο μόνον πρὸς τοῖς ἑικοσι βιβλία). Our Bibles reckon thirty-nine books in mime Old Testament; but Josephus and the ancient Jews, by making one book each of the two books of Samuel, of Kings, and of Chronicles, by throwing together Ruth and Judges, Esdras and Nehemiah, Jeremiah and Lamentations, and finally, Hosea and the eleven minor prophets that follow respectively, into one book, reduced our modern calculation of their sacred books by seventeen units.

76 Οὐτε ΠΡΟΣΘΕΙΝΑΙ τις οὐδὲν οὔτε ΑΦΕΛΕΙΝ αὐτῶν, οὔτι ΜΕΤΑΘΕΙΝΑΙ τετόλμηκεν.

77 Εὐθὺς ἐκ τῆς πρώτης γενέσεως ὀνομάζειν αὐτὰ ΘΕΟΥΣ ΔΟΓΜΑΤΑ (according to others: *from the first generation.*)

78 ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐι δέοι ζήσκειν ἡδέως.

79 Πιστεως δι ουχ ὁμοίασ ἡξιωται.

agreement of the Church, as by the testimony and the persuasion of the Holy Ghost, which enables us to discern between them and the other ecclesiastical books?

This maxim is perfectly true, if you apply it to the sacred books as a whole. In that sense the Bible is evidently an *αὐτόπιστις* book, which needs *itself only* in order to be believed. To the man, whoever he be, that studies it “with sincerity and as before God,”<sup>80</sup> it presents itself evidently, and of itself, as a miraculous book; it reveals much that is hidden in men's consciences; it discerns the thoughts and affections of the heart. It has foretold the future; it has changed the face of the world; it has converted souls; it has created the Church. Thus it produces in men's hearts “an inward testimony and conviction of the Holy Ghost,” which attests its inimitable divinity, independently of any testimony of men. But we do not think that our Churches ever ventured to affirm that one might be content to abide by this mark for discerning such or such a book, or such or such a chapter, or such or such a verse of the Word of God, and for ascertaining its celestial origin. They think that for this

detail one must look, as they did, “to the common accord and agreement of the Church.” We ought to admit as divine the entire code of the [p.130] Scriptures, before each of its parts has enabled us to prove by itself that it is of God. It does not belong to us to judge this book; it is this book which will judge us.

XXX. Nevertheless, has not Luther,<sup>81</sup> starting from a principle laid down by St Paul<sup>82</sup> and by St John,<sup>83</sup> said, that “the touchstone by which one might recognise certain scriptures as divine, is this: Do they preach Christ or do they not preach him?”<sup>84</sup> And among the moderns, has not Dr Twisten also said, “that the different parts of the Scriptures are more or less inspired, according as they are more or less *preaching*; and that inspiration does not extend to words and historical matters beyond what has a relation to the Christian conscience, beyond what proceeds from Christ, or serves to show us Christ.”<sup>85</sup>

Christ is, no doubt, the way, the truth, and the life; the spirit of prophecy, no doubt, is the testimony of Jesus;<sup>86</sup> but this touchstone might in our hands prove fallacious: 1st, Because many writings speak admirably of Christ without being inspired; 2d, Although all that is to be found in the inspired Scriptures relates to Jesus Christ, possibly we might fail to perceive this divine character at a first glance; and 3d, In fine, because we ought to BELIEVE before SEEING it, that all Scripture is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for Correction, and for instruction in righteousness: that the man of God n-may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.<sup>87</sup>

XXXI. ‘What reasons have we, then, for recognising as sacred each of the books which, at the present day, form for us the collection of the Scriptures?’

For the Old Testament we have the testimony of the

80 2 Cor. ii. 17.

81 In his preface to the Epistles of James and Jude.

82 1 Cor. iii. 9, 10.

83 1 John iv. 2.

84 Oh sic Christum treiben, oder nicht.

85 Vorlesungen über die Dogmatik, 1829, I. B. p. 421-429.

86 John xiv. 6 - Apoc., xix. 10.

87 2 Tim. iii. 16. [p.131]

Jewish Church; and for the New Testament the testimony of the

Catholic Church.

XXXII. What must here be understood by the testimony of the Jewish Church ?

We must understand by it the common opinion of all the Jew's, Egyptian and Syrian, Asiatic and European, Sadducean and Pharisees,<sup>88</sup> ancient and modern, good and bad.

XXXIII. 'What reason have we to hold for divine, the books of the Old Testament which the Church of the Jews has given us as such?

It is written, "that unto them were committed the oracles of God;"<sup>89</sup> which means, that God in his wisdom chose them for being, under the Almighty government of his providence, sure depositories of his written word. Jesus Christ received their sacred code, and we accept of it as he did.

XXXIV. Shall our faith then depend upon the Jews?

The Jews often fell into idolatry; they denied the faith; they slew their prophets; they crucified the King of kings; since that they have hardened their hearts for near two thousand years; they have filled up the measure of their sins, and wrath "is come upon them to the uttermost."<sup>90</sup> Nevertheless, to them were committed the oracles of God. And albeit that these oracles condemn them, albeit that the veil remains on their hearts when they read the Old Testament;"<sup>91</sup> albeit they have for ages despised the Word of God, and worshipped their Talmud; they HAVE NOT BEEN ABLE not to [p.132] give us the *book of the Scriptures* intact and complete; and the historian Josephus might still say of them what he wrote eighteen hundred years ago: "After the lapse of so many centuries (ποσούτου γὰρ αἰώνος ἥδη παρήλκτο) no one among the Jews has dared to ADD or to TAKE AWAY, or to transpose any thing in the sacred Scriptures."<sup>92</sup>

XXXV. What, then, have been the warranty, the cause, and the means of this fidelity on the part of the Jews?

We shall reply to this question in but a very few words. Its warranty is to be found in the promises of God; its cause in the providence of God; and its means in the concurrence of the five

### following circumstances

88 See Josephus agt. Appion, liv. i. p. 1037. Philo in Eichorn. Joseph. in Nov. Repert., p. 239. De Ægypticis Judæis; cf. Eichorn-Einheit ins A. T. R. I., § 21, p. 73, 89, 91, 113, 114, 116; De Sadduceis, § 35, p. 95. And Semler (App. ad liberal., V. T. interpret., p. 11.) Eichorn Alg. Bibl. der Bibi. Litterat. T. IV. p. 275, 276.

89 Rom. iii, 2.

90 1 Thess. ii. 16.

91 2 Cor. iii. 15.

92 See this quotation at question 27.

1. The religion of the Jews, which has carried their respect for the very letter of Scriptures even to a superstitious length.

2. The indefatigable labours of the Masorethes, who so carefully guarded its purity, even to the slightest accents.

3. The rivalry of the Judaical sects, none of which would have sanctioned any want of faithfulness on the part of the others.

4. The extraordinary dispersion of that people in all countries long before the ruin of Jerusalem; for “of old time,” says St James,<sup>93</sup> “Moses hath in every (pagan) city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath-day.”

5. Finally, the innumerable copies of the sacred book diffused among all nations.

XXXVI. And with respect to the New Testament, what are we now to understand by the testimony of the Catholic Church?

By this we are to understand the universal agreement [p.133] of the ancient and modern Churches, Asiatic and European, good and bad, which call on the name of Jesus Christ; that is to say, not only the faithful sects of the blessed Reformation, but the Greek sect, the Arminian sects, the Syrian sect, the Roman Sect, and perhaps we might add the Unitarian sects.<sup>94</sup>

XXXVII. Should our faith then be founded on the Catholic Church?

All Churches have erred, or might have erred. Many have denied the faith, persecuted Jesus Christ in his members, denied his divinity, made his cross of none effect, restored the worship of statues and graven images, exalted the priests, shed the blood of the saints, interdicted the use of the Scriptures to the people, committed to the flames those of the faithful who desired to read them in the vernacular tongue, tongue set up

in the temple of God him who sits there as a God, have trampled upon the Scriptures, worshipped traditions, warred against God, and cast down the truth. Nevertheless, the new oracles of God have been committed to them, as those of the Old Testament were to the Jews. And albeit these oracles condemn them; albeit for ages they have despised the Scriptures and almost adored their traditions; - they have NOT BEEN ABLE not to give us the Book of the Scriptures of the New Testament intact and complete; and one may say of them, as Josephus said of Jews, “After the lapse of so many ages, never has any one in the Churches dared either to add or take away any thing in the Holy Scriptures.” They have been compelled, *in spite of themselves*, to transmit them to us in their integrity.

### XXX VIII. Nevertheless has there not been in

93 Acts xv. 21. Josephus often attests the same fact.

94 Following the example of the Scripture, we believe no may employ the word *church* as denoting, sometimes all that are enclosed in the nets of the Gospel, sometimes only all that in these is pure and living. And as for the word *sect* (αἵρεσις, Acts xxiv, 11; xxvi. 5; xxxviii 22), following the apostle’s example, we employ it here neither in a good sense nor in a bad sense.

[p.134]

Christendom one powerful sect, which for three hundred years has introduced into the canon of the Scriptures the Apocryphal Books, disavowed as they have been by the Jews<sup>95</sup> (as even Pope St Gregory himself attests),<sup>96</sup> and rejected by the fathers of the ancient Church<sup>97</sup> (as St Jerome attests)?

This, it is true, is what was done for the Latin sect by the fifty-three persons who composed, on the 8th of April 1546, the famous Council of Trent, and who pretended to be the representatives of the CHURCH UNIVERSAL OF JESUS CHRIST.<sup>98</sup> But they could do it for the Old Testament only, which was entrusted to the Jews and not to the Christians. Neither that Council, nor any even of the most corrupt and idolatrous Churches, *have been able* to add a single Apocryphal Book to the New Testament. God has not permitted this, however mischievous may have been their intentions. It is thus that the Jews have been able to reject the New Testament, which was not committed to them; while they HAVE NEVER BEEN ABLE to introduce a single book of man into the Old Testament. God has never permitted them to do so; and, in particular, they have always excluded from it those which the fifty three

ecclesiastics of Trent were daring enough to cause to be inserted in it, in the name of the universal Church. [p.135]

XXXIX. And what have been the warranty, the cause, and the means of that fidelity, which the universal Church has shown in transmitting to us the oracles of God in the New Testament?

To this question we shall reply but in a very few words.

The warranty has lain in the promises of God; the cause in the providence of God; and the means principally in the concurrence of the following circumstances:-

1. The religion of the ancient Christians, and their extraordinary respect for the sacred texts; a respect shown on all occasions in their churches,<sup>99</sup> in their councils,<sup>100</sup> in their oaths,<sup>101</sup> and even in their domestic customs.<sup>102</sup>

95 Joseph. agt. Ap. book I. 8. Euseb. H. E. lib. III., c. ix. x.

96 Exposition of the Book of Job. See Father Paul's Hist. of the C. of Trent, book ii. p. 143. (London, 1676.) 97 Origen (Euseb. H. E. lib. iv. c. 26). St Athanasius (Pascal Epistle). St Hilary (Prolog. in Psalmos, p. 9. Paris, 1693.) St Epiph. (Lardner, vol. iv. p. 312.) St Gregory Nazianzen (Carm. 33, Op. tom. ii. p. 98).

98 In praef. ad libr. Regum; sive Prologo-galeato. (See Lard. vol. v. p. 16-22). Judith, et Tobij et Macchabworum libros legit quidem Ecclesia: sed eas inter canonicas Scripturas non recipit (Prwif. in Libros Salom-Epist. 115). See also Symbolum Ruffini, tom. ix. p. 186 (Paris, 1602). "Some thought it strange that five cardinals and fortyeight bishops should so easily define the most principal and important points of religion, never decided before, giving canonical authority to books held for uncertain and apocryphal," &c. - Father Paul's Hist. of the C. of Treat, book ii. p. 153 (London, 1676). Most were Italians.

99 Plotius contra Manich., t. i.; apud Wolf. anecd., p. 32 sq. I. Ciampini Rom. vetera monum., i. p. 126 sq. All the Christian congregations in the East, even the poorest, kept a collection of the sacred books in their oratories. See Scholz Proleg.

100 Cyrill. Alex. in Apol. ad Theodos., imp. Act. Concil. ed. Mansi, t. vi. col. 579, vii. col. 6, ix. col. 187, xii. col. 1009, 1032, al. Prohibition, under pain of excommunication, against selling the sacred book to druggists, or other merchants, who don't buy them to read (6th Council, in Trullo. Can. 68).

101 Corb, byz., i. p. 422, al.

102 See St Jerome, pref. on Job. S. Chrysost. Hom. 19, De Statuis. Women, says he, are wont to suspend copies of the Gospels from their children's necks. See the 68th canon of the VI. Coun. in Trullo.

2. The pains taken by learned men in different ages to preserve the purity of the sacred text.

3. The many quotations made from Scripture by the fathers of the Church.

4. The mutual jealousy of the sects into which the Christian Church has been subdivided.

5. The versions made from the first ages in many ancient tongues.

6. The number and abundant dissemination of manuscripts of the New Testament.

7. The dispersion of the new people of God as far as the extremities of Asia, and to the farthest limits of the west. [p.136]

XL. Does it then result from these facts that the authority of the Scriptures is founded for us, as Bellarmin has said, on that of the Church?

The doctors of Rome, it is true, have gone so far as to say, that without the testimony of the Church the Scripture has no more authority than Livy, the Alcoran, or Æsop's fables;<sup>103</sup> and Bellarmin, horrified no doubt at such impious opinions, would fain distinguish the authority of the Church in *itself* and *with respect to us* (quoad se, et quoad nos). In this last sense, he says, the Scripture has no authority except by the testimony of the Church. Our answer will be very simple.

Every manifestation having three causes, an objective cause, a subjective cause, and an instrumental cause, one may say also that the knowledge that we receive of the authority of the Scriptures has, first of all, for its *objective cause*, the Holy Bible itself, which proves its divinity by its own beauty, and by its own doings; in the second place, for *subjective* or efficient cause, the Holy Ghost,<sup>104</sup> who confirms and seals to our souls the testimony of God; and in fine, in the third place, for *instrumental cause*, the Church, not the Roman, not the Greek, more ancient than the Roman, not even the Syriac, more ancient than either, but the Universal Church.

The pious St Augustine expresses this triple cause, in his book against the Epistle of Manicheus, called *Fundamenti*. In speaking of the time at which he was still a Manichean, he says:<sup>105</sup> "I should not have [p.137]

103 Hosius contra Brentium, lib. iii. Eckius, de auth. Ecclesiæ". Bayli Tractat. i., Catech., 9. 12.

Andradius, lib. iii. Defens. Conc. Trident. Stapleton, adv. Wittaker, lib. i. c. 17.

104 Isa. liv. 13, lix. 21.

105 Evangelio non crederem (according to the African usage for *credidisset*, as confession, lib. ii. c. 8: *Si lunc amarem*, for *amavissem*) nisi me Ecclesiæ commoveret (commovisset) autoritas (ch. 5). (This, besides, is very classical Latin: *Non ego hoc ferrem*, says Horace, for *tulisset*, lib. iii. ode 14). Eos sequamur qui nos invitant prius credere, quum nondum valemus intueri, ut ipsâ fide valentiores facti, quod credimus intelligere mereamur, non jam hominibus, sed ipso Deo intrinsecus mentem nostram firmante et illuminante (c. 14). Opera August., Paris, Mabillon, t. viii.

believed in the gospel had I not been drawn to it by the authority of the Church;” but he takes care to add: “Let us follow those who invite us first to believe, when we are not yet in a state to see: in order that, being rendered more capable (*valentiores*) by faith itself, we may deserve to comprehend what we believe. Then it will no more be men, it will be God himself within us, who will confirm our souls and illuminate them.” In this affair, then, the Church is a servant and not a mistress; a depositary and not a judge. She exercises the office of a minister, not of a magistrate, *ministerium non magisterium*.<sup>106</sup> She delivers a testimony, not a judicial sentence. She discerns the canon of the Scriptures, she does not make it; she has recognised their authenticity, she has not given it. And as the men of Sichem believed in Jesus Christ by means of the impure but penitent woman who called them to him, we say to the Church: “Now we believe, not because of thy saying; for we have heard him ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.”<sup>107</sup> We have believed, then, *per eam*, not *propter eam*, through her means, not on her account. We found her on her knees; she showed us her Master; we recognised him, and we knelt down along with her. Were I to mingle in the rear of an imperial army, and should I ask those around me to show me their prince, they would do with respect to him, for me, what the Church has done with regard to the Scriptures. They would not call their regiment the *ecumenical army*; above all, they would not say that the emperor has no authority but what is derived from its testimony, whether as it respected itself or with respect to us; whether *quoad se* or *quoad nos* (to use Bellarmin’s language). The authority of the Scriptures is not founded, then, on the authority of the Church: it is the Church that is founded on the authority of the Scriptures. [p.138]

XLI. If the authenticity of the Scriptures is proved in a great measure by history, how is their inspiration established?

Solely by the Scriptures.

XLII. But is such an argument rational? Does it not involve a begging of the question, and the proving of inspiration by inspiration?

There would be a begging of the question here, if, in order to prove that the Scriptures are inspired, we should invoke their testimony while

assuming them to be inspired. But we are far from adopting this process. First of all, the Bible is viewed solely in the light of an historical document, deserving our respect from its authenticity, and by means of which one may know the doctrine of Jesus Christ, nearly as one would learn that of Socrates from the books of Plato, or that of Leibnitz from the writings of Wolff. Now this document declares to us, in all its pages, that the whole system of the religion which it teaches, is founded on the grand fact of a miraculous intervention of God in the revelation of its history and its doctrines.

The learned Michaelis, who held such loose principles on inspiration, himself declares that the inspiration of the apostolic writings necessarily results from their authenticity. There is no other alternative, says he; if what they relate is true, they are inspired; if they were not inspired, they would not be sincere; but they are sincere, therefore they are inspired.

There is nothing in such reasoning that can be thought like a begging of the question.

106 Turretini, Theologia elenct., vol. i. loc 2, quwjt. 6.

107 John iv. 42.

XLIII. If it be by the Bible itself that we establish the dogma of a certain inspiration in the sacred books, by what can it be proved that that inspiration is universal, and that it extends to the minutest details of the instructions they convey?

If it be the Scriptures that tell us of their divine inspiration, it is they too that will be able to inform us [p.139] in what divine inspiration consisted. In order to our admitting their inspiration on their own sole testimony, it should have sufficed for us to be assured that they were authentic; but, in order to our admitting their plenary inspiration, we shall have something more; for we shall then be able to invoke their testimony as writings already admitted to be divine. It will no longer be authentic books only that say to us, I am inspired; but books, both authentic and inspired, will say to us, I am so altogether. The Scriptures are *inspired*, we affirm, because, being authentic and true, they say of themselves that they are inspired; but the Scriptures are *plenary inspired*, we also add, because, being inspired, they say that they are so entirely, and without any exception.

Here, then, there is neither more nor less than a doctrine which the

Bible will teaches us, as it teaches us all the rest. And just as we believe, because it tells us so, that Jesus Christ is God, and that he became man; so also we believe that the Holy Ghost is God, and that he dictated the whole of the Scriptures.

## *Section II. On the Adversaries and Defenders of the Doctrine.*

XLIV. Who are the divines that have impugned the doctrine of the divine inspiration?

We have one general remark to make before enumerating them here, namely, that with the single exception of Theodore of Mopsuestia, that philosophical divine whose numerous writings, so strongly tainted with Pelagianism, were condemned for their Nestorianism in the fifth ecumenical council (Constantinople, 553), and whose principles on the divine inspiration were very loose, - with the exception, we say, of Theodore of Mopsuestia, it has been found impossible to produce, in the long course of the EIGHT FIRST CENTURIES OF CHRIS- [p.140] TAINITY, a single doctor who has disowned the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures, unless it be in the bosom of the most violent heresies that have tormented the Christian Church; that is to say, among the Gnostics, the Manicheans, the Anomeans, and the Mahometans. St Jerome himself, who sometimes permitted himself, while speaking of the style of certain parts of the sacred books, to use a language whose temerity will be censured by all pious persons,<sup>108</sup> Qui solœcismos in verbis facit, qui non potest hyperbaton reddere, sententiamque concludere. (Comment. in epist. ad Titum. lib. i [ad cap. i. 1.] Et ad Ephes., lib. ii. [ad cap. iii. 1.] See also his, Comment on the Ep. to the Galatians).

nevertheless maintains, even for such passages, the entire inspiration of all the parts of the sacred Scripture;<sup>109</sup> and in that he further sees, under what he calls the grossness of the language and the seeming absurdity of the reasonings, intentions on the part of the Holy Spirit full of profound art and wisdom. And if, transporting ourselves from the days of St Jerome to four hundred years farther down, we come to the celebrated Agobard, who is alleged by Dr Du Pin to have been the first of the fathers of the Church that abandoned the doctrine of a verbal inspiration,<sup>110</sup> it is most unjustly, says Dr Rudeibach, that such a

charge has been brought against that bishop. It is true, that in disputing with the Abbot Fredigise,<sup>111</sup> touching the latitude to be allowed to Latin translators of the sacred text, he maintains that the dignity of the Word of God consists in the force of meaning, not in the pomp of words; but he took care to add, that the authority of the apostles and the prophets remains intact, and that no one is permitted to believe that they could have placed a letter otherwise than they have done; for their authority is stronger than heaven and earth.<sup>112</sup> [p.141]

If, then, we would class, in the order of time, the men who controverted the entire divine inspiration of our sacred books, we must place:-

*In the 2d cemetery*, the Gnostics (Valentine, Cerdo, Marcio, his disciple, &c.) They believed in two equal principles, independent, contrary, and co-eternal; the one good and the other bad; the one the father of Jesus Christ, and the other the author of the law; and, entertaining this idea, they rejected the Pentateuch, at the same time admitting no more of the New Testament than the gospel of Luke, and part of Paul's epistles.

*In the 3d century* Manes or Manicheus, who, calling himself the *paraclete* promised by Jesus Christ, corrected the books of the Christians, and added his own.

*In the 4th century*, the Anonmeans or Ultra-Arians (for Arius himself held a more reserved language), who maintained, with their leader Ætius, that the Son, a created intelligence, *unlike*<sup>113</sup> *to the Father*, took to himself a human body without a human soul. They spoke of the Scriptures with an irreverence tantamount to the denial of their entire inspiration. "When pressed with Scriptural reasons," says St Epiphanius, "they escape by saying: That it was as a man that the apostle said those things;" or, "Why do you bring the Old Testament against me?" And what does the holy bishop add? "It was to be expected that those who denied the glory of Christ, should deny still more that of the apostles."<sup>114</sup>

*In the 5th century*, Theodore of Mopsuestia, chief of the Antioch school, an able philosopher, and learned but rash divine. All that remains to us of his numerous works, is some fragments only, preserved to us by other authors. His books, as we have said, were condemned (two hundred years after his death) at the Council of Constantinople. There were quoted there, for example, his writings against

Appollinarius, in which he had said that the book of Job is merely a poem derived from a pagan source; that Solomon had no doubt re-

109 Proem, in Ep. ad Galat., lib. ii.

110 Du Pin, doctor of the Sorbonne. Prolegom. on the Bible, liv. i. v. 256.

111 Agobard, adv. Fredeg. lib. c. 9-12.

112 Rudelbach, Zeitschrift, 1st part, 1840, p. 48.

113 Ἀνόμοιοι: hence their name.

114 Epiphan., Advers. hwjr., LXX. vi. Ætiii salutatur. Confut., vi. [p.142]

ceived λόγον γνώσεως, but not λόγον σοφινᾶς; that the Song of Songs is but a long and insignificant epithalamium, without any character prophetic, historical, or scientific, and in the manner of the Symposium of Plato, etc, etc.<sup>115</sup>

*In the 7th century*, Mahomet (whose false religion is nothing more than a heresy of Christianity, and who speaks of Christ at least as honourably as most part of the Socinians have done,) - Mahomet acknowledged, and often quoted as inspired, the books of the Old and New Testament; but he said they had been corrupted, and, like Manes, he added his own.

*In the 12th and 13th centuries*, as it would appear, there sprang up and took a regular shape, first among the Talmudist Jew's,<sup>116</sup> the system of those modern doctors who have thought fit to class the various passages of holy Scripture under various orders of inspiration, and to reduce the divine inspiration to more or less natural proportions. It was under the double influence of the Aristotelian philosophy, and of the theology of the Talmud, that the Jews of the middle ages, differing much in this from the ancient Jews,<sup>116</sup> imagined this theory. That was the time of the Solomon Jarchis, the David Kimchis, the Averroeses, the Aben-Ezras, the Joseph Albos; and above all of *Moses Maimonides*, that Spanish Jew who has been called. the *eagle of the doctors*. Maimonides, borrowing the vague terms of the peripatetic philosophy, taught that prophecy is not an exclusive product of the action of the Holy Ghost. Just, says he, as, if the *intellectus agens* (the intellectual influence that is in man) associate itself more intimately with reason, there results from it the *secta sapienturn speculatorum*; and as, if that agent operates more on the imagination, there results from it the *secta politicorum, legislatorum, divinatorum, et præstigatorum*; so also, when this [p.143] superior principle exercises its action in a more perfect manner on those two faculties of the soul at once, the result is the *secta prophetarum*.

Almost all the modern Jewish doctors have adopted the ideas of Maimonides; and there, also, seems to have originated Schleiermacher's modern system of inspiration. It is in starting from these principles that the doctors have admitted several degrees of inspiration in the prophets. Of these, Maimonides reckoned sometimes eight, sometimes eleven. Joseph Albo reduced them to four, and Abarbanel to three. They applied these distinctions of different degrees of inspiration to the division of the Old Testament into *Law*, *Prophets*, and *Hagiographa* (וּבְהוֹבִים תּוֹרָה וּנְבִיאִים) The *kethubim*, according to him, had not received the prophetic spirit (רוּחַ נְבוּאָה), but only the Holy Spirit (רוּחַ הַקֹּדֶשׁ), which, according to him, was no more than a human faculty, by means of which mm mail pronounced words of wisdom and holiness.<sup>117</sup> The modern German school of the adversaries of inspiration, seems accordingly to be a mere reproduction of the theory of the rabbins of the 13th century, or a borrowing from the Talmudist doctors of our own days.

*In the 16th century*, Socinus<sup>118</sup> and Castellio<sup>119</sup> maintained that the sacred writers sometimes show a failure of memory, and might err on subjects of slight importance.

115 Acta concilii Constantinop., ii. 65, 75, apud Harduin. Acta Concil., tom. iii. p. 87-89.

116 See Josephus agt. Apion. lib. i. c. 7, 8; and Phibo, cd Hæschel, p. 515, and p. 918.

117 Mosis Maimonides, More Nebuchim, part ii. c. 37, et 45. Rudelbach (*ut supra*) p. 53.

118 De Author. Script.

*In the 17th century*, three orders of adversaries, according to the celebrated Turretine,<sup>120</sup> combated inspiration. These were, besides the infidels properly so-called (*atheos et gentiles*): 1. the fanatics (*enthusiastw*"), who charged Scripture with imperfection in order to exalt their own particular revelations; 2. those of the Pope's sect (*pontificii*), who scrupied not, says he, to betray the cause of Christianity by alleging the corruption of the original text (*fontium*), in order to exalt their Vul- [p.144] gate translation; 3. The rationalists of different classes (*libertini*), who, without going out of the Church, unceasingly attempted to shake the authority of the Scriptures, by pointing to difficult passages and apparent contradictions (ἄπορα καὶ ἐναντιοφανῆ).

In the latter half of the 18th century, this last class of adversaries became very numerous in Germany. Semler gave the first impulsion to what he called the liberal interpretation of the Scriptures; he rejected all inspiration, denied all prophecy, and treated all miracle as allegory and

exaggeration.<sup>121</sup> Ammon, more lately, laid down positive rules for this impious manner of explaining the miraculous facts.<sup>122</sup> The writings of a legion of doctors no less daring, Paulus, Gabler, Schuster, Restig, and many others, abound in practical applications of these principles.

Eichhorn, more recently still, has reduced into system the rationalist doctrine of prophecy.<sup>123</sup> De Wette, in his *Preliminary Manual*, appears not to see any true prediction in the prophets, and not to find any difference between those of Israel and those of the Pagan nations, beyond the spirit of morality and sincerity which characterises monotheism, and which, says he, purified Hebrew prophecy, while it was wanting to the *seers* among the pagans.<sup>124</sup> Hug, in his Introduction to the New Testament Scriptures,<sup>125</sup> nowhere speaks of inspiration. Michaelis admits it for a part of the Scriptures, and rejects it for the other. So did John Leclerc in the last century.<sup>126</sup> Rosenmüller is still more wavering in his sentiments.

Of late years, however, there have been German di- [p.145] vines more reverentially inclined, who have admitted different degrees of inspiration in the different parts of the Scriptures; by distinguishing the passages which do not relate say they, to salvation; and making bold to see in them, as Socinus and Castellio did of old, slips of memory, and errors, on subjects which, in their eyes, seemed of little importance.

Among the English, too, there have been seen, of late years persons otherwise respectable, who have allowed themselves to range the sentences of God's Word under different classes of inspiration.

119 In Dialogis.

120 Theol. Elenct., loc. 2, quwjst. 5.

121 Preface to Schultens's Compendium, on the Proverbs, by Vogel. Halle, 1769, p. 5.

122 De interpret. narrationum mirabilium. N. N. (at the beginning of his Ernesti.) 123 Einleitung in das alte Testament; 4 edit., Götting., 1821, tom. iv. p. 45.

124 Zweyte Verbesserte Auflage. Berlin 1822, p. 276. Lehrbuch. Anmerkungen.

125 Einleitung, &c., 2d edit. 1821.

126 Sentiments de quelques theologiens de Holland. Lett. XI. XII. La Chamb., Traité de la Religion, tom. iv. p.

159, amid the following.

XLV. Can many illustrious doctors of the Church be mentioned as maintaining the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures?

It is the uniform doctrine of THE WHOLE CHURCH down to the days of the Reformation.

“Hardly,” says Rudelbach, “is there a single point with regard to

which there reigned, in the eight first ages of the Church, a greater or more cordial unanimity.”<sup>127</sup>

To the reader who wishes to consult these testimonies of history, we recommend the dissertation lately published on this subject by the learned doctor of Ghogau, already mentioned. The author, commencing with a review of the first eight hundred years of the Christian era, establishes the following principles there, by very numerous quotations from the Greek and Latin fathers.

1. The ancient Church, with one unanimous voice, teaches that all the canonical writings of the Old and New Testaments ARE GIVEN BY THE HOLY SPIRIT of God; and it is on this sole foundation (and independently of the fragmentary information that human im- [p.146] perfection may acquire from them) that the Church founded her faith on the perfection of the Scriptures.

2. The ancient Church, following out this first principle, no less firmly maintains the INFALLIBILITY of the Scriptures as their *sufficiency* (ὑπάρκειαν) and their *plenitude*. She attributes to their sacred authors not only *axiopistia*, to wit, a fully deserved credibility, but also *autopistia*, to wit, a right to be believed, independently of their circumstances or of their personal qualities, and on account of the infallible and celestial authority which caused them to speak.

3. The ancient Church, viewing the whole Scripture as an utterance, on the part of God, addressed to man, and dictated by the Holy Ghost, has ever maintained that there is NOTHING ERRONEOUS, nothing useless, nothing superfluous there; and that in this divine work, as in that of creation, one may always recognise, amid the richest plenty, the greatest and the wisest economy. Every word there will be found to have its object, its point of view, its sphere of efficacy. “*Nihil otiosum, nec sine signo, neque sine argummento apud eum.*” - (*Irenæus*); πᾶν ἥμα ... ἐργαζόμενον τὸ ἑαυτοῦ ἔργον. - (*Origen.*) It is in vigorously establishing and defending both these characters of the Scriptures, that the ancient Church has shown the elevated and profound idea she entertained of their divine inspiration.

4. The ancient Church has always maintained that the doctrine of holy Scripture is the SAME THROUGHOUT, and that the Spirit of the Lord gives utterance in every part of it to one and the same testimony. She vigorously opposed that science, falsely so called (I Tim. vi. 20),

which even in the first ages of her history, had taken a regular shape in the doctrines of the Gnostics, and which, daring to impute imperfection to the Old Testament, made it appear that

127 Kaum ist irgend ein Punct, worüber im Alterthume eine grössere und freudigere Einstimmigkeit herrschte. (Zeitschrift vom Rudelhaeh und Guericke, 1840, 1st vol. p. 1-47. Die lebre von der Inspiration der heiligen Schrift, mit Berücksichtigung der neuesten Untersuchungen darüber, von Schleiermacher, Twesten und Steudel.)

there were contradictions between one apostle and another apostle, where there were really none.

5. The ancient Church thought that inspiration ought chiefly to be viewed, it is true, as a passive state, but as [p.147] a state in which the human faculties, FAR FROM BEING EXTINGUISHED or set aside by the action of the Holy Ghost, were exalted by his virtue, and filled with his light. She has often compared the soul of the prophets and of the apostles to “a stringed instrument, which the Holy Ghost put in motion, in order to draw out of it the divine harmonies of life. -

(*Athenagoras*.)<sup>128</sup> “What they had to do, was simply to submit themselves to the powerful action of the Holy Ghost, so that, touched by his celestial influence, the harp, though human, might reveal to us the knowledge of the mysteries of heaven.” - (*Justin Martyr*.)<sup>129</sup> But, in their view, this harp, entirely passive as it was as respects the action of God, was the heart of a man, the soul of a man, the understanding of a man, renewed by the Holy Ghost, and filled with divine life.

6. The ancient Church, while it maintained that there was this continued action on the part of the Holy Ghost in the composition of the Scriptures, strenuously repelled the false notions which certain doctors, particularly among the Montanists, sought to propagate respecting the activity of the Spirit of God, and the passiveness of the spirit of man in divine inspiration; as if the prophet, ceasing to have the mastery of his senses, had been in the state which the pagans attributed to their sibyls (μανία or ἐκστάσει). While the Cataphrygians held that an inspired man, under the powerful influence of the divine virtue, loses his senses (*excidit sensu, adumbratus, silicet, virtute divina*),<sup>130</sup> the ancient Church maintained, on the contrary, that the prophet DOES NOT SPEAK IN A STATE OF ECSTASY (non loquitur in ἐκστάσει)<sup>131</sup> and that one may distinguish by this trait false prophets from the true. This was the doctrine held by Origen against Celsus (liiii. vii. c. 4); as also [p.148] of Miltiades, of Tertullian, of Epiphanius, of Chrysostom, of Basil, and of

Jerome, against the Montanists.

7. The ancient Church in her endeavours, by means of OTHER DEFINITIONS, which we shall not indicate here, to give greater clearness to the idea of divine inspiration, and to disentangle it from the difficulties with which it was sometimes obscured, still further showed how much she cherished this doctrine.

8. The ancient Church thought that if the name of action on the part of God is to be applied to inspiration, it must be understood to extend TO WORDS as well as to things.

9. The ancient Church, by her constant MODE OF QUOTING the Scriptures, in order to the establishment and defence of her doctrines; by her manner, too, of EXPOUNDING and COMMENTING on them; and, in fine, by the USE which she recommends all Christians,

128 Legatio pro Christianis, c. 9.

129 Ad Græcos cohortatio, c. 8.

130 Tertullian adv. Marcion. lib. iv. ch. 22.

131 Hieronym., Proem. in Nahum. Præfat. in Habak. in Esaïam. Epiphan. adv. hæreses, lib. ii. Hæres., 48, c. 3.

without exception, to make of them as a privilege arid a duty; the ancient Church, by these three habitual practices, shows, still more strongly, if it be possible, than she could have done by direct declarations, how profoundly attached she was to the doctrine of a verbal inspiration.

And it is not only by her exposition of the Word that the ancient Church shows us to what point she held the entire inspiration of the Scriptures, as an incontrovertible axiom; she will show you this still more strongly, if you will follow her while she is engaged IN RECONCILING THE APPARENT CONTRADICTIONS sometimes presented by the Gospel narratives. After having made an essay of some explanation, she does not insist upon it; but hastens to conclude, that whatever be its validity, there necessarily exists some method of reconciling those passages, and that the difficulty is only apparent, because the cause of that difficulty lies in our ignorance, and not in Scripture. “Whether it be so, or otherwise (she says with Julius Africanus), it matters not, the Gospel remains entirely true (τὸ μέντοι εὐαγγέ- [p.149] λιον πάντως ἀληθεύει)!<sup>132</sup> This is her invariable conclusion as to the perfect solubility of all the difficulties that one can present to her in the Word of God.

10. The ancient Church was so strongly attached to the doctrine of the personality of the Holy Spirit, and of his sovereign action in the composition of the whole Scriptures, that she made no difficulty in admitting at one and the same time the greatest variety and the GREATEST LIBERTY in the phenomena, in the occasions, in the persons, in the characters, and in all the external circumstances, under the concurrence of which that work of God was accomplished. At the same time that she owned with St Paul, that in all the operations of this Spirit, it is one and the self-same Spirit that divideth to every man severally as he will (1 Cor. xii. 11), she equally admitted that in the work of divine inspiration, the divine causation was exercised amid a large amount of liberty, as respects human manifestations. And be it carefully remarked, that you will nowhere find, in the ancient Church, a certain class of doctors adopting one of these points of view (that of the divine causation and sovereignty), and another class of doctors attaching themselves exclusively to another (that of human personality, and of the diversity of the writer's occasions, affections, intelligence, style, mind other circumstances). "If this were so," says Rudelbach, "one might justly accuse us of having ourselves forced the solution of the problem, instead of faithfully exhibiting the views of the ancient Church." But no; on the contrary, you will often see one and the same author exhibit, at once and without scruple, both of these points of view: the action of God and the personality of man. This is what we see, for example, abundantly in Jerome, who, even when speaking of the specialties of the sacred writers, never abandons the idea of a word introduced *by* God into their minds. [p.150] This we farther remark in Irenæus, who, while he insists more than any one else on the action of God in the inspiration of the Scriptures, is the first of the fathers of the Church that relates in detail the personal circumstances of the Evangelists. This is what you will find again in St Augustine; this is what you will see even in the father of Ecclesiastical History, Eusebius of Cæsarea, who gives so many details on the four authors of the Gospels, and who, nevertheless, professes the most rigorous principles on the plenary inspiration of the Canonical Scriptures.

132 In his letter to Aristides, on the agreement of the Gospels that relate the two genealogies of Jesus Christ. – (Euseb., Hist. Eccl. lib. i. c. 7.)

11. The ancient Church shows us more completely still, by two other traits, the idea she had formed of divine inspiration, by the care

she took, on the one hand, TO FIX THE RELATIONS which the doctrine of divine inspiration bore to the doctrine of the gifts of grace; and, on the other, To EXHIBIT THE PROOFS of inspiration.

In fine, although the ancient Church presents this spontaneous (ungesuchte) and universal agreement in the doctrine of inspiration, we must not imagine that this great phenomenon is attached, as some have been fain to say, to some particular system of theology, or may be explained by that system. No more must we regard this wonderful agreement as the germ of a theory that was to establish it, at a later period in the Church. No. The very assertions of an opposite opinion which, from time to time, made themselves heard on the part of the heretics of the first centuries, and the NATURE OF THE REPLIES that were put forth by the ancient Church, clearly demonstrate, on the contrary, that this doctrine was deeply rooted in the Church's conscience. Every time that the fathers, in defending any truth by passages from Scripture, succeeded so far as to drive their adversaries into the impossibility of defending themselves, otherwise than by denying the full inspiration of the divine testimonies, the Church thought the question was decided. The adversary was tried; he had no more to say for himself; he denied the Scripture to be the Word of God! What more remained to be done, but to com- [p.151] pel him to look his own ill-favoured argument in the face and to say to him, See what you have come to! as one would bid a man who has disfigured himself; look at himself in a glass? And thus the fathers did.

Such are facts of the case; such is the voice of the Church.

We had at first brought together, with the design of giving them here, a long series of passages, taken first from Irenæus,<sup>133</sup> Tertullian,<sup>134</sup> Cyprian,<sup>135</sup> Origen,<sup>136</sup> Chrysostom,<sup>137</sup> Justin Martyr,<sup>138</sup> Epiphanius,<sup>139</sup> Augustine,<sup>140</sup> Athanasius,<sup>141</sup> Hilary,<sup>142</sup> Basil the Great,<sup>143</sup> and Gregory the Great,<sup>144</sup> Gregory of Nyssa,<sup>145</sup> Theodoret,<sup>146</sup> Cyril of Alexandria,<sup>147</sup> then, the most revered

133 Advers. Hæreses, lib. ii. c. 47. Lib. iii. c. 11. Lib. iv. c. 34.

134 De animâ, c. 28, Advers. Marcion. lib. iv. c. 22. De Præscript. advers. hæret., c. 25. Advers. Hermog. c. 22.

135 De Opere et eleemos. p. 197-201. Adv. Quirin., Adv. Judæos, præfat.

136 Hom. xxxix. in Jerem (quoted here ch. VI. sect. 1.) Homil. ii. in cumd. (cap. xix. & I.)

Homil. xxv. in Matth. Ejusdem Philocalia, lib. iv. Commentar. in Matth. p. 227-428, (edit.

Huet.) Homil. xxvii. in Numer. - in Levit., homil. v.

137 Homil. xlix. in Joan. Homil. xl., in Joan. v. Homil. ix., in 2 Tim. iv. Serm. 33, de utilit. lect.

Script. Serm. 3, de Lazaro.

138 Apol. 1. c. 53, and 35, 50, 51. Dial. cont. Tryph., cap. 7. Ad Græcos cohort., c. 8.

139 Σύντομος λόγος περὶ πίστεως. De doctrin. Christi. lib. ii. c. 9. De Pastor., cap. 2. Epist. xlii.

140 Epist. xcvi. (ad Hieronym.) De unitate Ecclesiæ. c. iii. t. ix., p. 341. (Paris, 1694.)

141 Contra Gentes, t. b. p. 1. De Incarnat. Christi. (Parisiis 1627.)

142 Ad Constant. Aug., p. 244. De Trinit. lib. 8. (Parisiis, 1652.)

143 Comment, in Isaiam, t. i. p. 379. (Ed. Bened.) Homil. xxix, advers. calumniantes S. Trinit.

In Ethicis regni xvi. lxxx., cap. 22.

144 Moralia in Job, præfat., c. i.

145 Dialog. de anima et resurrectione, t. i. edit. Græcolat. p. 639. Do cognit. Dei cit. ab.

Euthymnio in Panoplia, t. 8.

146 Dial. i. Ἀρετῶν. Dial. ii. Ἀσύγγυτον. In Exod., Qu. xxvi. In Gen., Quest. xlv.

147 Lib. vii. cont. Jul. Glaphyrorum in Gen. lib. ii.

fathers of after centuries; and, finally, the most holy doctors of the Reformation.<sup>148</sup> But we soon perceived that all these names, were we to give them by themselves, would seem nothing better than an idle appeal to the authority of [p.152] men; and were we to give them along with the passages referred to, in full, we should run into an excessive multiplication of words.

We shall proceed, therefore, with a careful examination of the difficulties and the systems that are opposed to the doctrine of a plenary inspiration. Those difficulties constitute what are objections, and those systems what are rather evasions. The two next chapters we shall devote to the study of both.

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004.

<http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>

Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,

[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

148 See Lardner, vol. ii. p. 172, 488. 475, Haldane, The Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures, p. 167 to 176.

[p.153]

#### **IV. Examination of Objections.**

It is objected that the fallibility of the translators of the Bible, renders the infallibility of the original text illusory; that the fact of the apostles having availed themselves of the merely human version made by the Seventy, renders their divine inspiration more than questionable. Objections are grounded on the various readings presented by different manuscripts, on the imperfections observed in the reasonings and in the doctrines, and on errors discovered in matters of fact. Objectors tell us that the laws of nature, now better understood than formerly, give the lie to certain representations of the sacred authors. Finally, we are told to look to what objectors are pleased to call the admissions made by St Paul. To these difficulties we proceed to reply, taking them one after another; and we can afterwards examine some of the theories, by the help of which some have sought to rid themselves of the doctrine of a plenary inspiration.

##### *Section I. The Translations.*

The first objection may be stated thus. It is sometimes said to us, You assert that the inspiration of the Scriptures extended to the very words of the original text; but wherefore all this verbal exactness of the Holy Word, seeing that, after all, the greater number of Christians can make use of such versions only as are [p.154] more or less inexact? Thus, then, the privilege of such an inspiration is lost to the Church of modern times; for you will not venture to say that any translation is inspired.

This is a difficulty which, on account of its insignificance, we felt at first averse to noticing; but we cannot avoid doing so, being assured that it has obtained some currency among us, and some credit also.

Our first remark on this objection must be, that it is not one at all. It does not bear against the *fact* of the verbal inspiration of the Scriptures; it only contests the advantages of that inspiration. With regard to the greater number of readers, it says, the benefit of such an intervention on the part of God, would. be lost; because, instead of the infallible words of the original, they never can have better than the fallible words of a translation. But no man is entitled to deny a fact,

because he does not at first perceive all the use that may be made of it; and no man is entitled to reject a doctrine for no better reason than that he has not perceived its utility. All the expressions, for example, and all the letters of the Ten *Commandments* were certainly written by the finger of God, from the *aleph* with which they commence, to the *caph* with which they end; yet, would any one venture to say that the credibility of this miraculous fact, is weakened by most unlettered readers, at the present day, being under the necessity of reading the Decalogue in some translation? No one would dare to say so. It must be acknowledged, then, that this objection, without directly attacking the dogma which we defend, only questions its advantages: these, it tells us, are lost to us, in the operation of translating from the original, and in that metamorphosis disappear.

We proceed, then, to show how even this assertion, when reduced to these last terms, rests on no good foundation.

The divine word which the Bible reveals to us, passes through four successive forms before reaching us in a translation. First, it was from all eternity in the mind of God. Next it was passed by him into the mind of [p.155] man. In the third place, under the operation of the Holy Ghost, and by a mysterious process, it passed from the prophets' thoughts, into the types and symbols of an articulate language; it took shape in words. Finally, after having undergone this first translation, alike important and inexplicable, men have reproduced and counter-chalked it, by a new translation, in passing it from one human language into another human language. Of these four operations, the three first are divine; the fourth alone is human and fallible. Shall it be said, that because the last is human, the divinity of the three former should be a matter of indifference to us? Mark, however, that between the third and the fourth - I mean to say, between the first translation of the thought by the sensible signs of a human language, and the second translation of the words by other words - the difference is enormous. Between the doubts that may cleave to us respecting the exactness of the versions, and those with which we should be racked with respect to the correctness of the original text (if not inspired even in its language), the distance is infinite. It is said; of what consequence is it to me that the third operation is effected by the Spirit of God, if the last be accomplished only by the spirit of man? in other words, what avails it to me that the

primitive language be inspired, if the translated version be not so? But people forget, in speaking thus, that we are infinitely more assured of the exactness of the translators, than we could be of that of the original text, in the case of all the expressions not being given by God.

Of this, however, we may become perfectly convinced, by attending to the five following considerations:-

1. The operation by which the sacred writers express with words the mind of the Holy Ghost, is, we have said, itself a rendering not of words by other words, but of divine thoughts by sensible symbols. Now this first translation is an infinitely nicer matter, more mysterious and more liable to error (if God puts not his [p.156] hand to it) than the operation can be afterwards, by which we should render a Greek word of that primitive text, by its equivalent in another tongue. In order to a man's expressing exactly the thought of God, it is necessary, if he be not guided in his language from above, that he have thoroughly comprehended it in its just measure, and in the whole extent and depth of its meaning. But this is by no means necessary in the case of a mere translation. The divine thought being already incarnated, as it were, in the language of the sacred text, what remains to be done in translation is no longer the giving of it a body, but only the changing of its dress, making it say in French what it had already said in Greek, and modestly substituting for each of its words an equivalent word. Such an operation is comparatively very inferior, very immaterial, without mystery, and infinitely less subject to error than the preceding. It even requires so little spirituality, that it may be performed to perfection by a trustworthy pagan who should possess in perfection a knowledge of both languages. The version of an accomplished rationalist who desires to be no more than a translator, I could better trust than that of an orthodox person and a saint, who should paraphrase the text, and undertake to present it to me more complete or more clear in his French than he found it in the Greek or in the Hebrew of the original. And let no one be surprised at this assertion; it is justified by facts. Thus, is not De Wette's translation, among the Germans, preferred at the present day to that even of the great Luther? At least, is there not greater confidence felt in having the mind of the Holy Ghost in the lines of the Basel professor than in those of the great reformer; because the former has always kept very close to the expressions of his text, as a man of learning subject to the rules of

philology alone; while the latter seems at times to have momentarily endeavoured after something more, and sought to make himself interpreter as well as translator? The more, then, one reflects on this first consideration, the [p.157] more immeasurable ought the difference to appear between these two orders of operations; to wit, between the translation of the divine thoughts into the words of a human language, and the translation of the same thoughts into the equivalent terms of another language. No longer, therefore, be it said, “What avails it to me, if the one be human, that the other is divine?”

2. A second character by which we perceive, how different these two operations must be, and by which the making of our versions will be seen to be infinitely less subject to the chances of error than the original text (assuming that to be *uninspired*), is, that while the work required by our translations is done by a great many men of every tongue and country, capable of devoting their whole time and care to it - by men who have from age to age controlled and checked each other, and who have mutually instructed and perfected each other - the original text, on the contrary, behoved to be written at a *given moment*, and by a *single man*. With that man there was none but his God to put him right if he made a mistake, and to supply him with better expressions if he had chosen imperfect ones. If God, therefore, did not do this, no one could have done it. And if that man gave a bad rendering of the mind of the Holy Ghost, he had not, like our translators, friends to warn, predecessors to guide, successors to correct, nor months, years, and ages in which to review and consummate his work. It was done by one man, and done once for all. This consideration, then, further shows how much more necessary the intervention of the Holy Ghost was to the sacred authors than to their translators.

3. A third consideration, which ought also to lead us to the same conclusion, is, that while all the translators of the Scriptures were literate and laborious persons, and versed in the study of language, the sacred authors, on the contrary, were, for the most part, ignorant men, without literary cultivation, without the habit of writing their own tongue, and liable, from that very [p.158] circumstance, if they expressed fallibly the divine revelation, to give us an infallible thought in a faulty way.

4. A fourth very powerful consideration, which will make one feel

still more sensibly the immense difference existing between the sacred writers and their translators, is, that whereas the thought from God passed like a flash of lightning before the soul of the prophet; whereas this thought could nowhere be found again upon earth, except in the rapid expression which was then given to it by the sacred writer; whereas, if he have expressed it ill, you know not where to go in search of its prototype in order to recover the thought meant to be conveyed by God in its purity; whereas, if he have made a mistake, his blunder is for ever irreparable; it must last longer than heaven and earth, it has blemished the eternal book remedilessly, and nobody on earth can correct it; - it is quite otherwise with translators. These, on the contrary, have always the divine text at hand, so as to be corrected and re-corrected, according to the eternal type, until they have become an exact counterpart of it. The inspired word leaves us not; we need not to go in search of it to the third heaven; it is still upon the earth, just as God himself first dictated it to us. You may thus devote ages to its study, in order that the human process of our translation may be subjected to its immutable truth. You can now, after the lapse of a hundred and thirty years, correct Osterwald and Martin, by means of a closer comparison of them with their infallible standard; after the lapse of three hundred and seventeen years, you can correct the work of Luther; after that, of fourteen hundred and forty years, that of St Jerome. God's phraseology is still before us, with which to confront our modern versions, as dictated by God himself, in Hebrew or in Greek, on the day of its being revealed; and, with our dictionaries in your hand, you may, age after age, return to the examination of the infallible expression which it has been his good pleasure to give to the divine thought, until you become assured that the language of the modern ones [p.159] has truly received the counter impression, and given you the most faithful fac-simile of it for your own use. Say no more then, What avails it to me, that the one is divine since the other is human? If you would have a bust of Napoleon, would you say to the sculptor, What avails it to me that your model has been moulded at St Helena on the very face of Bonaparte, seeing that, after all, your copy cannot have been so?

5. In fine, what further distinguishes the first expression which the mind of God has received in the individual words of the sacred book, from its new expression in one of our translations, is that, if you assume

the words of the one to be as little inspired as those of the other, nevertheless, the range of conjectures which you might make on their possible faults would be, as respects the original text, a space without bounds and ever enlarging itself; while that same range, as respects the translations, is a very limited space, which is constantly diminishing the longer you remain in it.

If some friend, returning from the East Indies, where your father has, at a great distance from you, breathed his last, were to bring you from him a last letter, written with his own hand, or dictated by him, word for word, in Bengalee, would that letter's being entirely from him be a matter of indifference to you, because you are not acquainted with the Bengalee language, and can read it only in a translation? Don't you know that you can cause translations of it to be multiplied, until they leave you no more doubt of the original meaning than if you had been a Hindoo? Will you not allow, that after each of these new translations your uncertainties will be always growing less and less, until they cease to be appreciable, as is the case in arithmetic with those fractionary and convergent progressions, the last terms of which are equivalent to zero; while, on the contrary, if the letter were not from your father himself, but from some stranger, who says he has only reproduced his thoughts, then you would find no limits to possible suppositions; and your uncertainties, transported [p.160] into spheres new and boundless, would go on increasing the more you allowed your mind to dwell upon them; as is the case in arithmetic with those ascending progressions, the last terms of which represent infinitude. It is the same with the Bible. If I believe that God has dictated the whole of it, my uncertainties with respect to its translations are confined within a very narrow range; and even in this range, in proportion as it is re-translated, the limits of doubt are constantly drawn in more closely. But if left to think, on the contrary, that God has not entirely dictated it, and that human infirmity may have had its share in it, where shall I stop in assuming that there may be errors? I know not. The apostles were ignorant - shall I say, they were illiterate - they were Jews; they had popular prejudices; they judaized; they platonized; . . . I know not where to stop. I will begin like Locke, and end like Strauss. I will first deny the personality of Satan, as a rabbinical prejudice; I will end with denying that of Jesus Christ, as another prejudice. Between these two terms, in consequence,

moreover, of the ignorance, on many points, to which the apostles were subject, I will proceed, as so many others have done, to admit, in spite of the letter of the Bible, and with the Bible in my hand, that there is no corruption in men, no personality in the Holy Ghost, no divinity in Jesus Christ, no expiation in his blood, no resurrection of the body in the grave, no eternity in future punishments, no anger in God, no devil, no miracle, no damned souls, no hell. St Paul was orthodox, shall I say? as others have done; but he misunderstood his Master. Whereas, on the contrary, if all have been dictated by God in the original, and even to the smallest expression, “to the least iota and tittle,” who is the translator that could seduce me, by his labours, into any one of these negations, and make even the least of these truths disappear from my Bible?

Accordingly, who now can fail to perceive the enormous distance interposed by all these considerations [p.161] between those two texts (that of the Bible and that of the translations), as respects the importance of verbal inspiration? Between the passing of the thoughts of God into human words, and the simple turning of these words into other words, the distance is as wide as from heaven to earth. God was required for the one; man sufficed for the other. Let it no longer be said, then, What would it avail to us that we have verbal inspiration in the one case, if we have not that inspiration in the other case? for between these two terms, which some would put on an equality, the difference is almost infinite.

### *Section II. Use of the Septuagint Translation.*

People insist and say, We agree that the fact of these modern translations does not at all affect the question of the first inspiration of the Scriptures; but we have much more to urge. The sacred authors of the New Testament, when they themselves quote the old Hebrew Scriptures in Greek, employ for that purpose *the Greek translation*, called that of *the Seventy*, executed at Alexandria two centuries and a half before Jesus Christ. Now, no one among the moderns will dare to affirm (as was done in former times) that the Alexandrine interpreters were inspired. Would a man any more dare to contend that that version, still human at the time of Jesus Christ, acquired, by the sole fact of the apostolic quotations, a divinity which it did not previously possess? Would not this strange allegation resemble that of the Council of Trent,

when, it pronounced to be divine apocryphal writings, which the ancient Church rejected from the canon, and which St Jerome called “*fables*, and a medley of gold and clay;”<sup>1</sup> or when it [p.162] pronounced that translation by St Jerome to be authentic, which, at first, in the opinion of St Jerome himself, and thereafter in that of the Church for above a thousand years, was no more than a human work, respectable, no doubt, but imperfect? Would it not further resemble the silly infallibility of Sixtus V., who declared his edition of 1590 to be authentic; or that of his successor, Clement VIII., who, finding the edition of Sixtus V. intolerably incorrect, suppressed it in 1592, in order to substitute in its place another very different, and yet still more *authentic*?<sup>2</sup> Here we gladly recall this difficulty; because, like many others, when more closely examined, it converts the objections into arguments.

No more is required, in fact, than to study the manner in which the apostles employ the Septuagint, in order to see in it a striking sign of the verbal inspiration under which they wrote.

Were a prophet to be sent by God in our day to the churches speaking the French tongue, how shall it be thought he would act in quoting the Scriptures? He would do so in French no doubt; but according to what version? As Osterwald and Martin’s are those most extensively circulated, he would probably make his quotations in the words of one or other of them, in all cases where their translation should seem to him sufficiently exact. But also, notwithstanding our habitual practice and his, he would take care to abandon both those versions, and translate in his own way, as often as the thought intended to be conveyed by the original did not seem to him to be rendered with sufficient fidelity. Nay, he would sometimes even do more. In order to our being enabled to comprehend more fully in what sense he meant to make for us the application of such [p.163] or such a Scripture, he would paraphrase the passage quoted, and in citing it, follow neither the letter of the original text nor that of the translations.

This is precisely what has been done by the sacred writers of the New Testament with respect to the Septuagint.

Although it was the universal practice of the Hellenistic Jews, throughout the whole of the East, to read in their synagogues and to quote in their discussions the Old Testament according

<sup>1</sup> Caveat omnia apocrypha. . . . Sciat multa his admixta vitiosa, et grandis esse prudentiæ aurum in luto quærere. See Epist. ad Lætam. Prolog. Galeat. sive Præfat. ad. lib. Regum. Symbol.

Ruffini, tom. ix. p. 186. See Lardner, vol. v. p. 18-22.

2 See Korholt. De Variis S. Scripturæ editionibus, p. 110-251. Thomas James, Bellum Papale, sive Concordia Discors Sixti V. etc., Lond. 1600. Hamilton's Introduction to the Reading of the Hebrew Scriptures, p. 163, 166.

to that ancient version,<sup>3</sup> the apostles show us the independence of the Spirit that guided them, by the three several methods they follow in their quotations.

First, when the Alexandrine translators seem to them correct, they do not hesitate to conform to the recollections of their Hellenist auditors, and to quote the Septuagint version *literatim* and *verbatim*.

Secondly, and this often occurs when dissatisfied with the work of the Seventy, they amend it, and make their quotations according to the original Hebrew, translating it more correctly.

Thirdly, in fine, when they would point out more clearly in what sense they adduce such or such a declaration of the holy books, they paraphrase it in quoting it. It is then the Holy Ghost who, by their mouth, quotes himself, modifying at the same time the expressions which he had previously dictated to the prophets of his ancient people. One may compare, for example, Mic. v. 2 with Matt. ii. 6; Mal. iii. 1 with Matt. xi. 10; Mark i. 2, and Luke vii. 27, &c. &c.

The learned Horne, in his "Introduction to the Critical Study of the Bible" (vol. i. p. 503,) has ranged under five distinct classes, relatively to the Septuagint version, the quotations made in the New Testament from the Old. We do not here warrant all his distinctions, nor all his figures; but our readers will comprehend the force of our argument, on our informing them [p.164] that that learned author reckons eighty-eight verbal quotations that agree with the Alexandrine translations; sixty-four more that are borrowed from them, but with some variations; thirtyseven that adopt the same meaning with them without employing their words; sixteen that differ from them in order to agree more nearly with the Hebrew; and, finally, twenty that differ from both the Hebrew and the Septuagint, but in which the sacred authors have paraphrased the Old Testament, in order that the sense in which they quote it may be better understood.

These. numerical data will sufficiently enable the reader to form a just idea of the independence claimed by the Holy Ghost with regard to human versions, when he desired to quote, in the New Testament, that which he had previously caused to be written in the Old. Accordingly,

they not only answer the objection - they convert it into a testimony.

### *Section III. The Various Readings.*

We must give up the translations, then, other opponents will say, and admit that they nowise affect the question of the primary inspiration of the original text. But in that very text there are numerous differences among the ancient manuscripts which our Churches consult, and on which our printed editions are based. Confronted with proofs of such a fact, what becomes of the doctrine of verbal inspiration, and what purpose can it serve?

<sup>3</sup> The Talmud even forbids the translation of the Scriptures, except into Greek. (Talmud Megillah, fol. 86.)

Here, too, the answer is easy. We might say at once of the various readings of the manuscripts, what we have said of the translations: Why confound two orders of facts that are absolutely distinct: that of the first inspiration of the Scriptures, and that of the present integrity of the copies that have been made of [p.165] them? If it was God himself that dictated the letter of the sacred oracles, that is a fact past recall; and no more can the copies made of them, than the translations given to us of them, undo that first act.

When a fact is once consummated, nothing that happens subsequently can efface it from the history of the past. There are here, then, two questions which we must carefully distinguish. Was the whole of Scripture divinely inspired? - this is the first question it is that with which we have now to do, Are the copies made of it many centuries afterwards by doctors and monks correct? or are they not correct? - that is the second question. This last can nowise affect the other. Don't proceed, then, to subject the former, by a strange piece of inattention, to the latter; they are independent of each other. A book is from God, or it is not from God. In the latter case, it were idle for me to transcribe it a thousand times exactly - I should not thereby render it divine; and in the former case, I should in vain take a thousand incorrect copies; - neither folly nor unfaithfulness on my part, can undo the fact of its having been given by God. The Decalogue, yet once more we repeat it, was entirely written by the finger of Jehovah on two tables of stone; but if the manuscripts that give it to me at the present day present some various

readings, this second fact would not prevent the first. The sentences, words, and letters of the *Ten Commandments*, would not the less have been all engraven by God. Inspiration of the first text, integrity of the subsequent copies - these are two orders of facts absolutely different, and separated from each other by thousands of stadia, and thousands of years. Beware, then, of confounding what logic, time, and space compel you to distinguish.

It is by precisely a similar process of reasoning, that we reprove the indiscreet lovers of the apocryphal writings. The ancient oracles of God, we tell them, were committed to the Jewish people, as the new oracles were committed afterwards to the Christian people. If, then, [p.166] the Book of Maccabees was a merely human book in the days of Jesus Christ, a thousand decrees of the Christian Church could not have any such effect thereafter as that, in 1560, becoming what it had never been till then, it should be transubstantiated into a divine book.

Did the prophets write the Bible with the words which human wisdom dictated, or with words given them by God? - such is our question. But have they hence faithfully copied from age to age, from manuscripts into manuscripts? - this is yours, perhaps. It is very important no doubt; but it is entirely different from the first. Do not, then, confound what God has separated.

It is true, no doubt, will people say, that the fidelity of one copy does not make the original divine, when it is not so; and the incorrectness of another copy will not make it human, if it was not so. Accordingly, this is not what we maintain. The fact of the inspiration of the sacred text in the days of Moses, or the days of St John, cannot depend upon the copies which we shall have made of it in Europe and Africa, two or three thousand years after them; but though the second of these facts does not destroy the first, it at least renders it illusory, by depriving it of its whole worth and utility.

Now, then, mark to what the objection is confined. The question is no longer about the inspiration of the original text - the whole attack here is directed against its present integrity. It was first a question of doctrine: "Is it declared in the Bible that the Bible is inspired even in its language?" But it is no more now than a question of history, or of criticism: "Have the copyists copied faithfully? are the manuscripts faithful?" Accordingly, we might say nothing now on a position of

which we are not here called upon to undertake the defence; but the answer is easy; I will say more - God has rendered it so triumphant that we will not restrain ourselves from giving it. Besides, the faith of simple minds has been so often disquieted on this subject by a phantasmagoria of learning, that we consider [p.167] it useful here to expose its hollowness. And, although this objection in some sort withdraws us from the field which we had traced out for our ourselves, we will follow it, for the purpose of answering it.

No doubt, had this difficulty been presented to us in the days of Anthony Collins and the *Free Thinkers*, we should not have been left without reply, but we should have felt perhaps some embarrassment, because full light had not then been thrown upon the facts, and because the field of conjectures, as yet unexplored, remained undefined. We know the perplexities of the excellent Bengel on this question; and we know that these led, first, to his laborious researches on the sacred text, and, next, to his pious wonder and gratitude at the preservation of that text.

Of what use, one might have said, is the assurance that the original text was dictated by God eighteen hundred years ago if I have no longer the certainty that the manuscripts of our libraries still present it to me in its purity, and if it be true (as we are assured) that the various readings of these rolls are at least thirty thousand in number?

Such is the old objection: it was specious; but nowadays it is known, by all who have studied it, to be a mere illusion. The Rationalists themselves have admitted that it can no longer be made, and must be given up.

The Lord has watched miraculously over his Word. This the facts of the case have demonstrated.

In constituting as its depositaries, first, the Churches of the Jewish people, and then those of the Christian people, his providence had by this means to see to the faithful transmission of the oracles of God to us. It has done this; and he order to the attainment of this result, it has put different causes in operation, of which we shall have again to speak afterwards. Late learned researches have thrown the clearest light on this great fact. Herculean labours have been bestowed during the whole of the last century (particularly in its last half) and the first part of this, on the task of bringing [p.168] together all the various readings that

either the detailed examination of the manuscripts of holy Scripture preserved in the different libraries of Europe, or the study of the most ancient versions, or the searching out of the innumerable quotations made from our sacred books in all the writings of the fathers of the Church, could furnish; and this immense toil has ended in a result wonderful by its insignificance, and (shall I say?) imposing by its nullity.

As respects the Old Testament, the indefatigable investigations and the four folios of Father Houbigant; the thirty years' labours of John Henry Michaelis; above all, the great Critical Bible and the ten years' study of the famous Kennicott (who consulted five hundred and eighty-one Hebrew manuscripts); and, in fine, Professor Rossi's collection of six hundred and eighty manuscripts; - as respects the New Testament, the no less gigantic investigations of Mill, Bengel, Wetstein, and Griesbach (who consulted three hundred and thirty-five manuscripts for the Gospels alone); the latest researches of Nolan, Matthaei, Lawrence, and Hug; above all, those of Scholz (with his six hundred and seventy-four manuscripts for the Gospels, his two hundred for the Acts, his two hundred and fifty-six for the Epistles of Paul, his ninety-three for the Apocalypse, (without reckoning his fifty-three *Lectionaria*): all these vast labours have so convincingly established the astonishing preservation of that text, copied nevertheless so many thousands of times (in Hebrew during thirty-three centuries, and in Greek during eighteen hundred years), that the hopes of the enemies of religion, in this quarter, have been subverted, and as Michaelis has said, "They have ceased henceforth to look for any thing from those critical researches which they at first so warmly recommended, because they expected discoveries from them that have never been made."<sup>4</sup> The learned Rationalist Eichhorn himself also owns that the different [p.169] readings of the Hebrew manuscripts collected by Kennicott hardly offer sufficient interest to compensate for the trouble they cost!<sup>5</sup> But these very misreckonings, and the absence of those discoveries, have proved a precious discovery for the Church of God. She expected as much; but she is delighted to owe it to the labour of her very adversaries. "In truth," says a learned man of our day, "but for those precious negative conclusions that people have come to, the direct result obtained from the consumption of so many men's lives in these immense researches may

seem to amount to nothing; and one may say that in order to come to it, time, talent, and learning have all been foolishly thrown away.”<sup>6</sup> But, as we have said, this result is immense in virtue of its nothingness, and all-powerful in virtue of its insignificance. When one thinks that the Bible has been copied during thirty centuries, as no book of man has ever been, or ever will be; that it was subjected to all the catastrophes and all the captivities of Israel; that it was transported seventy years to Babylon; that it has seen itself so often persecuted, or forgotten, or interdicted, or burnt, from the days of the Philistines to those of the Seleucidæ; - when one thinks that, since the time of Jesus Christ, it has had to traverse the first three centuries of the imperial persecutions, when persons found in possession of the holy books were thrown to the wild beasts; next the 7th, 8th, and 9th centuries, when false books, false legends, and false decretals, were everywhere multiplied; the 10th century, when so few could read, even among princes; the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries, when the use of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue was punished with death, and when the books of the ancient fathers were mutilated, when so many ancient traditions were garbled and falsified, even to the very acts of the emperors, and to those of the councils; - then we can perceive how necessary it was that the [p.170] providence of God should have always put forth its mighty power, in order that, on the one hand, the Church of the Jews should give us, in its integrity, that Word which records its

4 Michaelis, t. ii. p. 266.

5 Einleitung, 2. Th. s. 700.

6 Wiseman's Discourses on the Relations, etc., ii. Disc. 10.

revolts, which predicts its ruin, which describes Jesus Christ; and, on the other, that the Christian Churches (the most powerful of which, and the Roman sect in particular, interdicted the people from reading the sacred books, and substituted in so many ways the traditions of the middle ages for the Word of God) should nevertheless transmit to us, in all their purity, those Scriptures, which condemn all their traditions, their images, their dead languages, their absolution; their celibacy; which say, that Rome would be the seat of a terrible apostasy, where “the Man of Sin would be seen sitting as God in the temple of God, waging war on the saints, forbidding to marry, and to use meats which God had created;” which say of images, “Thou shalt not bow down to them” - of unknown tongues, “Thou shalt not use them” - of the cup,

“Drink ye all of it” - of the Virgin, “Woman, what have I to do with thee?” - and of marriage, “It is honourable in all.”

Now, although all the libraries in which ancient copies of the sacred books may be found, have been called upon to give their testimony; although the elucidations given by the fathers of all ages have been studied; although the Arabic, Syriac, Latin, Armenian, and Ethiopian versions have been collated; although all the manuscripts of all countries and ages, from the third to the sixteenth century, have been collected and examined a thousand times over, by countless critics, who have eagerly sought out some new text, as the recompense and the glory of their wearisome watchings; although learned men, not content with the libraries of the West, have visited those of Russia, and carried their researches into the monasteries of Mont Athos, Turkish Asia, and Egypt, there to look for new instruments of the sacred text; - “Nothing has been discovered,” says a learned person, already quoted, “not [p.171} even a single reading, that could throw doubt on any one of the passages before considered as certain. All the *variantes*, almost without exception, leave untouched the essential ideas of each phrase, and bear only on points of secondary importance;” such as the insertion or the omission of an adjective or a conjunction, the position of an adjective before or after its substantive, the greater or less exactness of a grammatical construction.

And would we be less rigorous in our demands with respect to the Old Testament? - the famous Indian manuscript, recently deposited in the Cambridge library, will furnish an example.

It is thirty-three years since the pious and learned Claudius Buchanan, while visiting, in the Indian peninsula, the black Jews of Malabar (who are supposed to be the remains of the first dispersion under Nebuchadnezzar), saw in their possession an immense roll, composed of thirty-seven skins, tinged with red, forty-eight feet long, twenty-two inches wide, and which, in its originally entire state, must have had ninety English feet of development. The Holy Scriptures had been traced on it by different hands. There remained one hundred and seventeen columns of beautiful writing; and there was wanting only Leviticus and part of Deuteronomy. Buchanan succeeded in having this ancient and precious monument, which served for the worship of the synagogue, committed to his care, and he afterwards deposited it in the Cambridge library.

The impossibility of supposing that this roll had been taken from a copy brought by European Jews, was perceived from certain evident marks. Now, Mr Yeates lately submitted it to the most attentive examination; and took the trouble to collate it, word by word, letter by letter, with our Hebrew edition of Van der Hooght. He has published the results of his researches. And what have they been? Why, this: that there do not exist, between the text of India and that of the West, [p.172] above forty small differences, not one of which is of sufficient importance to lead to even a slight change in the meaning and interpretation of our ancient text; and that these are but the additions or retrenchments of an ך or a ך - letters the presence or absence of which, in Hebrew, cannot alter the import of the word.<sup>7</sup>

We know the peculiar character, among the Jews, of those Massorethes, or doctors of tradition, whose whole profession consisted in transcribing the Scriptures, we know to what a pitch these learned men carried respect for the letter; and when we read the rules that regulated their labours, we can comprehend what use the providence of the Lord, who had “committed his oracles to the Jewish people,” knew to make of their reverential respect, their strictness, and even their superstition. In each of the books they counted the number of verses, of words, of letters: they could have told you, for example, that the letter א appears forty-two thousand three hundred and seventy-seven times in the Bible, the letter ב thirty-eight thousand two hundred and eighteen times, and so on: they would have scrupled at changing the position of a single letter evidently displaced; they would only have called your attention to it on the margin, and would have supposed some mystery involved in it; they would have told you the middle letter in the Pentateuch, and that which is in the middle of each of the particular books of which it is composed: they never would permit themselves to retouch their manuscript; and if any mistake had escaped from them, they would have rejected the papyrus or the parchment which it had spoiled, and would have begun anew; for they were equally interdicted from ever correcting any of their blunders, and from preserving for their sacred volume a parchment or skin that had suffered any erasure.

This intervention of God’s providence in the preser- [p.173] vation of the Old Testament becomes still more striking in our eyes, if we compare the astonishing integrity of the original Hebrew (at the close of

so many centuries) with the rapid and profound alteration which the Greek version of the Septuagint had undergone in the days of Jesus Christ (after the lapse of only two hundred years). Notwithstanding that that book had acquired throughout the whole East, after the almost universal propagation of the Greek language, a semicanonical authority, first among the Jews and then among the Christians; notwithstanding its being afterwards the only text to which the fathers of the East and of the West (with the exception of Origen and of Jerome) had recourse for what they knew of the Old Testament, the only one that was commented on by the Chrysostoms and the Theodoretts - the only one whence such men as Athanasius, Basil, and Gregory of Nazianzus drew their arguments; notwithstanding that the Western no more than the Eastern world had any better source of illumination, during so many ages, than that borrowed light (seeing that the ancient Italian Vulgate, which was in universal use, had been translated from the Greek of the Septuagint, and not from the Hebrew of the original); yet hear what the learned tell us of the alteration of that important monument - of the additions, changes, and interpolations to which

7 See Christian Observer, vol. iii. p. 170. Examen d'un exemplaire Indien du Pentateuque, p. 8. Horne's Introduction and Appendix, p. 95, edition 1818.

it had been subjected, first through the doings of the ancient Jews before the days of Jesus Christ, after that by the unbelieving Jews, and later still through the heedlessness of Christian copyists: "The evil was such (*mirum in modum*)," says Dr Lee, "that in certain books the ancient version could hardly be recognised; and when Origen, in the year 221, had devoted twenty-eight years of his noble life in searching for different manuscripts of it, with the view of doing for that text (in his Tetrapla and his Hexapla) what modern critics have done for that of the Old and New Testaments, not only could he not find any copy that was correct, but he further made matters worse. Through the unskilfulness of the copy- [p.174] ists (who neglected the transcriptions of his obelisks, asterisks, and other marks), the greater number of his marginal corrections found their way into the text; so that new errors having spread there, one could no longer, in the time of Jerome, distinguish between his annotations and the primitive text."<sup>8</sup> We repeat, these facts, placed in contrast with the astonishing preservation of the Hebrew text (older than that of the LXX. by more than twelve hundred years), proclaim loudly enough how necessary it was that the mighty hand of

God should intervene in the destinies of the sacred book.

So much for the Old Testament. But let it not be thought that the Providence that watched over that sacred book, and which committed it to the Jews (Rom. iii. 1, 2), has done less for the protection of the oracles of the New Testament, committed by it to the new people of God. It has not left to the latter less cogent motives to gratitude and feelings of security.

Here we would appeal, by way of testimony, to the late experience of the authors of a version of the New Testament which has just been published in Switzerland, and in the long labours of which we ourselves had a part. A single trait may enable all classes of readers to understand how very insignificant are the different readings presented by the manuscripts. The translators to whom we refer followed, without the smallest deviation, what is called the received edition, that is to say, the Greek text of Elzevir, 1624, so long adopted by all our Churches; but as, in conformity with the original plan of the work they had undertaken, they had first of all to introduce into their original text the various readings that have been most approved by the criticism of the last century, they very often found themselves embarrassed, from perceiving the impossibility of expressing, even in the most literal [p.175] French, the new shade of meaning introduced by that correction into their Greek. The French language, in the most scrupulous version, has not flexibility enough to enable it to assume these differences of manner, so as to put them in proper relief; just as the casts taken from the face of a king reproduce in brass his noble features, yet without being capable of marking every vein and wrinkle.

We desire, however, to give such of our readers as are strangers to sacred criticism, two or three other and still more intelligible means of estimating that providence which has for thirty centuries watched over our sacred texts.

8 Proleg. in Bibl. Polyglott. Bagsteriana (iv. sect. 2.)

The first is as follows: We would bid them compare the two Protestant translations by Osterwald and Martin. There are few modern versions that come so close to each other. The old version of the Geneva pastors having been taken as the basis of both - both having been written at nearly the same time and in the same spirit - they differ so little, especially in the New Testament, that our Bible societies distribute them

indifferently, and that one finds it hard to say which of the two ought to be preferred. Nevertheless, if you take the trouble to note their differences, taking all things into account, as has been done on comparing our four hundred manuscripts of the New Testament, the one with the other, we affirm beforehand (and rather think that in this we under-state the truth), that these two French texts are three times, and in many chapters ten times, wider from each other than the Greek text of our printed editions is, we will not say only from the least esteemed of the Greek manuscripts of our libraries, but FROM ALL THEIR MANUSCRIPTS PUT TOGETHER. Hence we will venture to say, that were some able and ill-meaning person (such as we may suppose the wretched Voltaire or the too celebrated Anthony Collins to have been in the last century) to study to select at will, out of all the manuscripts of the East and the West, when placed before him, the worst readings and the variations most remote from our received text, with the perfidious intention of composing at pleasure the most faulty text - such a man, we say (even were he to adopt such various readings as should have in their favour no more than ONE SOLE manuscript out of the four or five hundred of our libraries), could not, in spite of all his mischievous inclination, produce a Testament, as the result of his labours, that would be less close to that of our Churches than Martin is to Osterwald. Further, you might send it abroad instead of the true text, with as little inconvenience as you would find in giving French Protestants Martin rather than Osterwald, or Osterwald rather than Martin; and with far less scruple than you would feel in circulating De Sacy's version among the followers of the Church of Rome.

No doubt these hast books are only translations, whereas all the Greek manuscripts profess to be original texts; and it must be admitted that, in this respect, our comparison is very imperfect: but it is not less fitted to re-assure the friends of the Word of God, by enabling them to understand the extreme insignificance of the various readings.

Meanwhile, what follows is something more direct and more precise.

In order to give all our readers some measure at once of the number and of the harmlessness of the readings that have been collected together in the manuscripts of our libraries, we proceed to present two specimens of these. It will consist, first, of a schedule containing the

first eight verses of the Epistle to the Romans, with ALL THE VARIOUS READINGS relating to these IN ALL THE MANUSCRIPTS of the East and of the West. This will be followed by a schedule of the whole epistle, with ALL THE CORRECTIONS that the celebrated Griesbach, the oracle of modern criticism, thought he ought to introduce into it.

We have taken these passages at random, and declare that we have not been led to make choice of them [p.177] in preference to others, by any reason bearing upon our argument.

We feel gratified at placing these short documents before the eyes of persons who are not called by their position to follow out, of themselves, the investigations of sacred criticism, and whose minds, nevertheless, may have been somewhat discomposed by the language, at once mysterious and imposing, which the rationalists of the last century have so often employed on the subject. To hear them speak, would you not have said that modern science was about to give us a new Bible, to bring down Jesus Christ from the throne of God, to restore to man, when calumniated by our theology, all his titles to innocence, and to set to rights all the dogmas of our old orthodoxy?

As a first term of comparison, our columns will present first of all, in the eight first verses of the Epistle to the Romans, the differences betwixt the one text of Martin (1707) and the one text of Osterwald, (Bagster's edition), while the following columns, instead of comparing any one sole manuscript with any other sole manuscript whatsoever, will present the differences between *our received text* and ALL THE MANUSCRIPTS that one has been able to collect down to Griesbach. That learned and indefatigable person, for the Epistle to the Romans, scrutinized first of all seven manuscripts written WITH UNCIAL LETTERS (or Greek capitals), and it is thought, from thirteen to fourteen centuries old, (the *Alexandrine* in the British Museum; that of the *Vatican*, and that of Cardinal *Passionei* at Rome; that of Ephrem at Paris; that of St Germain, that of Dresden, and that of Cardinal *Coislin*); and after that, a hundred and ten manuscripts in *small letters*, and thirty others, brought for the most part from Mount Athos, and consulted by the learned Matthei, who travelled long for that purpose in Russia and the East.

For the four Gospels, the same Griesbach had opportunities of

consulting as many as three hundred and thirty-five manuscripts.

[p.178]

*Various Readings. First Table.*

OSTERWALD'S TEXT

Ver. 2. qu'il.

--- promis auparavant

... 3. de la race

... 4. et qui salon l'Esprit ...

--- a été

--- a été declare.

--- avec puissance.

--- par sa resurrection.

--- L'Esprit de sainteté.

--- *Savoir*.

--- J. C. notre Seigneur.

... 5. afin d'amener tous les

--- Gentils a l'obeissance

--- de la foi.

... 6. du nombre desquels

--- vous êtes aussi, vous

--- qui avez été appelés.

... 7. appelés et saints.

--- la grace et la paix

--- vous *soiwnvnt données*

--- do in pact do Dieu notre

--- pwvre

--- et de

--- notre Seigneur J. C.

... 8. Avant toutes choses.

--- au sujet de vous tous.

--- est celebre.

MARTIN'S TEXT (1707.)

lequel.

auparavant promis.

de la senence.

et qul a été selon, ...

l'Esprit.

a été pleinement déclaré.

en puissance.

--- par la resurrection.

l'Esprit de sanctification.

c'est a dire.

notre Seigneur J. C.

afin qu'il y ait obeissance de

foi parmi tous les Gentils.

entre lesquels

aussi vous etes, vous

qui etes appelés.

appelés *à etre* saints.

grace vous soit et paix

vous soient données

de par Dieu notre pwvre

*et de par*

le Seigneur J. C.

Premierement.

touchant vous tous.

est renommée.

These differences between the two French texts are sufficiently insignificant; and were one to tell us that, in all these verses, one or other of the two is inspired of God, our faith would receive great aid

from this. Now it will be seen that the various readings of the Greek manuscripts are still more insignificant.

Let us now examine, on the same verses, the table containing the received text, compared with all the different readings that could be presented by the hundred and fifty Greek manuscripts collected and consulted for the Epistle to the Romans. [p.179]

Here we shall not point out either the differences presented by the ancient translations, or those that belong only to the punctuation (that element being almost null in the most ancient manuscripts).

We shall translate the first column (that of the received text) according to the old version, which is more literal than Osterwald's; and we shall also endeavour to render the Greek readings of the second column as exactly as possible.

### *Second Table.*

THE RECEIVED TEXT - (THAT - - - OF ELZIVER, 1624.) - - - - - -	VARIOUS READINGS, COLLECTED FROM AMONG ALL THE GREEK MANUSCRIPTS UNITED.
Ver 1. No difference.	
... 2. by his prophets. - - - - -	by the prophets. <i>(In a single Parisian manuscript.)</i>
... 3. who was made. - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -	who was begotten. <i>(In a single Upsala manuscript, and by the mere change of two letters.)</i>
... 4. and declared. - - - - - - - - - - - - - - -	and predeclared. <i>(In only one of the twenty-two manuscripts of the Barberini Library.)</i>
... 5. No difference.	
... 6. No difference.	
... 7. that be in Rome, beloved called. - - - - - of God, called.	who are in the love of God,

-----	<i>(A single manuscript - that of</i>
-----	<i>Dresden, in uncial letters.)</i>
-----	that be in Rome, called.
-----	<i>(Only two manuscripts - that of</i>
-----	<i>St Germain, in uncial letters,</i>
-----	<i>and a Roman one, in small letters.)</i>
----- from God our Father.	from God the Father.
-----	<i>(A single Upsala manuscript.)</i>
... 8. First.	First.
-----	<i>(The difference untranslatable. It</i>
-----	<i>is found in only one manuscript.)</i>
----- for you all.	with respect to <i>you</i> all.
-----	<i>(Two manuscripts.)</i>

Here we have nine or ten different readings, of no importance in themselves; and, moreover, they have in [p.180] their favour only one or two manuscripts of the hundred and fifty open to consultation on those eight verses, with the exception of the last (“for you all,” instead of “with respect to you all”), which reckons in its favour twelve manuscripts, four of which are in uncial letters.

The differences between Osterwald’s and Martin’s translations are three times as numerous; and, generally speaking, these differences are far more important in point of meaning. This comparison, were we to continue it through the whole New Testament, would bear the same character, and become even still more insignificant.

Nevertheless, those of our readers who have hitherto been strangers to such researches will not be displeased, we believe, at our offering, in a third table, a fresh method of estimating the harmlessness of the variations, and the nullity of the objection that has been drawn from them.

This last table will present the totality of the corrections which, according to the learned Griesbach, the father of sacred criticism, ought to be introduced into the text of the Epistle to the Romans, after the prolonged study of the extant manuscripts to which he had devoted himself; and after all that had been done by his predecessors in the same field of research.

No one who has not entered on these researches, can form a just

idea of the immensity of those labour's.

Before perusing this third table, however, we would have the reader to know –

*First*, That Griesbach is, in general, charged by the learned (such as Mattæi, Nolan, Lawrence, Scholz, and others) with an excessive eagerness for the admission of new readings into the ancient text. This tendency is explained by the habits of the human heart. The learned Whitby had, before that, charged Dr Mill, not without some foundation, with the same fault, although he had never ventured on so many corrections as Griesbach.

*Secondly*, Observe, further, that in this table we give [p.181] not only those corrections which the learned critic was fully persuaded people ought *to adopt*, but those also which he has said were as yet only *doubtful* in his eyes, and not to be confidently preferred to the generally received text.

### ***Third Table. Griesbach's Corrections, Extending to the Whole of the Epistle to the Romans.***

RECEIVED TEXT. - SUBSTANTIALLY	NEW TEXT. - CORRECTED BY
OUR ENGLISH VERSION.	GRIESBACH.

#### CHAPTER I.

Ver. 13. that I might have some  
----- fruit.

that I might have some fruit.

-----  
-----

*(There is here a mere inversion of  
the words.)*

... 16. I am not ashamed.

I am not ashamed.

-----  
-----

*(Difference cannot be explained  
by translation.)*

- the gospel of Christ.

the gospel.

... 19. for God.

for God.

-----  
-----

*(Difference cannot be explained.)*  
glorified him not.

... 21. glorified him not.

*(Difference one of orthography.)*

... 24. Wherefore God also.

Wherefore God.

... 27. And likewise

And likewise.

-----  
-----

*(Difference not translatable.)*

... 29. with all unrighteousness,  
----- fornication, wickness.

with all unrighteousness, wickedness.

... 31. without natural affection,  
 ----- implacable, unmerciful.

Ver. 8. indignation and wrath.  
 ... 13. the hearers of the law.  
 -----  
 -----

Ver. 22. unto all and upon all  
 ----- them that believe.  
 ... 25. through the faith.  
 ... 28. Therefore we conclude,  
 ----- that a man is justified  
 ----- by the faith.  
 ... 29. is he not.  
 -----  
 -----

Ver. 1. What shall we then say  
 ----- that Abraham hath  
 ----- found.  
 ----- Abraham our father.  
 ... 4. as a debt.  
 ... 12. in the circumcision.  
 ... 13. heir of the world.  
 -----  
 -----  
 ... 19. And being not weak in  
 ----- faith, he considered  
 ----- not.

Ver. 14. to Moses.  
 -----

Ver. 1. Shall we continue.  
 -----  
 -----  
 ... 11. yourselves to be dead.  
 ----- through Jesus Christ,  
 ----- our Lord.  
 ... 12. that ye should obey it  
 ----- in the lusts thereof.  
 ... 16. whether of sin unto  
 ----- death, or of obedience

without natural affection, unmerciful.

## CHAPTER II.

wrath and indignation.  
 the hearers of the law.  
*(The mere absence of the  
 article.)*

## CHAPTER III.

unto all them who believe.

through faith.  
 In fact we conclude, that a man  
 is justified by faith.

is he not.  
*Difference not  
 translatable.)* [p.182]

## CHAPTER IV.

What shall we then say, that hath  
 found Abraham.

Abraham our ancestor.  
 as debt.  
 in circumcision.  
 heir of the world.  
*(A difference that cannot  
 be rendered.)*  
 and did not, weak in the faith,  
 consider.

## CHAPTER V.

to Moses.  
*(Deference in spelling.)*

## CHAPTER VI.

Shall see continue.  
*(Pronoun understood  
 - not expressed.)*  
 yourselves dead.  
 through Jesus Christ.

that ye should obey *it*.

whether of sin, or of obedience  
 unto righteousness.

----- unto righteousness.

# CHAPTER VII.

Ver. 6. the law by which....

being dead to the *law* by which.

----- being dead

... 10. the commandment

the commandment which.

----- which

-----

*(Difference of a simple accent.)*

... 14. Carnal.

carnal.

-----

*(Difference of a letter.)*

... 18. I find not.

I find not.

-----

*(Difference of orthography.)* [p.183]

# CHAPTER VIII.

Ver. 1. to them which are in

To them which are in Christ

----- Jesus Christ, who walk

Jesus.

----- not after the flesh but

----- after the Spirit.

----- *(The words left out here re-occur*

----- *at verse 4.)*

... 11. by his Spirit that dwelleth

on account of his Spirit that

----- in you.

dwelleth in you.

... 26. our infirmities,

our infirmity.

----- what we should pray for,

what we should pray for.

----- *(Difference cannot be rendered.)*

----- maketh intercession for

maketh intercession with groanings.

----- us with groanings.

... 36. For thy sake.

for thy sake.

----- *(Difference untranslatable.)*

... 38. nor angels, nor principalities,

nor angels, nor principalities, nor

----- nor powers,

things present, nor things to

----- nor things present, nor

come, nor powers.

----- things to come.

# CHAPTER IX.

Ver. 11. neither good nor evil

neither good nor evil that the

----- that the purpose, according

purpose of God according to

----- to the election

the election.

----- of God.

----- *(Differences not easily rendered.)*

... 15. He saith to Moses.

he saith to Moses.

----- *(Difference in spelling.)*

... 32. as it were by the works

as it were by works.

----- of the law.

for they stumbled.

they stumbled.

... 33. whosoever believeth on

he that believeth on him.

---- him.

## CHAPTER X.

Ver. 1. prayer to God for Israel.

prayer to God for them.

---- that they might be

that they might be saved.

---- saved.

---- (*Difference cannot be expressed.*)

... 5. Moses.

Moses.

---- (*Different spelling.*)

... 15. bring glad tidings.

bring glad tidings.

---- (*Difference cannot be translated.*)

... 19. Did not Israel know?

Did it not know, Israel?

---- Moses.

Moses.

---- (*Difference in spelling.*) [p.184]

## CHAPTER XI.

Ver. 2. against Israel, saying:

against Israel: Lord....

---- Lord....

... 3. and they have digged

they have digged down the altars.

---- down the altars.

... 6. And if by grace, then it

And if by grace, then it is no

---- is no more of works;

more of works; otherwise grace

---- otherwise grace is no

is no more grace.

---- more grace. But if

---- it be of works, then it

---- is no more grace;

---- otherwise work is no

---- more work.

... 7. he hath not obtained.

he hath not obtained.

---- (*Difference not translatable.*)

... 19. The branches were broken

branches were broken off.

---- off.

... 21. spare not thee.

spare not thee.

---- (*Difference cannot be rendered.*)

... 23. And they also.

and they also.

---- (*Difference in spelling.*)

... 30. and as ye have been

and as ye have been in times

---- yourselves in times

past.

---- past.

## CHAPTER XII.

Ver. 2. And be not conformed,

And that ye be not conformed..

---- ... but be ye transformed.

.. but that ye be transformed.

---- by the renewing of your

by the renewing of the mind.

---- mind.

... 11. serving the Lord.

serving the occasion.

---- (*The difference lies but in two*

---- letters the one changed, the other  
---- transposed.)

... 20. Therefore if thine enemy if thine enemy hunger.  
---- hunger.

### CHAPTER XIII

Ver. 1. but of God; and the but from God, and those that be.

---- powers that be.

---- are ordained of God.

are ordained of God.

---- (*Difference not translatable.*)

... 8. but that ye love one

but that ye one another love.

---- another.

... 9. thou shalt not steal,

Thou shalt not steal, thou shalt

---- thou shalt not bear

not covet.

---- false witness, thou

---- shalt not covet.

[p.185]

### CHAPTER XIV.

Ver. 9. Christ both died, and

Christ both died and lived that.

---- rose, and revived that.

(*The difference lies only in adding*

---- two letters.).

... 14. Nothing is unclean of

Nothing is unclean of itself

---- itself.

(*Difference untranslatable.*)

### CHAPTER XV.

Ver. 1. We then that are strong

(*Griesbach thinks that probably*

---- ought to.

here ought to be placed the three

---- verses at the end of the Epis-

---- tle:) Now, to him . . . We

---- then who are strong ought to.

---- (*The question is merely about a*

---- transposition; and one which

---- Scholz has not adopted.)

... 2. Let every one of us

(*A difference that cannot be rendered.*)

---- please.

... 4. For whatsoever things

(*A difference that cannot be rendered.*)

---- were written aforetime

---- ... were written.

... 8. Now I say.

for I say.

... 19. by time power of the Spirit

by the power of the Spirit

---- of God.

... 24. I will come to you whensoever

whensoever I take my journey

---- I take my journey

into Spain, I hope that I shall

---- Into Spain, and I

see you.

---- hope that I shall see

you.

... 29. in the fulness of the

in the fulness of the blessing of

---- blessing of the gospel  
---- of Christ.

Christ.

CHAPTER XVI.

Ver. 2. for she hath been a  
---- succourer.

*(The difference cannot be rendered.)*

... 3. Priscilla.

Prisca.

... 5. Who is the first fruits  
---- of Achaia.

Who is the first fruits of Asia.

... 6. Who bestowed much  
---- labour on us.

Who bestowed much labour on  
you.

... 18. serve not our Lord Jesus  
---- Christ.

Serve not our Lord Christ.

... 20. The grace of our Lord  
---- Jesus Christ be with  
---- you! Amen.

the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ  
be with you.

... 25. Now to him that is of  
---- power....

*(These words according to (Griesbach,  
ought rather to be placed*

---- at the beginning of chapter XV..

[p.186]

Here, then, the thing is evident: such is the real insignificance of the various readings about which so much noise was made at first. Such has been the astonishing preservation of the Greek manuscripts of the New Testament that have been transmitted to us.

After the copying and recopying of the sacred text, whether in Europe, in Asia, or in Africa, whether in monasteries, on in colleges, or in palaces, or in the houses of the clergy (and this, too, almost without interruption, during the long course of fifteen hundred years); - after that during the three last centuries, and, above all, in the hundred and thirty years that have just elapsed, so many noble characters, so many ingenious minds, so many learned lives have been consumed in labours hitherto unheard of for their extent, admirable for their sagacity, and scrupulous as those of the Massorethes; - after having scrutinized all the Greek manuscripts of the New Testament that are buried in the private, or monastic, or national libraries, of the East and of the West; - after these have been compared, not only with all the old translations, Latin, Armenian, Sahidic, Ethiopic, Arabic, Selavonian, Persian, Coptic, Syrian, and Gothic, of the Scriptures, but further, with all the ancient fathers of time Church, who have quoted them in their innumerable writings, in Greek and in Latin; - after so many researches, take this single example, as a specimen of what people have been able to find!

Judge of the matter by this one epistle which you have before you. It is the longest and most important of the epistles of the New Testament, “the golden key of the Scriptures” (as it has been called), “the ocean of Christian doctrine.” It contains four hundred and thirty-three verses, and in these four hundred and thirty-three verses, ninety-six Greek words that are met with nowhere else in the New Testament. And how many (admitting even all the corrections that have been adopted, or only preferred by Griesbach), how many have you found, in these, of readings that go to change, even slightly, the meaning of some phrase? You have [p.187] seen five such! And, further, what are these? We shall repeat them; they are as follows:-

The first (chap. vii. 6) instead of “*That in which... being dead,*” Gniesbach reads, “*Being dead to that in which.*” And note well that here in the Greek, the difference depends only on the change of a single letter (an *o* instead of an *e*); and besides that, the greater number of manuscripts were so much in favour of the old text that, since Griesbach’s time, Mr Tittman, in his edition of 1824, has rejected this correction, and Mr Lachman has done so also, in his edition of 1831 (Scholz, however, has retained it).

The second is as follows, chapter xi. 6:-

Instead of, “*And if by grace, then is it no more of works; otherwise grace is no more grace; but if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work,*” Griesbach takes away the latter half of this phrase.

The third is as follows, chapter xii. 11:-

Instead of, “*Serving the Lord,*” Griesbach reads, “*Serving the occasion.*” Note that the correction depends only on the change of *two letters* in one of the Greek words, and that, moreover, it does not appear to be justified by the number of the manuscripts. Further here, Whitley told Mill that more than thirty manuscripts, that all the ancient translations, that Clement of Alexandria, St Basil, St Jerome, all the scholiasts of the Greeks, and all those of the Latins with the exception of Ambrose, followed the old text; and the two learned men whom we have just named (Lachman and Tittman), the one labouring at Berlin, the other a professor at Leipsic, have restored time old text, in their respective editions of the New Testament. This has been done also by Scholz, in his edition of 1836, which the learned world seems to prefer

to all that leave preceded it.

The fourth is as follows, chapter vi. 16:-

Instead of, “*Whether of sin unto death or of righteousness,*” Griesbach reads, “*Whether of sin or of* [p.188] *righteousness;*” but he himself puts at the place the simple sign of a feeble probability; and Tittman and Lachman, in their respective editions, have further rejected this correction. Scholz, following their example, has equally rejected it.

The fifth is as follows, chapter xvi. 5:-

Instead of, “*The first fruits of Achaia,*” Griesbach reads, “*The first fruits of Asia.*”

Here we have taken no notice of the words that are taken away from the first paragraph of chapter viii., because we find them again at the 4th verse.

We see, then, the amount of the whole: such is the admirable integrity of the Epistle to the Romans. According to Griesbach five *insignificant corrections*, in the whole epistle - according to more modern critics ONLY TWO, and these the most insignificant of the five; - and according to Scholz THREE!

We repeat, that we have chosen the Epistle to the Romans, as a specimen, only because of its length and its importance. We have not given ourselves the time to examine whether it presents more or fewer various readings than any other part of the New Testament. We have run over, for example, in Griesbach, while reviewing these last pages, the EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS, written at the same time and on the same subject with the Epistle to the Romans; and there we have been unable to find more than the three following corrections that can affect the sense, or, to speak more correctly, the form of the sense:-

Chap. iv. 17. “They would exclude us” - *say*, “They would exclude you.”

Chap. iv. 26. “She is the mother of us all” - *say*, “She is the mother of us.”

Chap. v. 19. “Adultery, fornication, uncleanness” - *say*, “Fornication, uncleanness.”

These simple schedules, in our opinion, will speak more loudly to our readers than all our general assertions could do. Of this we ourselves have felt the happy experience. We had read, no doubt, what others [p.189] before us have been able to say on the insignificance of the

different readings presented by the manuscripts; and we had often studied the various readings of Mill and the severe reproaches of his adversary Whitby;<sup>9</sup> we had examined the writings of Wetstein, of Griesbach, of Lachman, and of Tittman; but when, on two occasions, while taking part in the work of a new translation of the New Testament, we have been called upon to correct the French text according to the most esteemed various readings, first to introduce these into it, and afterwards to remove them out of it again, and to replace there in French the sense conveyed by the old reading; then we have had on two occasions, as it were, an intuition of that astonishing preservation of the Scriptures, and we have felt ourselves penetrated with gratitude towards that wonderful providence which has not ceased to watch over the oracles of God, in order to preserve their integrity to this point.

<sup>9</sup> *Examen variantium lectionum*, J. Millii. Lond. 1710.

Let its true value be then assigned to the objection that has been made to us.

Let it be shown us, for example, how three or four various readings that we have passed under review in the Epistle to the Romans, and which, in the opinion of the most modern critics, are reduced to two or to three, could render the fact of its original inspiration illusory for us.

No doubt, in these three or four passages, as well as in those of the other sacred books where the true word of the text might be contested, no doubt there, and there alone, of the two different readings of the manuscripts, one is the inspired word, and not the other; no doubt people must in this small number of cases divide or suspend their confidence between two expressions; but such is the extent that uncertainty reaches; such the point beyond which it must not go.

It is reckoned, that of the seven thousand nine hundred and fifty-nine verses of the New Testament, there [p.190] hardly exist ten or twelve in which the corrections that have been introduced by the new readings of Griesbach and Scholz, as the result of their immense researches, have any weight at all. Further, in most instances they consist but in the difference of a single word, and sometimes even of a single letter.

We should be doing well, perhaps, to point these out here also, as an addition to those to which we have directed the reader's attention in the Epistle to the Romans.

The twelve or thirteen following have usually been regarded as the most important among the various readings collected by Griesbach, and more recently by Scholz. The four first even have appeared the most serious, only because they strike at the divinity of Jesus Christ.

1st, (Acts xx. 28.) - *Instead of* - “Feed the Church of God, which he hath bought with his own blood,”

*The text of Griesbach bears* - “Feed the Church of the Lord, which he hath bought with his own blood.”

Here the difference of the reading preferred by Griesbach consists in A SINGLE LETTER (KY, instead of ΘY). Scholz even preserves the old text.

2d, (1 Tim. iii. 16.) - *Instead of* - “And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness, God was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit.”

*Some manuscripts bear* - “Without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness, which was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit.”

*But some other manuscripts adopted by Griesbach bear* - “Great is the mystery of godliness, he who was steadfast in the flesh was justified in the Spirit.” . . . .

Here the difference is still no more than that of a single letter, or even only that of two strokes of a letter (some manuscripts instead of ΘΣ, having ΟΣ and others Ο).

Scholz has not admitted Griesbach’s correction. Almost all the Greek manuscripts, says he, hear Θεός (God). He assures us he has found it in eighty-six manuscripts, examined by himself. [p.191]

3d, (Jude 4.) - *Instead of* - “Who deny our only ruler, God and Saviour, Jesus Christ,”

*The text of Griesbach and that of Scholz bears* - “Who deny our only master and Lord Jesus Christ?”

Here the difference is only in these two letters (ΘN, God), omitted in the manuscripts which Griesbach has preferred.

We approve of the adversaries of the divinity of Jesus Christ attaching importance to these three first corrections, in respect of criticism (for every thing is of importance in the Scripture), but in respect of doctrine, we cannot comprehend how they should do so; inasmuch as, by their own admission, there are many other passages

without various readings, in which our Lord is called by the name of God, of true God, of the great God. No manuscript, for example, presents variations on the first verse of the Gospel of St John: “*in the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.*”<sup>10</sup> So, too, no Greek manuscript whatsoever presents a variation in the reading of that verse of the Epistle to Titus (ii. 13) - “*Looking for the glorious appearance of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ.*”<sup>11</sup>

4th, (1 John v. 6, 7.) - *Instead of* – “There are three that bear witness [in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are ONE (ἓΝ); and there are three that bear witness] in the earth, [p.192] the Spirit, and the water, and the blood; and these three agree in that ONE” (τὸ ἓΝ).

*Griesbach’s text bears* – “There are three that bear witness on time earth: the Spirit, the water, and the blood, and the three agree in that ONE” (τὸ ἓΝ).

Here, without doubt, there is the most serious variation, and, at the same time, that which is the most justified by the testimony of the manuscripts that have been preserved down to the present day (more than a hundred and forty against three), as well as by the universal silence of

10 One sole manuscript, among three hundred and fifty, that of Stephanus, of the 8th or 9th century, puts an article before the name of *God*, which would not even change the meaning here.

11 We know that Mr Wordsworth, to ascertain the meaning that was given to that passage and the following (Eph. v. 5; 2 Thes. i. 12; 2 Tim. iv. i; Jude 4; 2 Pet. i. 1; James i. 1; 1 Tim. i. 1), at the time when the Greek was a living tongue, was not afraid to consult the voluminous writings of seventy Greek and sixty Latin contemporary fathers, and that he saw that they invariably put the same sense on these constructions, as designating one and the same persome. In the space of a thousand years (from the 2d to time 12th century) he found fifty-four authorities of Greek fathers and sixty of Latin fathers, unanimously giving the same meaning to those words of Paul (Titus ii. 13): Our great *God and Saviour*. The heretics themselves, says he, during the long triumph of Arianism, never once imagined translating this passage otherwise than as we do. No doubt (said the Arian bishop Maximin in the 5th century) the Son, according to the apostle, is not a petty God (non pusillus sed magnus Deus) but a great God, according to these words of Paul: Looking for” . . . - (See Wordsworth’s Six Letters to Granville Sharpe.)

the Greek fathers. We should be travelling out of our subject were we to undertake to discuss here the historical testimonies<sup>12</sup> and the grammatical considerations that plead, on the contrary, for retaining the old reading. We shall confine ourselves to these two remarks by Bishop Middleton:- 1. Why is the word *three, the three*, in the masculine in the

Greek (τρεῖς οἱ μαρτυροῦντες, καὶ οἱς τρεῖς), while the words *spirit*, *water*, and *blood*, to which it relates, are all neuter (for it would have been necessary to say τρία τὰ μαρτυροῦντα)? This irregularity, which is fully justified by what is called in grammar *the principle of attraction*, if the passage remains entire, becomes inexplicable when you would deprive it of the contested words.

2. Wherefore, above all, this word, *that one* τὸν, the [p.193] ONE), if some certain ONE have not been spoken of in the preceding words? That expressions (τὸν), in first case, would be without example. To this Bishop Middleton devotes eighteen pages in his beautiful work on the Doctrine of the Greek Article (in 8vo, Cambridge, 1828, pp. 606 to 624). “I cannot conceive,” says he in conclusion, “how this word, *that* ONE (τὸν) can be reconciled with the taking away of the preceding words. I am aware that the greater number of the learned are favourable to these retrenchments but, taking all things into view, I am led to suspect that, notwithstanding the immense labours bestowed on this celebrated passage, something more yet remains to be done in order to clear away the mystery in which it is still involved.” The learned Bengel, for still further reasons, said that the two verses of this passage remain united *adamantinā adhærentiā*.

Scholz has, like Griesbach, taken away the three heavenly witnesses.

5th, (Apoc. viii. 13) - *Instead of*, “And I beheld and heard an angel flying,” *Griesbach’s text and that Scholz bear*, “And I beheld and heard an eagle flying.”

6th, (James ii. 18) - *Instead of*, “Show me thy faith by works,” *Griesbach’s text and that of Scholz bear*, “Show me thy faith without works.”

7th, (Acts xvi. 7) - *Instead of*, “But the Spirit suffered them not,” *Griesbach’s text and that of Scholz bear*, “But the Spirit of Jesus suffered them not.”

8th, (Ephes. v. 21) - *Instead of*, “Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God,” *Griesbach’s text and that of Scholz bear*, “Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of Christ.”

9th, (Apoc. i. 11) - *Instead of*, “I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last,” *the text of Griesbach suppresses these words, which it has retained, however, at the 8th verse, as well as at chapter xxii, 13. Scholz*

has made the same correction.

12 That of several Latin fathers of the 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th centuries; that of the Latin Vulgate, more ancient than the most ancient manuscripts of our libraries (supposed to date from the 5th or the close of time 4th century): and, above all, that of the Confession of Faith publicly presented in 484, by four hundred bishops of Africa, to the king of the Vandals, who, as an Arian, persecuted them, and called on them to give an account of their doctrines. - (See the Dissertations of Mill, Griesbach, Bengel, Wetstein, and Lee.)

10th, (Matth. xix. 17) - *Instead of*, “Why callest thou me good?” *Griesbach’s text bears*, “Why do you ask me about the good (or about happiness)? [p.194]

But Scholz does not admit this correction, and retains the old text.

11th, (Philip. iv. 13) - *Instead of*, “I can do all things through Christ strengthening me,” *Griesbach’s text and that of Scholz bear*, “I can do all things through him who strengtheneth me.”

12th, Finally, (Acts viii. 37; ix. 5, 6; x. 6), *Griesbach’s text and that of Scholz suppress the 37th verse and these words*, “It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks; and he, trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?” *and*, “He shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.”

No doubt, in these passages (I repeat), among the different readings which the manuscripts present, it will not be possible to know infallibly which is the one that ought to be regarded as the primitive text, or the very word given by God; but, as to the meaning of the sentence, our uncertainties will always be circumscribed within a very narrow and very clearly defined field. It is true, that choose I must between one word and another word - between one letter and another letter; but there all my doubts are limited, there they stop: they are not allowed to go any farther. Not only, in fact, have I the assurance that the rest of the text is entirely from God; but I further know, that of the two different readings which the manuscripts present to me, one is certainly the inspired word. Thus you see how it stands: here my uncertainties can bear only on the alternative of two readings, almost always very much alike; while, on the contrary, under the system of partial inspiration, the field of our doubts and of our perplexities will have no bounds. If the language of the sacred books has been so far left to the ever fallible choice of human wisdom - and if divine wisdom, which alone is infallible, have not controlled and guaranteed it - I am exposed incessantly to the temptation of abstracting something from it, modifying something in it, or adding something to it.

Thus, then, have all the efforts of the adversaries of [p.195] inspiration to shake our faith by attacks on this side, only served, as a last result, to confirm it. They have obliged the Church to follow them in their investigations, and soon thereafter to precede them in these and what has she found in this pursuit? Why this: that the text is still purer than the most godly men had ventured to hope; that the adversaries of inspiration, and those of the orthodox dogmas, at least in Germany, have been compelled to admit it. After the labours of Erasmus, of Stephanus, and of Mill, they hoped to find, among all the manuscripts of our libraries, readings more favourable to the Socinian doctrines than those adopted by the Bezas and the Elzivirs. Many even thought that the uncertainties would become such, and the differences so serious, that all the positive evangelical doctrines - exclusive, as they call them - would be shaken. But it has not been so. The process has now been brought to a close - the complainants have lost their cause; the trial having been conducted at their demand by modern criticism, all the judges, on the benches of the Rationalists,<sup>13</sup> have with one voice pronounced

13 Read Michaelis, vol. ii. p. 266. Eichhorn, Einleitung, 2 th. S. 700. Edit. Lips., 1824.

it a lost case, and that the objectors must go elsewhere to look out for arguments and complaints.

When this question, respecting the integrity of the original text, presented itself for the first time to the excellent and learned Bengel, more than a hundred and twenty years ago, he was dismayed at the thought of it; it gave his upright and godly soul profound distress. Then did there commence on his part those labours of sacred criticism, which gave a new direction to that science among the Germans. The English had preceded the Germans in it but the latter soon got before them. At last, after long researches, Bengel, in 1721, happy and reassured, wrote to his disciple Reus: "Eat simply the bread of the Scriptures as it presents itself to thee; and do not distress thyself at finding here and there a small particle of sand which the millstone may have [p.196] left in it. Thou mayst, then, dismiss all those doubts which at one time so horribly tormented myself. If the Holy Scriptures - which have been so often copied, and which have passed so often through the faulty hands of ever fallible men - were absolutely without variations the miracle would be so great, that faith in them would no longer be faith. I am astonished, on the contrary, that the result of all those transcriptions has

not been a much greater number of different readings.” The comedies of Terence alone have presented thirty thousand; and yet these are only six in number,<sup>14</sup> and they have been copied a thousand times less often than the New Testament.

How shall we not recognize the mighty intervention of God in this unanimous accord of all the religious societies of the East and of the West! Every where the same Scriptures! What distances separate Christians from Jews in their worship! And yet, walk into our schools of learning, examine our Hebrew Testaments; then go into their synagogues, ask their rabbis to show you their sacred rolls - you will there find the same books, without the difference of a letter! What distances separate, in their worship, the Reformed Christians from the members of the Roman sect! And yet, pursue your search, you will find in our respective schools the same Greek Testament, without the difference of an iota! We take theirs as they take ours - Erasmus or Beza, Ximenes or Mill, Scholz or Griesbach! What distances, further, separate the Latin Church from the Greek Church - which also calls itself catholic, but orthodox, apostolic daughter of Antioch, and condemning the Romans as rebellious and schismatical sons! And yet, ask both for their sacred texts, no more will you find here any difference; here the various readings will not at all make two schools that distinguish them; here the same manuscripts will be consulted - the priests and the pope, Munich and Mos- [p.197] cow, will make you hear one and the same testimony. The necessary result, then, has been, that we all - Greeks, Latins, and Protestants - should have among us the same sacred book of the New Testament, without the difference of a single iota!

We have said enough on this great fact. We have felt it right merely to glance at it for the purpose of repelling an objection, since it took us away from our subject. What we had undertaken was to prove a doctrine - to wit, the *primary inspiration* of Holy Scripture; and

<sup>14</sup> Archives du Christianisme, tom. vii. No. 17. Wiseman's Discourses on the Relations of Science, &c., vol. ii. p. 189.

some have thought they could oppose us by urging, that, even were this doctrine true, it would be deprived of all effect by the alterations which Holy Scripture must have undergone. We behoved to show that these alterations are a vain and harmless phantom. While engaged in establishing a doctrine, we have already said, we have been led to write

a history. We would now, then, return to the doctrine. Nevertheless, before returning to it, we must once more conclude, that not only was the Scripture inspired on the day when God caused it to be written, but that we possess this word inspired eighteen hundred years ago; and that we may still, while holding our sacred text in one hand, and in the other all the readings collected by the learned in seven hundred manuscripts,<sup>15</sup> exclaim, with thankfulness, I hold in my hands my Father's testament, the eternal word of my God!

#### *Section IV. Errors of Reasoning or of Doctrine.*

We abandon the various readings, other opponents will say; and we own that one may regard the sacred text as the original language of the prophets and the apostles. But this very text, intact as it is, we cannot study without being compelled to recognise in it the [p.198] part that has been taken in it by human weakness. We find there reasonings ill conducted or ill wound up, quotations ill applied, popular superstitions, prejudices, and other infirmities - all this being the unavoidable tax which the simplicity of the men of God had to pay to the ignorance, on various points, of their times and of their condition. "St Paul," St Jerome himself has said,<sup>16</sup> "does not know how to develop a hyperbaton, or how to conclude a sentence; and as he had to do with rude, uncultivated persons, he has availed himself of conceptions which (if he had not taken care to let us know beforehand that he spoke after the manner of men) might have given umbrage to persons of good sense," Such, then, being the marks of human infirmity which we can trace in the Scriptures, it remains an impossibility to recognise in such a book an inspiration that has descended even to the smallest details of their language.

To these charges brought against the Scriptures our reply is fourfold.

1. First of all, we protest, with the utmost force of our convictions, against such reproaches. We maintain, that a more attentive and a more serious study of the Word of God would reduce them to nothing; and we protest, that they have no foundation but in the errors and the

precipitation of those who advance them. This we could demonstrate, by repelling, one by one, all these charges, in each of the cases in which they have been sought to be renewed. It would prove a task more long than difficult, and we cannot find room for it here, for its details would be endless. There is not, in *fact*, a line of argument - there is not a quotation - there is not a doctrine - which the adversaries of the inspiration of the Scriptures have not at various times made a subject for reproaches; and it is well

15 Scholz has quoted 674 for the gospel alone.

16 Comment, on the Ep. to the Galatians (book ii.), to Titus (book i. on i. 1), and to the Ephes. (book ii. on iii. 1.) [p.199]

enough known that the greater part of objections that can be stated clearly in three words, require three pages for a clear refutation. It is necessary, therefore, that in proportion as the men of the world recommence their attacks, the Church should renew her replies; and that, like those respectful and indefatigable servants who, among the Eastern nations, watch day and night near the face of their king, she stand constantly by the side of the Word of her God, to repel those swarms of objections, which are no sooner seen to be driven off than they re-appear by another way, and incessantly return to plant some sting in it anew. Before inquiry - and this the experience of all ages, and in particular that of these last times, has sufficiently shown before inquiry, those difficulties which some would object to the Scriptures are smoothed away; those obscurities burst into light; and ere long unexpected harmonies, beauties which no human eye had till then suspected, reveal themselves in the Word of God, by means of those very objections. Though to-day objects of doubt, tomorrow, when better studied, they would become to you motives to faith: to-day, subjects that distract and perplex you; to-morrow, they would become proofs to convince and assure you.

2. Meanwhile we have no wish to evade any one of these charges brought against the Scriptures by the adversaries of the full inspiration of that sacred book, for it is an advantage which they give us. - Yes, and we are not afraid to say it: on hearing such objections, we feel ourselves at one and the same time under the too opposite impressions of satisfaction and of sadness; of sadness at seeing persons who

acknowledge the Bible to be a revelation from God, not afraid, notwithstanding, to bring so hastily the most serious accusations against it; and of satisfaction, from considering with what force such language confirms the doctrine which we defend.

In the mouth of a deist, they would be objections, and we behoved to reply; but in that of the Christians [p.200] who advance them, they involve a flagrant abandonment of their own proper principle, and an admission of all the evil to be found in that abandonment.

Let us not be misunderstood: it is *not* at the bar of professed infidels that we here maintain the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures; it is before men who say that they hold the Bible to be a revelation from God. Inspiration, we have told them, is a doctrine written down in that sacred book according to its own testimony, all Scripture is given by inspiration of God; it is perfect, it is pure, it is silver seven times refined. What has been their reply? - They do not reject, they say, such an inspiration except with regard to the language, the forms of discourse and unimportant details; they believe, moreover, that a continual providence directed the minds of the sacred writers, to preserve them from all serious error. But how do they prove this position? Is it to the language only, is it to the forms of discourse, is it to insignificant details, that they object? - Alas! let us hear their own words In the doctrines there are superstitions; in the quotations there are things misapprehended; in the reasonings there are weak points! - You see, then, it is thus that, in order to attack the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures, they descend into the ranks of the unbelievers who cast stones at the Word of God; and if they will not venture, like them, to take away God from the Holy Bible, they would fain at least rectify God's errors in the Holy Bible. Which of these two attempts would be the most outrageous, it were hard to say.

We conclude, therefore, that since it is impossible to combat plenary inspiration without charging the Word of God with error, we must necessarily cleave ever more and more to this sentence of Scripture, that "all Scripture is given by inspiration of God."

3. But we have to call attention to a still more serious view of the matter. We ask, Where do they mean to stop in the course they have begun? And by what [p.201] reasons would they stop those, in their turn, who would fain advance farther than they are willing to go? They

make bold to correct one saying of God's Word; what right, then, have they to censure those who would rectify all the rest? Creatures of a day, during which they fleet through this world, with the everlasting book of God in their hands, they are foolhardy enough to say to him: This, Lord, is worthy of thee, this is not worthy of thee! They make bold of themselves to sift God's oracles, to assign a share in them to the folly of man, to separate in them from the thought of the divine mind, proofs of ignorance shown by Isaiah and Moses, the prejudices of St Peter and St Jude, the paralogsms of St Paul, the superstitions of St John!

Lamentable temerity! We repeat it: Where will they stop in this fatal task? for they proceed to take their seats at the same table where the Socinuses, the Grimaldis, and the Priestleys occupy one side, and the Rousseaus, the Volneys, and the Dupuis the other. Betwixt them and Eichhorn, betwixt them and William Cobbet, betwixt them and Strauss, where will you find the difference? It is in the species, not in the genus. It is in the quantity, and no longer in the quality, of imputations of error and tokens of irreverence. There is a difference in point of hardihood, none at all in point of profanation. Both pretend to have found errors in the Word of God; both take it upon them to rectify it. But will they tell us, is it less absurd on the part of a creature to set about correcting in the works of God the creation of the hyssop that springs from the wall, than that of the cedar that grows on Lebanon; to pretend to rectify the organism of a glow-worm than to send a supply of light to the sun? What right have ministers, who say they see only the language of Jewish prejudices in what the Evangelists relate about the demoniacs and the miracles of Jesus Christ in casting out unclean spirits, - what right have they to think it strange that such or such another person should see in the miracles of the conversion of St Paul, of the resur- [p.202] rection, of the multiplication of the loaves, or of the day of Pentecost, no more than an useful and sage complaisance for the ignorant minds of a people that were fond of the marvellous? What right would a professor, who should deny the inspiration of the reasonings of St Paul, have to blame M. de Wette for rejecting that of the prophecies of the Old Testament,<sup>17</sup> or M. Wirgmann for proceeding to his *Divarication of the New Testament*,<sup>18</sup> or M. Strauss, for changing into myths the miracles, and even the person of Jesus Christ?

Three or four years ago, a young Bernese minister I gave us a

reading of a manual of theology, which, he said, had been put into his hands in one of the academics of Eastern Switzerland. We

17 This was his opinion some years ago. We know not whether this professor, whose learning and candour we have admired in his translation of the New Testament, has not withdrawn such assertions.

18 This is the title of his book (translated from the English by Lambert, Paris, 1838.) “He says he understands by it, the separation of the New Testament into *Word of God* or moral precepts, and *word of man* or facts of the sensible world.”

have forgotten the name of the author, together with that of his residence but having at the time taken a note of his principal arguments against the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures, we can reproduce here the quotations by which he sought to prove that the sacred books, as they contained evident errors, could not be altogether the Word of God. The reader will understand that we cannot stop here to reply to him. All we wish to do is merely to give one an idea of the measure of these temerities.

“St Paul speaks of ‘having delivered an incestuous person over to Satan.’ - (1 Cor. v. 5.) Could this passage (fanatical no doubt) have been inspired?”

“He tells them that ‘we shall judge the angels.’ - (1 Cor. vi. 3). A gnostic reverie, no doubt. Could such a passage be inspired ?”

“He even goes so far as to tell them that, ‘in Consequence of their unworthy communions, many among them are sick, and some are dead.’ - (1 Cor. xi. 30.) This passage cannot be inspired!” [p.203]

“He tells them, further, ‘that in Adam all die.’ - ( 1 Cor. xv. 22.) Judaical superstition! It is impossible that such a passage can be inspired!”

“And when St Paul assures the Thessalonians (1 Thes. iv. 15), which St James repeats (James v. 8), ‘that the coming of the Lord draweth nigh,’ could so manifest an error be inspired?”<sup>19</sup>

It is thus, then, that men dare to sit in judgment on the eternal Word! We still remain unaware, we have said, if these doctrines, professed in Switzerland ten or twelve years ago, were so professed at Zurich more than elsewhere. But if they were actually in vogue there, then one must excuse, alas! the magistrates of that city, if we would not deal unfairly by them. It was not they who called Strauss into their country, in order to subvert the faith of a whole people there; for Strauss

was already in their professors' chairs, if such teachers delivered their opinions from them. They had seen them with ample scissors in hand, cutting out from the Scriptures the errors of the apostles. What difference could they perceive betwixt such men and the man they called? A little more learning, boldness, consistency, in following out his principles; and in his more practised hand, a longer and sharper instrument; but hardly more heartfelt contempt for the Scriptures of God! Among the judges of the Sanhedrin who smote Jesus on the face we should make little difference as to the number of blows they severally dealt; and. when sixty conspirators in the palace of Pompey threw down Cæsar from his throne of gold in the midst of the senate, Casca, who first grazed him with his sword, was no less his murderer than Cassius, who clove his head, or than the sixty conspirators, who on all sides drew [p.204] their swords on him, and pierced him with twenty-three wounds. Is the doctor, then, who denies the inspiration of an argument or of a doctrine of the Scriptures, less in revolt against

19 We have not felt ourselves called upon to answer such charges. It would be going out of our subject. The Lord's coming is nigh to each of us: from one instant to another, three sighs separate us from it. When a man dies he is immediately transported to the day of Jesus Christ. As for the distance of that day relatively to this world, see in the 2d chap. of the 2d. Ep. to the Thess. if the apostle Paul deceived himself about it.

the God of the Scriptures than the man who rejects the inspiration of a whole book? We think not.

We conclude, that since the man who denies the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures necessarily enters on the career of daring temerities, and gives the signal, by the first thrust of his sword, for all the revolts that may follow against the Word of God, we must, once more, look more narrowly to that saying of the Holy Ghost: "All Scripture is given by inspiration of God."

But we have one last reflection farther to make.

4. You do not, it seems, comprehend the divinity, the propriety, the wisdom, the utility of such or such a passage of the Scriptures; and, on that account, you deny their inspiration! - Is this an argument that can have any real value, we do not say in our eyes, but in yours? Who are you? "Keep thy foot when thou goest into the house of God," feeble child of man, "and he more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of

fools: for they consider not the evil that they do. Be not rash with thy mouth: God is in heaven, and thou upon earth.”<sup>20</sup> Who art thou, then, who wouldst judge the oracles of God? Hath not the Scripture itself told us beforehand, that it would be to some a stumbling-block, and to others foolishness;<sup>21</sup> that the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, and that he cannot even do so, and that they are spiritually discerned?<sup>22</sup> Ought you not, therefore, to expect to feel at first some repugnance in mind, in heart, in conscience, even to its first teachings? Man must first return to his place as a weak, ignorant, and demoralized creature! He cannot comprehend God until he has hum- [p.205] bled himself. Let him go and cast himself upon his knees in his closet; let him pray, and he will comprehend what it means! An argument is ill grounded, because you do not seize its scope! a doctrine is a prejudice, because you do not admit it! a quotation is not to the point, because its true meaning has escaped you! What would remain in the world, were God to leave nothing there but what you could explain? The Emperors of Rome, incapable of understanding either the lives or the faith of our martyrs, threw them to the wild beasts in the amphitheatre, and had their bodies dragged to the Tiber. It is thus that people strike their own defective knowledge, like an impure hook, into the Word of God, and drag to the public dunghill whatever they have been unable to understand, and. have condemned!

While tracing these lines, we are reminded of a teacher of divinity, in other respects an honourable man, but imbued with the wisdom of his own age, who set himself to prove that the reasonings of St Paul are not inspired. Now, how went he about to demonstrate this? Why, he quoted as a convincing example a passage (Gal. iii. 16) in which St Paul proposes, not to prove (mark this well - the whole solution lies here), not to prove, but to AFFIRM that the promise made by God to *Abraham* and *his posterity* regarded not all his *posterities* (since it was evident enough that his posterities by Agar, by Keturah, by Esau, were rejected), but one special, elected and personal posterity. And what think you the professor did to establish his thesis on this passage? Why, he palmed on the apostle an argument so puerile, that the merest child among the Galatians might have reproved him for it! St Paul, according to him, instead of doing no more than *affirm* a fact, meant to argue from the singular of a collective noun that

20 Eccles. v. 1, 2.

21 1 Cor. i. 23.

22 1 Cor. ii. 14.

such a word could designate no more than a single person! Absurd as it is for us, said he, this argument might be good for the Jews, or for the gross-minded Gauls of Asia Minor. We give this example; [p.206] a hundred more of the same value might easily be produced.

May the author venture here to refer to his own experience? He recollects, with no less humiliation than gratitude, his earliest and his latest impressions on the Epistles of St Paul. he was enabled, from his earliest years, to come to the conviction that the Bible is from God; but he did not yet understand the doctrines which it teaches. He wished to respect the apostle's pages, because he saw, through other marks, that the not-to-be-counterfeited seals of the most high God are suspended there; but in reading them he was agitated with a secret uneasiness, which drove him to other books. St Paul appeared to him to reason wrong - not to go straight to his point; to discourse in a round-about and embarrassed manner; to wind about his subject in long spiral turnings, and to say the things that were attributed to him quite differently from what one himself would have wished to have done. In a word, he felt, in reading them, somewhat of the painful discomfort of a tenderly affectionate son as he waits on a declining parent whose memory is beginning to fail, and who stammers in his attempts to speak. O how anxiously would he conceal from others, and dissemble to himself, that his venerated father totters, and seems no longer to be himself! But no sooner had Divine grace revealed to us that doctrine of the righteousness of faith, which is the burning and shining flame of the Scriptures, than every word became light, harmony, and life; the apostle's reasonings seemed limpid as the water that flows from the rock his thoughts profound and practical; all his epistles a power of God unto salvation for those who believe. We saw abundant proofs of divinity shine forth from those very parts of the Scriptures which had long given us such uneasiness; and we could say, with the joy of one who has made a discovery, and with the gratitude of a tender adoration, as we felt inimitable, and until then silent, chords vibrate within us, in unison with [p.207] the Word of God, "Yes, my God, all the Scriptures are divinely

inspired!” . . . . .

But people insist.

### *Section V. Errors in the Narratives – Contradictions in the Facts*

All these just repugnances felt to the reasonings or the doctrines of the sacred writers, will be abandoned, we are told, if it must be so, by admitting, that, on these matters, what is a difficulty for some may be none at all for others. But, if an appeal be now made to facts - if it be shown that there are manifest contradictions in the narratives of the Bible, in its dates, in its allusions to contemporary history, in its scriptural quotations - we might farther, perhaps, reproach those who object on the ground of having seen these, with not being consistent with themselves, and with going further in this respect than their own thesis will admit. This, however, matters not; these, if facts at all, are facts which cannot be thrown out on any such preliminary plea, and which no reasoning can destroy. Reasoning no more destroys facts than it creates them. if, then, it is added, these contradictions exist, they may, indeed, convict their thesis of not going far enough; but they are three times more relevant against ours, in charging it with error.

First of all, we acknowledge that, were it true that there were, as they tell us, erroneous facts and contradictory narratives in the Holy Scriptures, one must renounce any attempt to maintain their plenary inspiration. But we are not reduced to this: these alleged errors do not exist.

We admit, no doubt, that, among the numerous attacks made on the smallest details of the narratives of our sacred books, there are some which, at first sight, [p.208] may give some embarrassment; but no sooner do we look at them more closely than these difficulties are cleared up and vanish. We proceed to give some examples of this, and will be careful to select them from among those which the adversaries of a plenary inspiration have seemed to regard as the most insurmountable.

These we shall preface with some observations.

1. The Scriptures have in all ages had their adversaries and their defenders - their Celsuses as well as their Origenes - their Porphyries as well as their Eusebiuses - their Castellios and their Calvins, their Strausses and their Hengstenbergs. It is now sixteen hundred years since Malchus Porphyry, that learned and spiteful Syrian, who lived in Sicily under the reign of Diocletian, and whom Jerome calls *rabidum adversus Christum canem*,<sup>23</sup> wrote fifteen books against Christianity. In these fifteen books - the fourth of which was directed against the Pentateuch, the twelfth and the thirteenth against Daniel - there was one (the first) entirely devoted to the bringing together of all the contradictions which, he maintained, he had found in the Scriptures.<sup>24</sup> From Celsus and Porphyry down to the English unbelievers of the 18th century, and from these down to Strauss, who has had hardly more to do than copy them,<sup>25</sup> unceasing endeavours have been made to discover more, by comparing Scripture with Scripture, line with line, word with word, detail with detail. It was easy, therefore, to multiply them, and even to find some that were specious, in a book eminently anecdotic - where narratives of the same events are often repeated under different forms, by different historians, [p.209] in different circumstances, with manifold objects, and with more or less extensive developments. After this, the reader must see that this fifth objection, which is composed altogether of detached observations, and resolves itself into an infinity of minute details, can only be refuted in detail, and by detached answers. The matter, accordingly, is inexhaustible. Every passage has its objection, and every objection its reply. Our sole general response, then, can only be this - Examine, and the obscurity will vanish.

23 A rabid dog against Christ. Preface to his Eccles. writers.

24 Τὸν καθ' μὲν συσκευὴν ἡπρσζολῇ πιστοῦς πορζοζλημένον, says Eusebius, in speaking of him. - Euseb. Prepar. Evangel., book x. ch. ix., and Eusebius' Eccles. Hist. vi. 19.

25 He says himself, that on the criticism of the gospels he had studied and collected from Celsus to Paulus, and even to the fragments of Wolfenbüttel.

It is acknowledged, besides, by all parties, that the alleged contradictions, adduced by the adversaries of inspiration have not in themselves any religious importance, and bear only on dates, numbers, and other very minute circumstances. But though incapable of directly affecting Christian doctrine, they would tend, nevertheless, not less directly to subvert the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures. It is

necessary, therefore, that they should be met. This is what the friends of religion have done in all ages; and this is what Mr Hengstenberg, at Berlin, has lately accomplished with such honourable success; it is this, too, which has been done, in these last times, by Messrs Barrett, Hales, Gerard, Dick, Borne, and others, in England.

2. It is very easy to say, in a general manner, and in a peremptory tone, that there are contradictions in the Bible; and it has often happened that unreflecting though pious Christians have not taken the pains to look narrowly into the matter, and have suffered themselves to be led away into loose maxims on inspiration, before having sufficiently studied, on one hand, the general testimonies of the Scriptures on that doctrine, and, on the other, the nature of the objections that have been opposed to them. Then it is that they have been seen to seek in their own minds, rather than in the Bible, for a mitigated system of inspiration, such as can be reconciled with the alleged existence of sonic errors in the Word of God. Here, in the sixteenth century, [p.210] lay the doctrine of Socinus,<sup>26</sup> of Castellio,<sup>27</sup> and some others; but it was then loudly rejected by all pious men. “*Hoc non est causam tueri adversus atheos,*” said Francis Turretine,<sup>28</sup> “*sed ilium turpiter prodere.*” “*Non est eo concedendum, ad ea concilianda, ut dicamus codicem sacrum mendosum,*”<sup>29</sup> said the learned and Pious Peter Martyr, “the wonder of Italy,” as Calvin called him. In our days, the estimable Dr Pye Smith,<sup>30</sup> in England, and the worthy bishop of Calcutta,<sup>31</sup> have allowed themselves to run into statements of opinion which we deplore, and which they would probably correct had they to make them again. And at Berlin, the learned rector of the university, M. Twisten, whom, for his labours and reputation in other respects, we honour, has not been afraid to say, in his work on dogmatic theology,<sup>32</sup> that all is not equally inspired in the holy Bible; and that if we refuse to admit that there are errors in the details of the evangelical narratives, we throw ourselves into inextricable difficulties in our endeavours to explain them. And what examples does he give, in passing, in justification of such maxims? *Why*, he quotes two of the passages which we are about to expound, (the first, that of the blind man of Jericho, the seventh, that of the census taken under Cyrenius). The reader may judge of the ease with which some can abandon the testimony which the Scriptures themselves render to their entire inspiration.

We proceed, then, to give some examples both of the contradictions which objectors have fancied they could oppose to us, and of the causes of the precipitation with which some allow themselves to call certain passages contradictory; which, however, only require a little reflection in order to their being reconciled.

26 De Autor. Script.

27 In Dialogis.

28 Théol. elench., tom. i. p. 74.

29 In Reg. viii. 17.

30 Defence of Dr Haffner's Preface to the Bible.

31 Lectures on the Evidences of Christianity.

32 Vorlesungen uber die Dogmatik, t. i. pp. 421-429, Hamburg, 1829.

We have said, and we repeat, that as it is out of our [p.211] power to adduce more than a small number here, we have been at pains to select such as our adversaries have apparently regarded as the most embarrassing.

[In the interval between the first and second edition of this book, several pious persons have blamed us for having resolved difficulties which were not such to them, while we had neglected others which seemed to them of greater weight. Other readers will, no doubt, pass a directly contrary judgment on these relative values. Such appreciations are altogether subjective. None is judge of the importance that may be attached elsewhere to his objections on such matters; so that they present a boundless field. Still, however, we think it right to bring under consideration, in this volume, the new difficulties that have been pointed out to us.]

FIRST CAUSE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. - The complement of the circumstances of two facts which happened in the East, eighteen hundred years ago, remains unknown, because the sacred historians relate them to us with signal brevity. Some persons, nevertheless, should the narrative not explain to us in what manner some of their traits may be reconciled, are in haste to declare them contradictory. Nothing is more irrational. Suppose (to give an instance not from the Scriptures) that a Hindu pundit happened to read three succinct histories, all three veridical, of the illustrious Napoleon. The

first will tell him that the capture of Paris, preceded by much bloodshed at the gates of that capital, compelled him to abdicate; and that an English frigate was commissioned to transport him to an island in the Mediterranean. A second will relate that this great captain, vanquished by the English, who made themselves masters of Paris without opposition, was transported by them to St Helena, whither General Bertrand desired to follow him, and where he breathed his last in the arms of that faithful servant. A third will relate that the fallen emperor was accompanied in [p.212] his exile by Generals Gourgaud, Bertrand, and Montholon. All these narratives would be true; and yet, how many palpable contradictions in these few words! the learned man of Benares might say. St Helena in the Mediterranean! Who knows not that it rises like a rock in the great ocean? So much for a first contradiction one of these books must be false; we must reject it. But again: Paris taken without a blow being struck! and Paris taken after a bloody battle at the gates! There is a second. Once more: here we find one general, there three generals! showing a third contradiction.

Now, compare these supposed precipitate judgments with many of the objections that have been started against the narratives of our Gospels!

*First example.* - Mark (xvi. 5) relates to us, *that the women “saw A YOUNG MAN (only one) sitting on the right side . . . . who said to them, Be not affrighted. Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, who was crucified: he is risen.”*

And Luke relates (xxiv. 4), *that “TWO MEN stood by them . . . . who said to them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen.”*

These passages are objected to as irreconcilable with each other; but on what good grounds? No doubt there is a difference; but there is neither contradiction nor disagreement between the two narratives. If they are both true, wherefore would you insist on their being identical? It is enough that they be true, particularly in histories so admirably succinct. Does it not often happen with us, that, without ceasing to be exactly accordant with truth, we tell, twice in succession to different persons, the same adventure in two very different manners? Now, why should the apostles not do as much? Luke relates, that two personages

presented themselves to the women; while Mark speaks only of that one of the two who at first had alone rolled away the stone, who sat on the right side of the sepulchre, and who addressed himself to them. It was thus that one of our (supposed) historians of the Life of Bonaparte spoke [p.213] of three generals; while the other, without ceasing to be true, spoke only of Bertrand. It is thus that Moses, after having spoken of three men as appearing to Abraham at Mamre (Gen. xviii.), forthwith confines himself to speaking of one (ver. 2, 10, 17), as if he had been alone. It is thus that, twice in succession, and in a different manner, I may relate the same circumstance, without ceasing to be true: “I met three men, who told me the right way. I met a man, who put me on the proper road.” Thus, though there be in the passages adduced a marked difference, still there is not even the semblance of a contradiction.

*Second example.* - Matthew (xx. 30) says that *as Jesus “departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. And, behold, two blind men, sitting by the way-side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us!”*

And Mark (x. 40) tells us that *“as Jesus went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeas, sat by the highway-side begging. And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.”*

Luke likewise (xviii. 35) speaks of *one blind man only*.

What is there here, we again ask, contradictory or incorrect? Of those two blind men whom Jesus, and so many other works, healed at Jericho, there was one more remarkable than the other, better known perhaps in the country, and who spoke for both. Mark speaks of him only; he even goes on to tell us his name: he does not assure us that he was alone. Matthew, accordingly, might speak of two. The narratives of the three evangelists are equally true, without being like each other throughout. What, then, is there extraordinary in this?

But, in this same narrative we are told there is a still greater difficulty; let us hear it.

This forms a *third example.* - Matthew and Mark re- [p.214] late that the occurrence took place *as Jesus departed from Jericho*.

Whereas Luke tells us that it happened as Jesus *drew near to Jericho*: Here, once more, people have been found to exclaim, What a palpable contradiction!

We must reply, How would you prove this? what know you about it? The details of this fact being unknown to you, how could you possibly demonstrate that they are irreconcilable? While it is very easy, on the contrary, by the simplest supposition, to make them agree?

Luke, as he does so often in every part of his Gospel, has united in his narrative two successive circumstances of the same event. Mark well that he is the only one of the three historians who makes mention of the first question put by Bartimeus “*And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.*” This question the blind man put *before the entrance* of Jesus into Jericho. Being then made aware who this great prophet was, whom hitherto he had not known, he *followed* him, and during our Lord’s repast in the house of Zaccheus, took his place in the crowd that waited for his coming out. it was *then* that there was announced to him that “*Jesus of Nazareth passed by*” (these words are in St Luke). He followed him long thus; he was joined by the other blind man; and their cure was performed only when Jesus, on his way to Jerusalem, *left Jericho*, where he had stopped only for the purpose of being the guest of the happy Zaccheus. This very simple explanation instantly removes the alleged discrepancy of the three texts.

*Fourth example.* - Matthew (in his 27th chapter verse 5) says that Judas “*hanged himself*;” St Peter, in the Acts (i. 18), says that “*falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gashed out.*”

Here, again, we have been told, there is a contradiction.

We remember that once, at a public conference at Geneva, where we defended this same thesis, our much- [p.215] valued friend, professor Monod, at that the pastor at Lyons, adduced the analogous traits of a lamentable death of which he had almost been witness. An unhappy inhabitant of that city, in order to make the surer of committing suicide, and to give himself a double death, having seated himself outside of a fourth storey window, fired a pistol into his mouth. The same relater of that sad event, said he might have given three different accounts of it, and all three correct. In the first he might have reported the whole that had happened in the second, he might have said the man

shot himself; and, in the third, he threw himself from a window and was killed.

Such, also, was the self-inflicted punishment by which the unhappy Judas departed into his own place. he hanged himself, and fell headlong; he burst asunder, in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. One single particular more on the frightful circumstances of one same death, would have showed us the connection. it has not been given to us; but who will venture, on that account, to maintain that here there is a contradiction?

*Fifth example.* - Here ought to be placed the greater number of those cases where different numerical calculations may seem to disagree, such as that of the talents of gold brought from Ophir to King Solomon (1 Kings ix. 28; 2 Chron. viii. 18); that of the census taken of the Israelites in the days of David (2 Sam. xxiv. 9; 1 Chron. xxi. 5); that of the children of the patriarch Jacob, transported into Egypt (Gen. xlvii. 16, 27; Deut. x. 22; Acts vii. 14), &c.

One single additional circumstance in these rapid narratives would have instantly furnished the reconciliation required. King Solomon might, in the one case, reckon his gross revenues; and, in the other, deduct thirty talents for the expenses of the fleet. David's census might present two results, according as the ordinary and already numbered militia of the kingdom was included or left out (288,000 men with their officers of all [p.216] ranks.) - (2 Chron. xxvii. 1; 2 Sam. xxiii. 8.) Finally, you might have sixty-six, seventy, or seventy-five persons as the patriarch's family, according as you reckon in it, or do not reckon, on the one hand, Jacob with Joseph and his two sons; on the other, Er, Onan, and Dinah; or again, the wives of the eleven patriarchs. We enter not into the combination of these details; we need only to point them out.

*Sixth example.* - St Matthew, in his 27th chapter (verses 9, 10), quotes as those of Jeremiah words not to be found in the book of that prophet. "*Then,*" says he, "*was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value.*"

Here, it has been said, what an evident error! - these words are met

with only in the book of Zechariah (xi. 13).

We do not answer, with Augustine, that as several Greek manuscripts have only these words, “*Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by the prophet,*” “one might say that the reference is to one of those who did not bear the name of Jeremiah.”<sup>33</sup> It is true, that even at this day, among the Greek manuscripts of our libraries, there are two which have not the name of that prophet; and that, among the most ancient versions, the Syrian and the Persian have it not. This solution, however, does not appear to us conformable to the ordinary rules of sacred criticism; and Augustine himself candidly admits that it does not satisfy him, seeing that, even in his time, the greater number of Latin copies, and of Greek copies, bore in this sentence the name of Jeremiah.

Some learned men, consequently, presume that this name may have easily slipped into the text by some mis- [p.217] take; and that the copyists, having noticed on the margin the letters Zou (signifying in abridgment the name of Zechariah), and having mistaken them for Iou, had slipped it into the text, thinking what they saw was the name Jeremiah.

Meanwhile, even this explanation does not satisfy us any better, for it rests on a mere hypothesis gratuitously opposed to the testimony of the manuscripts, and opens a door for the admission of rash alterations. Our safety must ever lie in having the manuscripts respected.

I prefer, therefore, Whitby’s explanation, which is as follows:- “We know,” says he, “from St Jerome, that there was still extant in his time, an apocryphal book of the prophet Jeremiah, in

33 Possumus ergo dicere his potius codicibus esse credendum qui Jeremiae nomen non habent.  
(De consensu Evang. lib. iii. cup. 7.)

which was found every letter of the words quoted by St Matthew.”<sup>34</sup> We know also that the Second Book of Maccabees (ii. 1-9) relates many of the actions and words of Jeremiah, which are taken from another book than that of his canonical prophecies. Why, then, might not the words quoted by the evangelist have been pronounced really by Jeremiah, and have remained in the memory of the Church to the days of Zechariah, who might then have again given them a place theopneustically in holy Scripture, (as is the case with the unwritten words of Enoch, quoted in the Epistle of Jude, or the unwritten words of Jesus Christ, quoted by St Paul in the Book of the Acts?)<sup>35</sup> What confirms this supposition is, that

part only of the words quoted by St Matthew are found in Zechariah. Besides, it is known that this prophet was fond of recalling the words of Jeremiah.<sup>36</sup> The Jews used to say that the spirit of Jeremiah was in Zechariah, and that the two prophets made only one. Mede thought it very probable that the 9th, 10th, and 11th chapters of Zechariah were written in the first instance by Jeremiah.<sup>37</sup> Now, it is in the last of these chapters [p.218] that we find the words quoted by St Matthew. That evangelist, therefore, Could quote them as those of Jeremiah, in like manner as the apostle Jude has quoted as those of Enoch the words of his 14th and 15th verses.

*Seventh example.* - Many difficulties have been started of late, especially in Germany, on the fourfold narrative given us of *our Lord's resurrection*.

For the sake of briefness we shall treat of the whole four accounts at once, taking care to distinguish them, in both objection and reply, by corresponding letters.

A. According to St Luke (it has been said), the women of Galilee, on their return from the sepulchre, had prepared their spices before the Sabbath (Luke xxiii. 56); while according to St Mark (xvi. 1, 2), they bought them only on the Saturday evening, after the expiration of that sacred repose.

B. The reading of St Matthew gives us to understand that these women were Mary of Magdala and the other Mary; while there must have been, besides, Salome, according to Mark (xvi. 1); and even, according to Luke (xxiv. 10), there must farther have been Joanna, and others, with them.

C. According to Mark (xvi. 2) they went to the sepulchre “at the rising of the sun:” according to John (xx. 1) “it was yet dark?”

D. If (according to St Matthew alone) the Jews had set men to guard the sepulchre, one can hardly comprehend how these women should risk visiting it, and think of opening it.

E. According to Matthew (xxviii. 8) and Mark (xvi.5), the women saw only one angel at the sepulchre; they saw two according to St Luke (xxiv. 4).

34 Legi nuper, in quodam Hebraico volumine quod Nazarenæ sectæ Hebræus mihi obtulit, Hieremiæ apocryphum, in quo hæc ad verbum scriptis reperi. (Hieron. in Matt. xxvii.)

35 Verses 14 and 15.

36 Acts xx. 35.

37 See Zech. i. 4, and Jer. xviii. 11; Zech. iii. 8, and Jer. xxiii. 5.

[p.219]

F. According to Matthew (xxviii. 8) and Luke (xxiv. 9, 10), the women, on departing from the sepulchre, “with fear and great joy,” ran to tell the disciples what they had seen; whereas, according to Mark (xvi. 8), they fled; “they trembled and were amazed; neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.”

G. If, according to the first and the third Gospels, the women informed the disciples of what had passed (Matt. xxviii. 8; Luke xxiv. 9), according to the fourth, Simon Peter and John alone were informed.

H. According to the three first Gospels, Mary of Magdala, on reaching the sepulchre, saw two angels, who informed her of the resurrection of Jesus; while according to St John (xx. 2), she had contented herself with saying to the disciples, “They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre!” and said nothing either about his resurrection or even about the angels. “We know not where they have laid him!” she adds.

I. According to Luke (xxiv. 12), it would appear that Peter, on being told, ran alone to the sepulchre; according to John, there was with Peter “that other disciple whom the Lord loved” (xx. 2).

K. If you attend to the three first evangelists only, several women seem to have witnessed the appearance of the angels and the resurrection of Jesus; while from reading St John, you would believe that Mary of Magdala alone was honoured with these revelations.

L. According to Luke (xxiv. 23, 24)) and even according to John (xx. 2), Mary and the women, on returning from the sepulchre, merely told the disciples of the removal of the body of Jesus, and of their having seen the angels; they had not seen the Lord himself; while according to Matthew (xxviii. 9), Jesus had appeared to them “while they were yet in the way.”

[p.220]

Here, then, we are told there are *eleven contradictions*, which do not, it is true, affect the essence of the sacred narrative, amid which ought not by any means to affect our faith, but which rise irresistibly to testify against the alleged fact of an entire divine inspiration.

[This objection, we will avow it, appeared to us too ill-founded,

and to have been too often solved already, to find a place in the first edition of this work, Nevertheless it has been reproduced against us, and we have thought proper to make a reply.]

The day of the resurrection of Jesus Christ, for the disciples, began with the first dawns of morning (John xx. 1), and was lengthened out to midnight (Luke xxiv. 29, 33, 36). The sepulchre where their Lord had been laid was not far from where they dwelt, Seeing that at this day it is placed within the circuit of modern Jerusalem. Thus the disciples and the women may have repaired thither often, and in various ways, during the course of that incomparable Sunday. But as each of the four evangelists imposed on himself a marvellous brevity in relating that event, it is quite natural that at the first aspect their narratives should present, on the innumerable incidents of the day, an apparent confusion. Each was called upon to relate the truth, and nothing but the truth; but none of them was bound to tell the whole; and owing to this conciseness, you may not at once perceive their perfect agreement. They relate, each for himself; according to one special point of view, and without embarrassing himself about a reconciliation which they knew lay in the reality of the facts. What more would you have? One speaks specially of Mary Magdalene, for to her Jesus desired to make his first appearance; the other of Peter, because Jesus made himself appear to him notwithstanding his crime, and because he was called to occupy a leading place in the Church of God; two others, of the astonishing meeting on the road to Emmaus, because that manifestation was the most significant and the most affect- [p.221] ing; three others, in fine, of his appearing to the eleven, because these were to be the foundations and the pillars of the Church.

Moreover, you can perceive in their writings several traits which sufficiently indicate that, in giving an account of certain scenes, they knowingly abstain from mentioning others, the remembrance of which was no less dear to them, but which it was necessary to omit introducing, in order that their Gospels might be divinely short. Let us give some examples.

1. You will hear St Paul reminding the Corinthians (1. Cor. xv. 5) that Jesus “was seen first by Cephas, and then by the twelve;” - yet, not one of the four evangelists has told us of this appearance of Jesus to Simon Peter. Certainly it is well that it so happens that we read

afterwards in St Luke (xxiv. 34) these words, said in passing, “The Lord bath appeared unto Simon.” Without this expression (which occurs only casually in a conversation among the eleven and Cleopas), the adversaries of inspiration would not have failed to say that Paul was mistaken as to this fact, and that he had been a careless reader of his Gospels, seeing that not a word is said of this appearance in their fourfold account of the resurrection.

2. It is thus, too, that St Luke, who (at the 12th verse) speaks only of Peter, takes care, however, to make the disciples of Emmaus say afterwards, “Certain of them that were with us went to the sepulchre.”

3. It is thus, also, that St Mark, who does not mention either the appearing of Jesus to the women or to Simon Peter, takes care, however, to insert in his account (xvi. 9) a very few words which give us to understand that there were other manifestations, of which he was not to speak. “Jesus,” says he, “appeared first (first!) to Mary of Magdala.”

[p.222]

4. Finally, it is thus that St John, whose sole purpose it was to complete the preceding Gospels, and who speaks only of Mary Magdalene, informs us, *by a simple pronoun*, that she, notwithstanding, was not alone: “*They have taken away the Lord, and WE KNOW NOT WHERE THEY HAVE LAID HIM.*”

Thus, then, in order to establish contradiction among the different parts of the quadruple statement, it were necessary that they should be proved irreconcilable with all the suppositions one must make on the unknown connecting links of the events of the day. But who can do this? On the contrary, it is easy to figure for ourselves the sequence of events in such a manner as that the separate details of the narrative should come to agree with each other. This is what several persons have attempted with success, and in different ways; so far is the problem from being incapable of being solved. All that was necessary for this, was to make different but equally admissible suppositions on the number and the sequence of the visits made to the tomb by Mary, the disciples, and the women. Olshausen, Hess, and Griesbach, reconcile the difficulties by assuming that at daybreak Mary of Magdala, while on the way to the sepulchre, parted from her companions, and arrived first. John Le Clerc figured to himself rather that Mary, coming to the sepulchre a second time, with the two apostles, remained longer than

them near the tomb, and that the other disciples went home. Hengstenberg has made other suppositions, more simple perhaps, and not less acceptable.

Such hypotheses, shall we be told, do not necessarily do away with the contradiction - they only show that *possibly* there may be none. What would we have more? The adversaries of inspiration only in their turn make contrary hypotheses.

Now, then, instead of replying separately to each of the eleven objections above adduced, we will content ourselves with exhibiting the course of events, such as [p.223] we may conceive it to have been, according to the four accounts taken as a whole. What we give is very nearly the arrangement proposed by John Le Clerc in his “Evangelical Harmony.”<sup>38</sup> Others will prefer, perhaps, that lately proposed by Olshausen, in his “Biblical Commentary,”<sup>39</sup> or that which Hengstenberg more recently still has exhibited in his “Evangelical Gazette.”<sup>40</sup> But it is of no consequence. Our account, it will be seen, dissipates, one after another, the eleven alleged contradictions. (The same letters that distinguish them in the objection, will be re-inserted here before the particulars that correspond with them, and serve to solve them.)

A. Jesus had yielded up the ghost on the cross on Friday evening, at the ninth hour of the day. The Sabbath, which began three hours later, was doubly solemn (being both the weekly and the paschal Sabbath). *[had Gaussen more diligently studied this out he would not have made such a rude Roman Catholic conjecture. The crucifixion was on Thursday, both Friday and Saturday were Sabbaths, Friday was the “high Sabbath,” Saturday the weekly. Dr. Ed Rice June 2017]* As it grew late (Matt. xxvii. 46, 57; Mark xv. 34, 42), Joseph of Arimathea went to ask from Pilate the body of the crucified one. He obtained it, and, accompanied by Nicodemus, who saw to there being taken to the sepulchre about a hundredweight of myrrh and aloes (John xix. 39); he bought a pall, had the body of Jesus taken down, wound it in linen clothes with the spices (John xix. 40), and wrapped it in a winding-sheet, (Luke xxiii. 53; Mark xv. 46; Matt. xxvii. 59); then at last, for want of time, he hastened to deposit it in a sepulchre not far from Golgotha. One will see, therefore, that the godly women (who had beheld from a distance these funereal scenes, down to the moment when a huge stone was placed on the entrance to the tomb), had very little time for going home and preparing the perfumes which they had at their

disposal. The Sabbath was about to commence; and whatever might be, in their eyes, the sacred nature of their occu- [p.224] pations, they ceased from them from the time of sunset; nothing could withdraw them from the repose and silence of that day ('suvcasan as, Luke xxiii. 56). But as soon as it was over (that is to say, on Saturday at six o'clock at night), they ran to purchase aromatics to complete the pious preparations which they had been able only to commence. This funereal operation required a very considerable quantity of myrrh, aloes, and other substances; and, no doubt, in

38 Pag. 224-231. Lugduni, 1620.

39 Zweiter Band. p. 517, Koenigsberg 1834.

40 Evangel. Kirchen-Zeituag, Aug. 1841, § 489-523.

the evening, they could not have seen, from such a distance, that Nicodemus had already deposited in the sepulchre as much as a hundred-weight of perfumes.

Thus far, then, all is perfectly consistent; and it is by these touching details that Luke and Mark desired, each on his own side, to give prominence to the humble respect of these godly women for the law of the Sabbath; the one (Luke xxiii. 56), by showing how submissively they at once intermitted the most sacred cares; and the other (Mark xvi. 1), with what scrupulous attention they resumed them only at the hour when they were again at liberty to work.

B. Meanwhile they left their homes to go to the sepulchre. John names Magdalene only, because Jesus Christ had chosen her to be the first witness of the greatest of his miracles, and because she was the essential actor in his narrative. He takes care, however, to make her say, "We know not where they have laid him" (xx. 2)! In general, the evangelists show little anxiety about accumulating testimonies. And if the appearance with which the holy women were favoured had not been the first, it is probable that the sacred historians would not even have mentioned it. This is what we might conclude, by analogy, from Paul's mode of procedure (1 Cor. xv. 5, 8), who speaks only of the apostles, and says not a word about the women. His complete silence sufficiently explains to us the partial silence of the evangelists.<sup>41</sup> [p.225]

C. It was still almost night (John xvi. 1), when the women left their residence, carrying the spices, *to go* to the sepulchre (εἰς τὸ μνημεῖον,

Mark xvi. 3); but the sun had risen on their reaching it ἐπὶ τὸ μνημεῖον, Mark xvi. 2). We know that in those southern latitudes, the evening and morning twilights are of very short duration.

D. They asked themselves on the way how they should roll away the huge stone that covered the mouth of the sepulchral cave. - (Mark xvi. 3.) During the repose and the silence of the Sabbath (Luke xxiii. 56), how could they have known that guards had been appointed? - (Matt. xxviii. 66.)

E. Meanwhile there had been an earthquake. - (Matt. xxviii. 2.) An angel, whose countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow, had come from heaven and rolled away the stone. The guards were overcome with fear, and, after having become as dead men, fled. But what was not the astonishment of the women, when, on reaching the tomb, they found it open and empty! Only one young man, clothed in white, sat in the sepulchre, on the right side. - (Mark xvi. 5.) Then two men presented themselves in shining raiment (Luke xxiv. 4); these were angels (Mark and Matthew mentioning only the one that had rolled away the stone, and spoken to them).

F. Meanwhile, these holy women, hastening out of the sepulchre, fled, being overcome with feelings at once of terror and joy. - (Matt. xxviii. 8; Mark xvi. 8.) In [p.226]

41 This is a remark of Hengstenberg's. *We* recommend his dissertation to readers desirous of a more ample explanation. In order to show, *a priori*, the improbability of the contradiction imputed to the Evangelists, he makes it certain that Mark had evidently Matthew's work before his eyes and John that of Luke. "An attentive comparison," says he, "of Luke vii. 12 with John iii. 6-10 does not permit us to doubt this. John in order to make his narrative, which is more complete, clearly harmonize with that of Luke, borrows from him almost all the terms he had employed."

returning to the city they were careful not to speak to any one of what had happened. Did they dread the wrath of the Sanhedrin? At least, were they not unwilling to pour their emotions into the breasts of any but their brethren? Notwithstanding the early hour, they must have met a great many Israelites in the leading streets and squares of that immense city, where, during festivals, there were reckoned to be no fewer than three millions of inhabitants. The governor Florus, in the year 63, reckoned two hundred and fifty thousand paschal lambs, says Josephus; and this supposes at least two and a half millions of worshippers,

without including the sick, unclean persons, and young children.<sup>42</sup>

G. On arriving among the eleven and the other disciples, the women told all that they had seen. - (Mark xxviii. 8 ; Luke xxiv. 9.) But this recital seemed to them nothing but an idle tale. - (Luke xxiv. 10.) Then Mary of Magdala, addressing herself more particularly to Peter and John, assured them that, at least, if their Master were not risen again, he must have been taken away. - (John xx. 2.)

H. According to the account itself of John, Mary must necessarily have said to those two disciples more than what that evangelist relates to us directly; for he adds, that *they ran* to the sepulchre; and that no sooner had John seen the arrangement of the linen clothes than *he believed*. But, alas! this language of Mary “They have taken away the Lord, and I know not where they have laid. him!” was but too natural. The fleeting apparition of the angels had not produced so firm a conviction in her mind as not to have been violently shaken by the cold and incredulous reception her tale had met from the apostles. These men, according to whose directions she habitually conformed. herself, had [p.227] doubtless more than once repressed the warmth of her imagination. She saw them treat her heavenly vision as a mere *revery*. After that, she felt only enough of confidence in herself to attest the ordinary and material part of the fact. At least, says she, the tomb is open, and the body is no longer there.

I. Nevertheless, on hearing these words, and whilst Cleopas went away to Emmaus, Peter rose, Luke tells us (xxiv. 12), and ran to the sepulchre, but he did not run thither alone (24); and John tells us that he was accompanied by that “other disciple whom Jesus loved.” - (John xx. 2, 3.) John being the younger, arrived first; he did not go in; but stooping down he saw the linen clothes lying on the ground. Peter, stooping also, saw the linen clothes lying (Luke xxiv. 12), and the napkin that was about his head not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. He had the courage to go in, and wondered at what had come to pass (Luke xxiv. 12) ; but John did more; he entered in his turn and believed. They then departed unto their own home. - (John xx. 10 ; Luke xxvi. 12.) Still there is nothing inconsistent

in all this.

K. Meanwhile, Mary of Magdala, who had followed them, having returned to the sepulchre, remained alone at the spot, weeping and disconsolate at not even being able to find again her Master's remains. She stooped down to look into the interior of the sepulchre, and then it was that anew two angels clothed in white presented themselves to her sight. They were seated, the one at the head and the other at time foot of the place where the body of Jesus had lain. - (John xx. 11, 13.) Soon after, Mary having resumed her position, it was Jesus himself whom she saw

42 Jewish War, ii. 13.

behind her. "Go," said he to her, "to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God!" Mary hastened to go and tell the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he [p.228] had spoken these things to her (John xx. 18); but they believed not. - (Mark xvi. 10.)

Thus, then, was it, as St Mark has said (xvi. 9), that Jesus appeared *first* to Mary of Magdala.

The whole of this narrative is natural and harmonious; the historians here agree together in a manner which it is easy to comprehend. Only they relate each some one of the great facts of that incomparable day, without considering themselves called upon to relate the whole,

L. The two disciples on their departure from Jerusalem for Emmaus (Luke xxiv. 21, 24), were as yet unaware of the events of the day beyond the first report of the women and of the two disciples, the opening of the sepulchre, the removal of the Lord, the appearing of the angels; but they had not yet learned the last news - the appearing of Jesus to Simon-Peter and Mary's second report. - (John xx. 18; Mark xvi. 10.) Mark, however, what had afterwards happened. Following the Magdalene's example, who had returned a second time to the sepulchre, after having informed the apostles of her first discoveries, the other women also had betaken themselves thither while Mary was returning to

the disciples; they had found the tomb empty; and, as they were returning to give a further attestation to their brethren that the body of Jesus could not be found there, Jesus himself had condescended to appear to them alive and full of sympathy. They had worshipped him, and he had said to them: “Be not afraid: go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.” - (Matt. xxviii. 9, 10.)

Such is the harmony of the sacred narratives. This concatenation seems to us satisfactory. One might, as we have said, propose some other; but this is enough. We must confess that we cannot understand the difficulties that have been found in it, or the noise that has been made about it.

[p.229]

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. - Certain reigns, such as that of Nebuchadnezzar, that of Jehoiachim, and that of Tiberius, had two commencements; and the dates that relate to these are pronounced irreconcilable! The first, previous to mounting the throne, reigned three years with his father; the second reigned ten years with his; the third was assumed by Augustus as his associate in the empire, from the 28th of August, of the 2d year of the Christian era, but succeeded him on the 19th of August, of the year 14. - (Velleius Paterculus, ii. c. 121.)

*Some examples.* - See, for Jotham, 2 Kings xv. 33, (he reigned sixteen years alone; but four years also during the lifetime of his father, who was leprous). See fbr Joash, 2 Kings xiii. 1, 10, (he must have reigned two or three years with his father, as did Jehoshaphat and his son, 2 Kings viii. 16.) See 2 Kings xxiv. 8; and 2 Chron. xxxvi. 9. See also Daniel i. 1, ii. 1; Jer. xxv. 1; 2 Chron. xxxvi. 5-7. See farther, Luke iii. 1.

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. - The design of the Holy Ghost in one of the Gospels, is not often the same as his design in another Gospel while relating the same fact; yet some would have them all give the same turn to their narratives; nay, make bold, because of their differences, to declare them irreconcilable, and to assume that they are directly opposed to each other.

*Example.* - The Holy Spirit, in the genealogy of Jesus Christ, given

in St Matthew (i. 17), would show *the Jews*, that, according to the strict rigour of their law, Jesus Christ is the son and the heir of all the kings of Judah, by a *legal descent*; while the same Holy Spirit, in the genealogy given by St Luke (iii. 23-28), would show *the Gentiles* that Jesus Christ is the Son of David by a *natural descent*. And because, with this double [p.230] object in view, they give us, the one his genealogy according to the law, by Solomon, the son of David, and by Jacob, the hither of Joseph, the husband of Mary; and the other, his genealogy according to *nature*, by Nathan, another son of David, and by Heli, the father of Mary, people have thought, very absurdly, that they could make the one refute the other!<sup>43</sup>

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. – A text *mistranslated* produces a meaning that is contrary to reason or to history; and forthwith the sacred writer is accused of committing the grossest blunder! People don't examine whether, in the simplicity of a literal translation, the same passage, better rendered, would not present itself free from every difficulty!

First *example* (again one of those adduced by M. Twesten ). - St Luke, we are told (ii. 1), has no sooner spoken of the taxing ordained by a public decree issued by Augustus Cæsar, at the time of the birth of Jesus Christ, than he adds these words at verse 2: "This taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria."

Hence it would follow that St Luke is here caught in flagrant contradiction with contemporary history; for, at the birth of Jesus Christ, Judea was governed by Herod, and Syria either by Saturninus, or rather (from the seventh year of the Christian era) by Quintilius Varus, who replaced him, and during whose administration the death of Herod the Great took place. The Cyrenius (Publius Sulpicius Quirinius), under whom a second census took place, was not sent to the East until eleven or twelve years, at the least, after the birth of Jesus Christ. The historian Josephus<sup>44</sup> tells us in ex- [p.231] press terms, that this census took place the thirty-seventh year after the defeat of Anthony; and Jesus Christ was born, at the latest, the twenty-sixth year after that great event. Luke, then, must have made a mistake of eleven years, and must have confounded these two epochs and these two censuses.

Before replying to this strange accusation, we would have the reader observe its extreme improbability, even taking St Luke to have been a mere uninspired man. What! Luke, the only

43 This difficulty is hardly any longer insisted on. We can do no more here than point to the solution of it. Its exposition requires a development which would be inadmissible in these pages. It may be easily found elsewhere.

44 Ant. Jud., xvii. 15, xviii. 3.

one of the evangelists that was a person of erudition - Luke, the physician - Luke, who subsequently resumes the mention of the census of Quirinius, when he recalls that famous revolt of Judas the Galilean, which stirred up all Judea and caused the destruction of a great many people, who perished along with him<sup>45</sup> - Luke, writing for all nations, and in four and twenty pages, an historical work, which he knew would be immortal - Luke could make such a mistake as to place in the days of Herod the Great so very serious an event which had happened within the preceding thirty years! What should we say at the present day of a physician, who, even in a simple conversation, should put the battle of Austerlitz in the days of Catherine II. and of the National Convention? And if this doctor were to publish a short narrative, in which such an absurdity should be found, what reception, think you, would he find even among his most unlettered contemporaries?

It is thus, then, that often, when people would make the sacred writers contradict themselves, they scruple not to impute to them such silliness as would be almost miraculous.

But let us return to the passage. There is nothing simpler than its translation: it is a parenthesis. According to the accent placed on the first word (ἀὐτῇ), it becomes either a demonstrative pronoun, or a pronomi- [p.232] nal adjective; and, in this alternative, the phrase ought to be translated *literally*, in the former case, by “*This first census*,” and, in the latter case, by “*The first census itself*.” It is in this latter sense that the word has been rendered by the authors of the new version, published some months ago by a society of ministers in Switzerland,<sup>46</sup> and it is that also which we think ought to be adopted.

Thus, then, there is nought but what is quite natural and quite correct in St Luke’s narrative. After having spoken in the first verse of a decree from Augustus, which began to be executed under Herod’s reign,

he intimates (in the parenthesis of verse 2) that one must not confound what was done then with the too famous census of which all Judea still retained so tragical a recollection. *The first census itself*, says he, *was effected while Cyrenius was Governor of Syria. Such is the plain literal translation of the Greek.*<sup>47</sup>

*Second example.* - St Matthew (iv. 5), immediately after the first temptation, says, that “*THEN the devil led Jesus into the holy city.*” . . . . And when this second temptation was over, he adds (v. 8), in beginning to relate the third, that “*AGAIN the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, &c.*”

St Luke, on the contrary (iv. 5), immediately after the first temptation, says, that “*THEN took him up into an high mountain;*” and when this second temptation was ended, he adds, in beginning to tell of the third, “*He brought him also to Jerusalem.*” . . . .

45 Acts v. 37.

46 Lausanne, 1839, p. 105.

47 Others, taking πρώτη in the sense of προτέρα as in the πρώτός μου ἄν of John the Baptist (John i. 15, 30), translate, “This census took place before Cyrenius was governor of Syria.” This translation would still be legitimate, though perhaps less natural, because the Greek, with this meaning, would less resemble St Luke’s ordinary style.

Here, then, we find two of the evangelists manifestly at variance as to the order in which the three temptations took place. One of the two must of necessity [p.233] have been mistaken in putting the last before the second. Such is the objection.

You will see this difficulty equally vanish as soon as, instead of following Osterwald’s version or Martin’s, you seek only to give a more faithful rendering to the original text. We might here adduce a good many other passages (chiefly in the Epistles) which these two translators have darkened, by not sufficiently marking the import of the conjunctions and adverbs καὶ, δι, γὰρ, οὐ, τότε, &c.

Every one knows<sup>48</sup> that St Luke, in writing his Gospel, did not restrain himself to the order of time, and that he had proposed to himself in his narratives to group together events and lessons rather according to the order of things (καθεξῆς). Both these methods of writing biography have their advantages. Among heathen writers, for example, Nepos has followed the first, and Suetonius the second. It was necessary, therefore,

that the translators of St Luke, marking well his language, should not make him appear to use adverbs of time, order, or events, which he had no thought of employing, and which come in much out of place to alter the meaning of what he has to say. Reestablish here the conjunctions of the Greek, and you will see forthwith the contradiction which the two French texts had presented to you disappear.

St Matthew, who always follows the chronological order of the facts, takes care to employ very exact adverbs in proportion as he advances in his account of the temptation; *τότε, τότε, πάλιν, τότε, τότε, then, then, anew, then, then*. But Luke, on the contrary, who had not proposed to himself to follow the same course, and who confines his intention simply to letting us know the three attacks to which the Son of God behoved to subject his holy humanity, studiously abstains from using any adverb of order or of time, and contents himself [p.234] with coupling, ten several times, the facts of his narrative by the copulative AND (καὶ), which our translations have so improperly rendered by the adverb ALORS, or ENSUITE (English, THEN, or AFTERWARDS.)

The contradiction then does not belong to the sacred text.<sup>49</sup>

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. – It has not been sufficiently borne in mind, that certain discourses and certain acts were repeated more than once in the course of our Saviour's ministry. Hence the utmost rashness in concluding that certain detailed accounts given by two evangelists contradict each other, where there has been no more than an incomplete resemblance, and yet where people have imagined that the facts they read of were identically the same.

*Examples* - In the double miracle of the multiplication of the loaves, we have a very striking instance of the ease with which one may in this way be led into error. On two occasions Jesus

48 See Horne's Introd., vol. ii. p. 3, book 2d, § 4.

49 In the first edition of this work, we corrected here the faulty interpretation given of Job xxxvii. 8. We have suppressed it only to make room for other objections.

Christ, moved with compassion for the people, fed a famished multitude in the wilderness.

Between these two miracles there are numerous and striking points of resemblance. Had it so happened that two of the evangelists had

related only the first, and two others only the second, there would have been sure to be a cry that the two were but one, and that there was a contradiction in the statement of their details. What! in the one, five thousand men fed with five loaves; in the other, four thousand men fed with seven loaves! In the one twelve baskets (κοθίνους) taken away; in the other, seven hampers (σπυρίδας)! What a disagreement! Well it is that if Luke and John have mentioned the first only, Matthew and Mark, who relate the second, have also reported the first. But for this what a noise would not our adversaries have raised in the schools about such a passage! [p.235]

This remark may be applied to several particulars of the New Testament; for example, to the Lord's prayer, which was given twice, at least, to the disciples during our Lord's ministry. - (Matt. vi. 9; Luke xi. 2).

See also Matt. xii. 39, and xvi. 1, 4; Luke viii. 21, xi. 27, and Matt. xii. 49; Luke ix. 1, x. 1, and Matt. x. 1.

We shall adduce *one further example*.

It does not appear, on close examination, that the sermon called that of *the mount* (Matt. v. vi. vii.), and that given by St Luke in the latter half of his sixth chapter, were delivered on the same occasion.<sup>50</sup> In fact, *first*, St Luke omits many of the sentences reported by St Matthew,<sup>51</sup> and he alone adds some others (vi. 24-26); *secondly*, Matthew lets us know, that the sermon which he reports preceded the healing of the leprous person (viii. 3), and Luke that his followed it (Luke v. 12); *thirdly*, Luke puts Matthew in the number of those whom Jesus called to the apostleship, and who came down with him from the mountain, before he addressed to them his discourse; whereas Matthew himself tells us, that the sermon of which he speaks, long preceded his vocation; *fourthly*, one of those discourses was delivered *on the mountain*, while Jesus, who had sat down, had his disciples ranged around him; the other, on the contrary, was delivered on the plain, and with other circumstances attending it. We pause at this remark, in order to reassure such persons as may have heard adduced against the doctrine of inspiration, the alleged contradiction of the sentence in which Matthew (v. 40) makes Jesus say, "If any man will take away thy coat (χιτῶνα), let him have thy cloak (ἱμάτιον) also;" and of that in which, according to Luke, he had said, "Him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid

not to take thy coat also.”<sup>52</sup> One can no more, then, we say, make an objection of this diversity, see- [p.236] ing these two sentences were pronounced on different days.

Nevertheless, we must not forget, at the same time, to observe, inasmuch as this remark applies to several other objections of the same nature. Even were it true that these two passages were cited as the same *fragment* of one and the same discourse, still their differing would not have anywise astonished us. We believe that the Holy Ghost, when he quotes the Holy Ghost, is not

50 See Whitby on Matt. v. 5.

51 For example, Matt. v. 13, 39. The whole 6th and 7th chap., 6-16.

52 Luke vi. 29.

bound to use the same terms, provided the same meanings be retained. A man of an exact mind, in repeating what he has said before, or in quoting himself, by no means thinks himself bound to carry imitation thus far. And we think, that here our Lord's whole idea is found equally in the sentences of Luke and Matthew.

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. – One may sometimes pay no attention to a *various reading* critically respectable, and which resolves a difficulty; and prefer imputing some contradiction to the sacred writer.

Example. - According to the three first evangelists (Mark xv. 25, 33, 34; Matt. xxvii. 45, 46; Luke xxiii. 44, 45), our Saviour was put upon the cross at the *third hour* of the day (that is to say, at nine o'clock in the morning); the sun was darkened at the sixth hour, and Jesus gave up the ghost at the ninth hour; whereas, if we are to believe St John (xix. 14), the execution did not begin until the *sixth hour of the day* (at noon). Palpable contradiction! say some objectors.

Before replying to this difficulty, we shall offer a remark, much like that already made on the census of Cyrenius. Was it likely that the apostle John was ignorant of the length of time that his Master's execution lasted, and could he possibly have made a mistake [p.237] of three hours out of six - he who had remained beside the cross!

But, if we consult the Greek manuscripts of St John, we shall find four in small letters, and three in uncial letters (among others, Beza's

famous roll, preserved at Cambridge), which have here the *third* hour instead of the *sixth*. Numbers, in the Greek manuscripts, are often expressed in numerals; that is to say, in simple Greek letters; and 3 and 6 are expressed by two letters that are very easily confounded (the γάμμα and the ἐπίσημον): several of the ancients thought that the variation might have arisen from this cause. Griesbach, who has marked this variation with a sign of preference, quotes Severus of Antioch and Ammonius in Theophylact; and he adds, that the Chronicle of Alexandria appealed, in favour of this reading, to the best copies, and even to the original autographs (ἰδιοχέϊρ) of the Gospel of St John.

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. - People fail to seize the meaning of certain particulars in a narrative, and hasten to conclude that the author was mistaken!

*First example.* - Jesus, in St Matthew (xxiii. 35, 36), denounced the most terrible judgments of God on the Jews, on account of the treatment they had given his saints, “in order,” says he, “that upon this race (or this generation, γενεάν) may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar!”

Here, certainly, we are told, there is an awkward inadvertence, not on the part of Jesus Christ, no doubt, but of the evangelist who reports these words, and whose memory must have failed him. We know, from the Second Book of Chronicles (xxiv. 21), that this Zacharias, who was stoned to death by the Jews in the holy place (ἱερῶ), was the son, not of Barachias, but of Je- [p.238] hoiada. here, then, there is an evident error. It does not affect doctrine, and cannot in the slightest degree disquiet our faith; but it suffices to attest, that the divine inspiration has not descended, as has been maintained, to the choice of expressions, or to matters of indifference, in the inspired narratives.

The answer is simple; would we could make it as short as it is conclusive. We shall first briefly state what it is. The Zacharias here is not the Zacharias you speak of: the Evangelist, therefore, has made no mistake in not naming him, for he was not thinking of him. Is there not, in fact, a manifest incompatibility in such a supposition with the idea that occupied our Lord’s mind? Was it not his purpose to recall the long succession of homicides for which the Jewish race will have to render

an account? And when he takes his first instance of murder from times preceding the flood, at the gate of paradise, to make them accountable for it, you would have him think it enough to adduce as the last, a crime committed above eight centuries before! After commencing with a son of Adam, can you imagine that he could end with the son of Jehoiada thus holding the Jew's innocent of the blood shed, during the 873 most scandalous years of their history? Would it not have been more rational to begin rather than to end with Jehoiada? Were not the Jews far more responsible for the murders they had committed during the last preceding nine centuries of their history, than they could be for blood shed before the deluge? Had they not persecuted, for example, and slain with frightful atrocity the prophet Urijah, 240 years after Jehoiada? - (Jer. xxvi. 23.) "Which of the prophets," said St Stephen to them, "have not your fathers persecuted? They have even slain them which showed before of the coming of the Just One!" - (Acts vii. 52.) in this passage of St Matthew, then, it is not the son of Jehoiada that is spoken of.

Here our reply might close; but we shall no doubt, be asked, Who then was the Zechariah spoken of by [p.239] Jesus Christ? Even, although we did not know, this would by no means be a difficulty, and we should content ourselves with replying: It was some just person whom the Jews slew, not only in the court of the temple (ἐν τῷ ἱερῷ) like the son of Jehoiada, but *between the temple* (τοῦ ναοῦ) *and the altar*;" and this just person was *son of Barachias*! Nevertheless, one may go further still; for history speaks of two or three other Zachariahs, sons of Barachias (Βαραχίου or Βαρούχου), among whom the learned divide their suffrages.

The first was a man who had understanding in the visions of God (as he is called in the second book of Chronicles),<sup>53</sup> and who is believed to be the same as he that is spoken of by Isaiah, in his 8th chapter.<sup>54</sup> Be that as it may, he lived too short a time after the son of Jehoiada, for our objections against the one not to be equally valid against the other.

The second is the prophet "Zachariah, the son of Berechiah, and the grandson of Iddo" (Zech. i. 1), who returned from Babylon with Zorobabel, 325 years after the days of Jehoiada, and whose writings form the second last book of the Old Testament.

The Scripture, it is true, has not related his martyrdom to us, any more than that of the other prophets, who were almost all persecuted

and put to death. But the temple and the altar were

53 xxvi. 5.

54 Hieron. in Isaïam, viii. 2 (in the LXX. Ζαχαρίαν υἱὸν Βαραχίου.)

rebuilt by his care, as well that of Haggai (Esdras iv. 14, 15); and Zachariah, as it would appear, was slain “between that temple and that altar.” We read in the *Targum*, or the Chaldee paraphrase of *Jonathan Ben-Uziel* (said to have been a contemporary of Jesus Christ),<sup>55</sup> the following passage, which attest to us what was even then, previous to the days of our Saviour, the tradition of the Jews with regard to this prophet, called indifferently the son of Hiddo and the son of Barachias (Zech. i. 1 ; Ezra v. 1 ; vi. 14) The paraphrast (Lam. ii. 20) introduces the “House of [p.240] Judgment” replying to this complaint of Jeremiah: “Shall the priest and the prophet be slain in the sanctuary of the Lord?” “Was it well in you . . . to slay a prophet as you did Zechariah, the son of Hiddo, in the house of the Lord’s sanctuary, because he endeavoured to withdraw you from your evil ways?”<sup>56</sup> Thus it will be seen that Jesus Christ might remind the Jews of the sacrilegious murder of that prophet, son of Barachias, and son of Hiddo, with whom the prophecy of the Old Testament was to close.

However, there is still a third Zacharias, son of Barachias, (or of Baruch, Βαραχίου), to whom our Lord’s saying might be applied with still more likelihood. Flavius Josephus has made him known to us in that inestimable “History of the Jewish War,” which confirms so many other prophecies of the New Testament. It was only three years before the final destruction of Jerusalem, that people saw a Zacharias, son of Barach slain by the Jewish zealots in the middle of the holy place (ἐν μέσῳ τῷ ἱερῷ),<sup>57</sup> and his body was thrown over the walls of the mount on which the temple stood. He was a just man, according to Josephus; he was hated for his virtues, for his influence, for his hatred of evil, and for his zeal for liberty.<sup>58</sup> At the close of that frightful night, which was, says Josephus, “the real commencement of the destruction of Jerusalem,” (and in which the zealots butchered the chief of the nation, the high priest Ananus, and, soon after, twelve thousand youths of the Israelitish nobility), these infuriated men, affecting the forms of justice, had him dragged before a court of seventy judges, all of whom, however, had the courage to declare him innocent. Then, maddened with

rage at hearing his reproaches, and at the noble spirit in which he addressed them, they rushed upon him and massacred him *in the middle of the holy place.*” Here, as many commentators think, we behold the last of the [p.241] just persons whose blood has to be required of that homicidal race. Abel is the first, Zacharias the last. Thus it is, that Jesus Christ, assuming the style of the prophets in using the past for the future, speaks of this crime as already committed: “*Whom ye slew,*” he says to them, “*between the temple and the altar!*”

The historian Josephus, it is true, speaks of Zacharias only as a righteous man, and not as a Christian or as a prophet. But, being a Jew, he could not hold any other language. And we see at another place (Antiq., lib. xx. c 8), that as little does he speak of the apostle James (who, nevertheless, was also a prophet) as more than a good man, whom the high priest Ananus

55 Prolegom. de Walton, 12.

56 Whitby's Commentary on Matt. xxiii. 35.

57 Bell. Judaic., lib. iv. c. 19.

58 παρώξυνε ὁ αὐτοῦς τὸ λίαν τὰνδρὸς μισοπόνηρον καὶ φιλελεύθερον.

caused to be stoned,<sup>59</sup> to the great regret of the more respectable classes, during the interregnum that followed the unexpected death of the governor Festus. No more does it appear to us that the difference in the terminations of the names *Barachias* and *Baruch*, is enough to destroy the argument arising from their etymological and radical resemblance. We see, in fact, in the New Testament, how much people were accustomed, among the Jews, Hebrew or Hellenist, to change the termination of their proper names. (Silas and Silvanus,<sup>60</sup> Prisca and Priscilla,<sup>61</sup> Rabba and Rabbath, Lucas and Lucius<sup>62</sup>).

Be this as it may, we conclude once more, that this passage could not refer to the son of Jehoiadah; and we leave to the reader to decide which of the two personages whom we have pointed out was the one contemplated by Jesus Christ.

*Second example.* - Mark xi. 11-14. – *Jesus cursed a fig-tree which had only leaves; for the time for figs was not yet come.*

Here, we are told, there is no doubt a mistake: why [p.242] look for fruit at a time when it could not reasonably be expected?

Yet there is nothing here but what is very simple. Had it been the

season for gathering figs, the tree might have been stripped of all its fruit by the hand of man; and, in that case, there was no evidence of its barrenness.

But is a tree (we mention the objection in passing) guilty because it hears no fruit? Why punish it? We reply, that in this miracle, which is a type, the tree is as little a sufferer as it is a criminal, nor is its suffering more real than its morality. The one is symbolical, and so also is the other.

ANOTHER SOURCE OF PRECIPITATE JUDGMENT. – In questions of chronology, regard has not been paid to the following rule (which we take pleasure in expressing here in the very words of the great reformer of Italy, the excellent Peter Martyr).<sup>63</sup>

[The great divisions of time in the history of the people of God are pointed out to us by numerical dates of great precision. From the passing of Abraham into Canaan to the entrance of his grandson into Egypt, 215 years; from that to the passage of the Red Sea, 215 years more - hence in all 430 years (Gal. iii. 17; Exod. xii. 40); from that, further, to the foundation of the temple, 480 years (1 Kings ii. 1); and from that, in fine, to the Babylonish captivity, 422 years more. But within these grand divisions of history, the precise and co-ordinate arrangement of all the short intermediate dates, the reconciling of the numbers presented to us by books of an almost monumental conciseness, and of an age contemporary with the siege of Troy (that of Judges, Kings, and Chronicles), respecting the reigns and interregnums, first of the Judges, then of the Kings, especially after the subdivision of the twelve tribes into two distinct kingdoms; this arrangement, we say, pre-

59 *Επιεικέστατων*.

60 2 Cor. i. 19; Thess. i. 1; Acts xv. 22-34, xvi. 25, xvii. 15.

61 Tim. iv. 19; Rom. xvi. 3; Acts xviii. 2-26.

62 Acts xiii. 1; Rom. xvi. 21; Philem. 24.

63 In his Commentary on 2 Kings viii. 17, and 1 Kings xv. 1. [p.243]

sents numerous difficulties, for which we find the elements of an entire solution sometimes wanting.]

The following is the rule of Peter Martyr:-

“Although obscure passages occur as to chronology, we must

beware of pretending to reconcile them by imputing blunders to the inspired books. Therefore it is, that should it sometimes happen that we know not how to account for the number of years, we ought simply to confess our ignorance, and consider that the Scriptures express themselves with so much conciseness that it is not always possible for us to discover at what epoch we ought to make such or such a computation commence. It often enough happens, that, in the history of the kings of Judah and of Israel, the respective numbers of their years are not easily reconciled; but these difficulties admit of explanation or adjustment in several ways. 1. The same year commenced by one of two, and finished by the other, is attributed to both. 2. Often the sons have reigned with their fathers during some years, which have been imputed sometimes to the fathers, sometimes to the sons. 3. There were often interregnums, which the Scripture attributes sometimes to the predecessor, sometimes to the successor. Finally, it sometimes happens that certain years, in which oppressive and profane princes have reigned, are not reckoned to them, being imputed to their immediate successor; thus, the twenty last years of Joram to his son Ahaziah. - (2 Kings viii. 26; 2 Chron. Xxii. 2.)”

We think that the examples we have thus far adduced, may suffice. We refrain from adducing more. What we have said may give one an idea of the weight to be attached to these difficulties,<sup>64</sup> for (we repeat) we have been careful to adduce those which have been held as the most serious. Warned by these examples, and by so many others, let us learn then, should any [p.244] embarrassment of the same kind occur to us in future, how to judge as did Origen’s friend, Julius Africanus, sixteen hundred years ago, and as, before and after him, all the men of God have done. “Be that as it may (said he on the occasion of the two genealogies of Jesus Christ, which he had reconciled) be that as it may, the gospel certainly every where speaks true!” - Τὸ μέντοι Ἐὐαγγέλιον πάντως ἀληθεύει.<sup>65</sup>

## *Section VI. Errors Contrary to Natural Philosophy.*

It will be admitted, we have been sometimes told, that the apparent or real contradictions in the dates, quotations, and narratives of the Holy

Bible, may possibly be removed by the resources

64 See, for further details, the authors whom we have quoted, and in particular the useful compilation of Horne. - (Introduction to the Critical Study of the Bible).

65 Euseb. Hist. Eccles., lib. i. c. 7.

of a more or less laborious exegesis; but there are others which you cannot reconcile: such are all those expressions in which the sacred writers appear in manifest opposition to the now better known laws of nature. Nevertheless (these objectors desire to add), though this argument be irrefragable against the verbal inspiration of the Scriptures, it compromises in noticing the divinity of their doctrines, any more than the great religious facts which they report to us. In inspiring his apostles and his prophets, God desired to make us, not scientific, but holy persons. Thus he could, without danger, allow the writers he employed to speak in ignorance of the phenomena of the material world; and their prejudices on such matters are innocent though incontestable. Do you not often find them expressing themselves as if the earth were immovable and the sun in motion That star, according to them, rises and falls: “his going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the ends of it” (Ps. xix); the moon and the stars are [p.245] equally in movement; the sun, at the command of Joshua became immovable in the midst of the heavens, it “stood still upon Gibeon, and the moon in the valley of Ajalon” (Josh. x. 12); the earth is “founded on the seas” (Ps. xxiv. 2); “drawn the water, it subsists amid the water (2 Peter iii. 5); “God hath laid its foundations, it shall never be moved” (Ps. civ. 5) - Can you admit that this is really the language of the Creator of the heavens and of the earth, when addressing his creatures?

We proceed to reply to this objection, and we are delighted to meet it on our path, seeing that the examination of it can only redound to the glory of the Scriptures.

We most fully admit that were there some physical errors, duly ascertained, in the book of the Scriptures, it would not be entirely from God; but we proceed to put it beyond a doubt that there are no such errors; and we will venture to defy our adversaries to produce a single such error in the whole of the Bible. Nay, we will even go much farther; and will show how much latent science, on the contrary, betrays itself there, beneath the simplicity of its language.

We shall begin by saying a few words on Joshua's miracle, inasmuch as a disposition has often been shown to turn it to account in combating either the plenary inspiration, or even the divine mission of the men of God. Several unbelieving writers have attacked it with that arrogance and irony which too often characterize them. But it is easy to reply to them. We have no thoughts of discussing here the methods by which the miracle might have been accomplished; we would only remark, from this example, how lightly people hasten to pronounce, that because certain passages of Scripture are not understood, therefore they must needs be irrational.

*The sun, on the day of the battle of Beth-horon, stood still in the midst of heaven, we are told in the 10th chapter of Joshua; and there was no day like that before it or after it.*

[p.246]

It has been said in Germany – “This phrase, taken in its natural sense, seems to us absurd; it is erroneous, therefore, and altogether human.” Elsewhere it has been pronounced so absurd, that another meaning must be given to it. But both opinions are drawn from false premises. The fact is far from being absurd; it is only miraculous.

We shall give the objection in the *very* words in which it has been stated:- “The most fearless methodist,” it has been said, “will feel constrained to own that in the system of our globe, were the sun to stop for an instant, or were the earth's motion to be slackened, belligerent armies, and all that is on the earth's surface, would be swept away like chaff before the wind!”

Nevertheless, it is this very objection which is an error. In point of fact, if the miracle, instead of stopping the rotation of the globe suddenly, in an indivisible instant, took only the short space of a few seconds to accomplish it, by a supple and continuous action, then you have enough in this feeble circumstance to be assured that such a phenomenon would have had no very sensible effect mechanically beyond that of raising the waters diffused over the surface of the earth, and making them to flow from west to east. A child might tell it you. Let a carriage in rapid motion meet a curb-stone - it shatters itself upon it, because the stone is immovable; and all that are in the carriage are projected to a distance, and thrown with violence on the ground. But let it be stopt by a continuous resistance, operating in a successive manner,

and consummating itself in three or four seconds: then the smallest children seated in the carriage will remain in their seats; they will not even feel the impulsion which three seconds before was impressed on them by the impetuous movement of the horses, and which, without this precaution, would have sufficed to launch them to a distance.

The rotation of the earth is, at the equator, 1426 feet the second; at Jerusalem, 1212 feet. This is the initial speed of a canon ball projected by a charge the fifth [p.247] part of its own weight. It is capable (abstraction being made of the resistance of the air) of raising that projectile to the extreme height of 24,000 feet; and yet a child, six years old, would destroy, without danger, *in two-thirds of a minute*, the whole of this force by the continued action of his fingers. Put into his little hands a canon ball of eight pounds weight, and let him hold it against the action of its weight during two-thirds of a minute; during the same time, allow another bullet of quite the same weight to drop freely through the air, and from the height of the summit of the Himalaya range. When forty seconds only have expired, the force of gravitation, after having acted *by the same impulsions* upon both these projectiles, will not have done more with respect to the first than have fatigued the feeble hands that resist it, while it would have made the other acquire a speed equal to that which the rotation of the earth impressed on the belligerent armies on the hill of Beth-horon. Since, then, a child might destroy, by the continuous effort of his little hands, a force capable (if concentrated on a single instant) of launching a canon bullet to the height of Chimborazo, we can easily conceive that, if God, on the day of the battle of Beth-horon, had employed two-thirds of a minute to arrest, by short and successive resistances, the rotation of our globe, then the projectile impulsions which a mass of eight pounds of iron would have received continually during these forty seconds, would not even have been so strong as that a child might not have destroyed them by the sole effort of his fingers, and without expending more force than he would have to put forth in sustaining with his hands a weight of eight pounds during the same space of time. And if the mass, instead of having the form of a bullet, had had that of a quoit or a cube, it would not have had enough of that impulsion to make it overcome the resistance of friction, and to change its place on the surface of the ground.

It will be objected, perhaps, that the rotation of the earth at Beth-

horon, was twenty-seven times more rapid [p.248] than that of a steam-carriage on a railway. This is true; but since the retarding force necessary for exhausting a given impulsion is in the inverse ratio of the time employed in it, grant that the miracle took eighteen minutes for its consummation; take eighteen minutes (instead of forty seconds) for the entire stoppage of the movement of the terrestrial globe at the voice of Joshua; and then the belligerent armies, instead of being “swept away as if by a tempest,” would not have felt more from what happened, than do the thousands of travellers that are stopt at each of the stations on a railway.

Other difficulties of a like kind have been started with regard to this miracle of Joshua. Had the earth, it has been said, suspended its motion during ten hours, the attractive force of the sun acting singly upon it, would in that time have made it fall 900 leagues in the direction of the sun’s blazing focus, and the annual conditions of our orbit would have been sensibly troubled.

This objection is no less futile than the preceding. The miracle, in fact, does not imply the slightest perturbation in the progressive movement of the earth; it requires it only in its rotation. Now, according to the laws of the celestial mechanism, the rotation of a star upon its axis is entirely independent of the movement impressed on its centre of gravity, and which makes it move onwards in its elliptical course. Experience had attested this before it was demonstrated by calculation. It had long been observed that the speed of the sun (or rather of the earth) in its orbit, ceases not to vary from one end of the year to the other; and yet there does not exist in nature a more uniform movement than that which makes the whole celestial sphere daily revolve to our eyes. We are even assured, from the observations of the movement of the moon, that for more than 2000 years the sidereal day has not varied so much as the hundredth part of a second.

Let there be supposed, then, a double shock impressed upon the earth above and below its centre, and in two [p.249] contrary and parallel directions, and we shall have explained how its rotation on its axis might have been suspended without any change in its onward movement. But here I check myself. it would be rash, do I say? it would be childish to pretend to enter into the details of the prodigy with the view of ascertaining its causes; and my only wish has been. to show the

fertility of the objections. The true one, which people do not state, is that they find the miracle too great for its object. But, for men who believe in the great miracle of redemption by the Son of God, nothing is too great, and all things advance in due proportions, in the divine revelations. Moreover, and I hasten to say it, it would not even be necessary, in order to account for this prodigy, to suppose so sovereign an act of Omnipotence as the suspension of the rotation of our globe. God might have employed for this purpose only one of those numerous means which divert the light from its paths, and produce the innumerable illusions of optics; some one of those refractions, for example, which daily displace to our eyes, in different measures, all the stars of the celestial sphere. Is it not matter of notoriety, that in the polar regions the power of the horizontal refractions makes the sun appear to the inhabitants of those cold countries ten days before he really rises above the horizon? Such might have been the cause of the miracle of Beth-horon. We decide nothing; we do not even venture on a hypothesis. We would only say, that the miracle was duly consummated (whatever the means by which it was produced), provided that *the sun*, to the eyes of the inhabitants of Palestine, *stood still upon Gibeon, and the moon in the valley of Ajalon*.<sup>66</sup>

Meanwhile, the Scriptures are reproached with holding a language on the daily phenomena of nature, apparently betokening ignorance, and incompatible with a plenary inspiration. According to the writers of the Bible, the sun rises, the sun sets, the sun stands still, [p.250] the earth remains unmoved. People will have it that the Creator, in speaking to us in a book inspired by him, would have more clearly shown us that the Spirit, that made the ‘sacred historians speak, knew before we did the rotation of our globe, its periodical revolution, and the respective immobility of the sun.

Let us, then, examine this reproach.

We ask, first of all, of the persons who give utterance to it, if they would have had the Bible to speak like Sir Isaac Newton. Would they dismiss from their minds the consideration that if God, in speaking of the decrees of nature, were to express himself, I do not say only as he sees them, but as the scientific men of future ages will be able to see them, then even the great Newton could have understood nothing of what was said? Moreover, even the most advanced language of science

is not yet, and never will be, after all, more than the language of appearances. The visible world, much more than you suppose, is a passing shadow, a scene of illusions and of phantoms. What you call a reality is still in itself but a phenomenon considered in its relation to a more exalted reality, and to an ulterior analysis. In our mortal lips the word reality has nothing absolute; it is a term altogether relative, merely intimating that people think they have added one new step to the deep ladder of our ignorances. The human eye sees objects under only two dimensions, and projects them all as if on the same canvass, until touch and repeated experience have assured us of the reality of a depth, or of a third dimension. Colours are accidents, and it is only by reflection or illusion that they belong to the object which presents them to you. Even the impenetrability of bodies, their solidity, their extension, are no more than are appearance, and present themselves as re reality only until the farther progress of one science shall substitute another for it. Who would venture to say where this analysis ought to stop, and in what terms should we speak of creatures with which we are most familiar, were we but endowed with one more sense, [p.251] with antennae, for example, like ants and bees? The expression of appearances, accordingly, provided it be exact, is, among men, philosophically correct, and what it behoved the Scriptures to employ. Would men have the Bible speak to us of the scenes of nature otherwise than we speak of them to one another, in our social or domestic intercourse, otherwise even than they are spoken of among the most enlightened persons? When Sir John Herschel tells his domestics to waken him precisely at midnight, to observe the passage of some star over his meridian telescope, does he feel himself called upon to speak to them about the rotation of the earth, and of the moment when it will have brought their nadir into the plane of its orbit? I should think not; and were you even to hear him converse in Greenwich Observatory with the scientific Airey, you would find, that even in that sanctuary of science, the habitual language

66 One may read, besides, on this miracle, some striking historical and geological considerations in Chaubard's *Elements de Geologie*.

of these astronomers is still quite like that of the Scriptures. For them the stars rise, the equinoxes recede, the planets go forward and

accelerate their speed, stop and go back. Would you, then, that Moses should speak to all the generations of men in a more scientific language than La Place or Arago?

But more than this. Here we would bid the reader notice two general facts, that throw out a deal of light the moment we study them, and which soon betray in the Scriptures the pen of Almighty God. here, as every where else, the objections, when narrowly examined, come back upon you, loudly retract themselves, and become arguments on the other side.

These two facts are analogous to what you might observe in the words of a scientific astronomer conversing with his sons in their boyhood, and pointing out the earth and the heavens to them with his finger. If you follow him into these conversations, where his affection, stooping to their level, presents to their growing intelligence such images and words as it care comprehend, you will soon notice his respect for truth shown under a double character. First, he will never say any [p.252] thing to them that is not true; and, secondly, there will be many intimations in his words that he knows more on the subject than he wishes to tell them. He will make no pretension, it is true, to teach them science; but, on the one hand, nothing in all he says will contradict its principles; and, on the other hand, several of his words will at once reveal that while he restrains himself from speaking about it, still he knows it. Afterwards, when his children, grown up to manhood, come to recall his words, not only will they find them exempt from all error, but they will farther recognize in them such a skilful choice of expression as to put them at once in a preestablished harmony with science, and to present it to them, while not aware of it, in its germ. In proportion to the gradual advance of their own knowledge, they will see with admiration, under the reserve and simplicity of his language, concealed marks of wisdom, instances of a scientific precision, a general phraseology and particular expressions harmonizing with events then unknown to them, but that had long been known to him.

Well, then, such also is the double observation which every attentive reader may make on the phraseology of the Scriptures. They speak poetically, but with precision, the true language of appearances. In them we hear a father condescending to address his youngest sons, yet in such a manner that the oldest can never find there a single sentence

contrary to the true condition of the things he has created; and in such a manner also he suffers to escape from him, without affectation, enough to demonstrate to them that all that they have learned of his works during the last four thousand years, he knew before them and better than they. It is thus that, in the Bible, Eternal Wisdom addresses his children. In proportion as they advance in growth, they see that the Scripture is made for their age, is adapted to their development, appearing to grow with their growth, and always presenting the two facts which we have pointed out: on the one hand, the absence of all error; on the [p.253] other, indirect yet incontestable indications of a science which preceded all that of man.

*First fact.* - There is no physical error in the Word of God.

If there were any, we have admitted it, the book would not be from God. "God is not man that he should lie," nor the son of man that he should be mistaken. He behoves, no doubt, in order to his being understood, to stoop to our weakness, but without in the least partaking in it; and his language will always be found to witness to his condescension, never to his ignorance.

This remark is still more serious than one would suppose before heaving reflected on it. It becomes very striking on a close examination.

Examine all the false theologies of the ancients and moderns; read in Homer or in Hesiod, the religious codes of the Greeks; study those of the Buddhists, those of the Brahmins, those of the Mahommedans; you will not only find in these repulsive systems on the subject of the Godhead, but will meet with the grossest errors on the material world. You will be revolted with their theology no doubt; but their natural philosophy and their astronomy also, ever allied to their religion, will be found to rest on the most absurd notions.

Read in the Chou-king and the Y-king of the Chinese, their fantastic systems on the five elements (wood, fire, earth, metal, and water), and on their omnipotent influences on all divine and human affairs.<sup>67</sup> Read in the *Shaster*, in the *Pouran*, in the four books of the *Vedham*, or law of the Hindus, their revolting cosmogony. The moon is 50,000 leagues higher than the sun; it shines with its own light; it animates our body. Night is caused by the sun's setting behind the mountain Someyra, situated in the middle of the earth, and several

thousand miles high.

Our earth is flat and [p.254] triangular, composed of seven stages, each with its own degree of beauty, its own inhabitants, and its own sea, the first of honey, another of sugar, another of butter, another of wine; in fine, the whole mass is borne on the heads of countless elephants which, in shaking themselves, cause earthquakes in this nether world!<sup>68</sup> In one word, they have placed the whole history of their gods in relations at once the most fantastic and the most necessary with the physical world and all the phenomena of the universe. Thus, the missionaries of India have often repeated that a telescope, silently planted in the midst of the holy city of Benares, or in the ancient Ava, would prove a battery, powerful as lightning, for overturning the whole system of Brahma, and the whole of that of Boudhou.

Read farther the philosophers of Greek and Roman antiquity, Aristotle, Seneca, Pliny, Plutarch, Cicero. How many expressions of opinion will you not find there, any single one of which would be enough to compromise all our doctrines of inspiration, if it could be meet with in any book of Holy Scripture! Read Mahomet's Koran, making mountains to be created "to prevent the earth from moving, and to hold it fast as if with anchors and cables." What do I say? Read even the cosmogony of Buffon, or some of Voltaire's sneers on the doctrine of a deluge, or on the fossil animals of a primitive world. We will go much farther. Read again, we do not say the absurd reasonings of the pagans, of Lucretius, of Pliny, or of Plutarch, against the theory of the antipodes, but even the fathers of the Christian Church. Hear the theological indignation of the admirable Augustine, who says that it is opposed to the Scriptures; and the scientific eloquence of Lactantius, who considers it so opposed to common sense "*Num aliquid loquenter!*" he exclaims; "is there any man so silly as to believe that men exist having their feet above their heads, trees with their fruit hang-

67 Panthier, Les livres sacrés de l'Orient (Paris, 1840), pp. 15, 89, 94, 146, &c.

68 Modern Uni. Hist. vol. vi. p. 275. [p.255]

downwards, rain, snow, and hail falling topsy turvy!" "They would answer you," he adds, "by maintaining that the earth is a globe! *Quid dicam de iis nescio, qui cum semel aberraverint, constanter in stultitia perseverant, et vanis vana defendant!*" "One knows not what to say of

such men, who, when they have once run into error, persist in their folly, and defend one absurdity by another!”<sup>69</sup>

Listen, farther, to the legate Boniface, who brought Virgilius, for his opinion in this matter, as a heretic before the Pope; listen to Pope Zachary treating that unhappy bishop as *homo malignus*. “If it be proved,” says he, “that Virgilius maintains the existence of other men under this earth, call a council, condemn him, put him out of the Church, depose him from the priesthood!” Listen, at a later period, to the whole clergy of Spain, and especially to the imposing Council of Salamanca, indignant at the geographical system by which Christopher Columbus was led to look for a whole new continent. Listen, at the epoch of Newton’s birth, to the great Galileo, who “ascended,” says Kepler, “the highest ramparts of the universe,” and who justified at once by his genius and by his telescope the disowned and condemned system of Copernicus; behold his groaning, at the age of eighty), in the prisons of Rome, for having discovered the movement of the earth, after having lined to pronounce these words, ten years before (28th June 1633), before their Eminences, at the palace of the Holy Office: “I, Galileo, in the seventieth year of my age, on my knees before your Eminences, having before my eyes, and touching with my own hands, the Holy Scriptures, abjure, curse, and detest, the error of the earth’s movement.”

What might we not have been entitled to say of the Scriptures, had they expressed themselves on the phenomena of nature, as these have been spoken of by all the ancient sages? - had they referred all to four elements, as people did for so long a period? - had they said the stars were of crystal, as did Philolaus of Crotona; and had they, like Empedocles, lighted up the two hemispheres of our world with two suns? - had they taught, like Leucippus, that the fixed stars, set ablaze by the swiftness of their diurnal movement round the earth, feed the sun with their fires? - had they, like Diodorus of Sicily, and all the Egyptian sages, formed the heavens and the earth by the motion of the air and the natural ascent of fire? - or had they thought, like Philoläus, that the sun has only a borrowed light, and is only a mirror, which receives and sends down to us the light of the celestial spheres? - had they, like Anaxagoras, conceived it to be a mass of iron larger than the Peloponnesus, and the earth to be a mountain, whose roots stretched infinitely downwards? - had they imagined the heaven to be a solid

sphere, to which the fixed stars are attached, as was done by Aristotle, *and almost all the ancients?* - had they called the celestial vault a *firmamentum*, or a στερέωμα, as their interpreters have done, both in Latin and in Greek? - had they spoken, as has been done so recently, and even among people professing Christianity, of the influence exerted by the movements of the heavens on the elements of this lower world, on the characters of men, and on the course of human affairs? Such is the natural proneness of all nations to this superstition, that, notwithstanding their religion, the ancient Jews, and the Christians themselves, equally fell into it. “The modern Greeks,” says

69 On False Knowledge, book iii. chap. 24.

D’Alembert,<sup>70</sup> “have carried it to excess; hardly do we find one of their authors who does not, on all occasions, speak of predictions by the stars, of horoscopes, and talismans, so that there was hardly an edifice in Constantinople, and in all Greece, that had not been erected according to the rules of the *apotelesmatic astrology*.” French historians observe, that astrology was so much in fashion under Catherine de Medicis, that [p.257] people dared not undertake any thing of importance without having consulted the stars; and even under Henry III. and Henry IV., the predictions of astrologers formed the engrossing subject of ordinary conversation at court. “We have seen, towards the close of the last century,” says Ph. Giuliani,<sup>71</sup> “an Italian send Pope Innocent XI. a prediction, in the manner of a horoscope, on Vienna, at that time besieged by the Turks, and which was very well received.” And in our own days the Court de Boulainvilliers has written very seriously on the subject.

Open now the Bible; study its fifty sacred authors, from that wonderful Moses who held the pen in the wilderness, four hundred years before the war of Troy, down to the fisherman, son of Zebedee, who wrote fifteen hundred years afterwards, in Ephesus and in Patmos, under the reign of Domitian; open the Bible, and try if you can to find any thing of this sort there. No. None of those blunders which the science of every successive age discovers in the books of those that preceded it; none of those absurdities, above all, which modern astronomy points out, in such numbers, in the writings of the ancients, in their sacred codes, in their systems of philosophy, and in the finest

pages even of the fathers of the Church; no such errors can be found in any of our sacred books; nothing there will ever contradict what, after so many ages, the investigations of the learned world have been able to reveal to us of what is certain in regard to the state of our globe or of that of the heavens. Carefully peruse our Scriptures from one end to the other, in search of such blemishes there; and while engaged in this research, remember that it is a book which speaks of every thing, which describes nature, which proclaims its grandeur, which tells the story of its creation, which informs us of the structure of the heavens, of the creation of light, of the waters, of the atmosphere, of the mountains, of animals, and of plants; [p.258] - it is a book that tells us of the first revolutions of the world, and foretells to us also the last; a book that relates them in circumstantial narratives, exalts them in a sublime poesy, and chants them in strains of fervent psalmody; - it is a book replete with the glow of oriental rapture, elevation, variety, and boldness; - it is a book which speaks of the earth and of things visible, at the same time that it speaks of the celestial world and of things invisible; - it is a book to which nearly fifty writers of every degree of mental cultivation, of every rank, of every condition, and separated by fifteen hundred years from each other, have successively put their hand; - it is a book composed first in the centre of Asia, among the sands of Arabia, or in the deserts of Judea, or in the fore-court of the temple of the Jews, or in the rustic schools of the prophets of Bethel and of Jericho, or in the sumptuous palaces of Babylon, or on the idolatrous banks of Chebar; and afterwards, at the centre of western civilisation, amid the Jews with their manifold ignorance, amid polytheism and its ideas, as well as in the bosom of pantheism and its silly philosophy; - it is a book the first writer of which had been for the space of forty years

70 *Encycl. on Dict. rais. des Sciences, &c.*, t. i. p. 663. (Lacca, 1758.)

71 *Encycl. on Dict. rais. des Sciences, &c.*, t. i. p.664.

a pupil of the magicians of Egypt, who looked upon the sun, and the stars, and the elements as endowed with intelligence, as re-acting upon the elements, and as governing the world by continual effluxes; - it is a book the first chapters of which preceded by more than NINE HUNDRED YEARS the most ancient philosophers of ancient Greece and of Asia, the Thaleses, the Pythagorases, the Zaleucuses, the

Xenophanesees, the Confuciuses; - it is a book which carries its narratives even into the field of the invisible world, even into the hierarchies of the angels, even into the remotest realms of futurity, and the glorious scenes of the last day; - well then, search through these 50 authors, search through these 66 books, search through these 1,189 chapters, and these 31,173 verses . . . search for one single error of those thousands with which ancient and modern books abound, when they speak either of the [p.259] heaven or of the earth, or of their revolutions, or of their elements; search, but you will search in vain.

There is nothing constrained or reserved in its language; it speaks of all things and in all tones; it is the prototype, it is the unapproachable model; it has been the inspirer of all the most exalted productions of poetry. Ask this of Milton, of the two Racines, of Young, of Klopstock. They will tell you that this divine poesy is of all the most lyrical, the boldest in its flights, and the most sublime: it rises on a cherub and soars on the wings of the wind. And yet never does this book do violence to the facts or to the principles of a sound philosophy of nature. Never will you find it in opposition, in the case of a single sentence, with the correct notions which science has enabled us to reach with regard to the form of our globe, its size, or its geology; on the vacuum and on space; on the inert and obedient materiality of all the stars; on the planets, on their masses, on their courses, on their dimensions, or on their influences; on the suns that people the depths of space, on their number, on their nature, or their immensity. Just as in speaking of the invisible world, and of a subject so new, so unknown, and so delicate, as that of the angels, this book has not one of its authors that, in the course of the 1560 years which it took to write it, has varied in the character of charity, humility, fervour, and purity which belongs to those mysterious beings; just as in speaking of the relations of the celestial world with God, never has one of these fifty writers, either in the Old or in the New Testament, uttered a single word that favours that constant leaning to panthiesm which characterises the whole philosophy of the Gentiles; so likewise you will not find one of the authors of the Bible who, in speaking of the visible world, has suffered a single one of those expressions of opinion to escape him, which, in other books, contradict the reality of facts - not one which makes the heaven to be a firmament, as has been done by the Septuagint, St Jerome, and all the Fathers of the

Church - not one that makes [p.260] the world, as Plato did, an intelligent animal - not one that reduces all things here below to the four elements of the physical system of the ancients - not one that holds with the Jews, with the Latins, with the Greeks, with the finest minds of antiquity, with the great Tacitus among the ancients, with the great De Thou among the moderns, with the sceptic Michael Montaigne, that “the stars have domination and power, not only over our lives and the conditions of our fortune, but even over our inclinations, our discourses, our wills; that they govern, impel, and agitate them at the mercy of their influences; and that (according as our reason teaches us and finds it to be) the whole world feels the impulsion of the slightest celestial movements. *Facta etenim et vitas hominum suspendit ab astris;*”<sup>72</sup> - not one that speaks of the mountains as Mahomet has done, of the cosmogony like Buffon, of the antipodes like Lucretius, like Plutarch, like Phiny, like Lactantius, like St Augustine, like Pope Zachary. – Assuredly, were there to be found in the Bible a single one of those errors that abound among philosophers, as well ancient as modern, our faith in the plenary inspiration of the Scriptures would be more than compromised by it; we should have to acknowledge that there are errors in the Word of God, and that these delusive expressions are those of a fallible writer, not those of the Holy Ghost; for God is not man that he should lie; in him there is no variableness, neither shadow of falsity; and He to whom lying lips are an abomination, could not have been capable of contradicting himself and dictating that which is false.

There is no physical error, then, in the Scriptures; and this great fact, which becomes all the more striking the more narrowly we look into it, is the manifest proof of an inspiration carried into their choice of the smallest expressions they employ.

But we have more to say than this, and now come to the second fact.

[p.261]

Not only has the Bible not admitted any false statement of opinion or expression; but further, it has often allowed words to escape which enable us to see, beyond all possibility of our being mistaken, the science of the Almighty. His grand aim, no doubt, is to reveal to us the eternal glories of the invisible world, not the barren secrets of that which is doomed to perish.

Meanwhile, however, it often happens that his language, when we listen to it with attention, allows a science to be seen which it is not his design to teach, but of which he cannot be ignorant, because *it is in him a great deep*. Not only will he never teach us anything false, even cursorily; but, further, you will often stumble on words which betray the voice of the Creator of all worlds. Often you will remark in these a wisdom, a forethought, an exactness, of which the ages of antiquity had no idea, and which nothing but the discoveries of the telescope, the calculating processes, and the science of the modems, have enabled us to appreciate; so that its language will be found to bear, by means of these traits, the evident characters of the most entire inspiration. The discretion and departure from usual practice shown in its expressions, the nature of certain details, the perfect propriety and divine adaptation of which to the facts have remained unrevealed till three thousand years afterwards; the reserve of the language, sometimes its very hardihood, and its strangeness for the time in which it was written: all these signs will enable you to recognize the *savant par excellence*, the Ancient of days, who addresses himself to his children no doubt, but who speaks as the father of the family, and who knows the whole of his house.

When the Scripture speaks of the form of our earth, it makes it a GLOBE.<sup>73</sup> When it speaks of the position of this globe in the bosom of the universe, it HANGS IT UPON NOTHING (על בלימה).<sup>74</sup> When it speaks of its age, not only does it place its creation, as well as that of the [p.262]

<sup>72</sup> Essays, book ii. chap. 12.

<sup>73</sup> Isa. xl. 22, Job. xxvi. 10; Prov. viii. 27.

<sup>74</sup> Job. xxvi. 7 (κρεμάζων γῆν ἐπὶ οὐδινός).

heavens, IN THE BEGINNING, that is, before ages which it cannot or will not number; but, further, it takes care to place before the disembroilment of chaos and the Creation of man, that of angels and archangels, principalities and powers, their probation, the fall of some and their ruin, the perseverance of others and their glory.<sup>75</sup> When it speaks, afterwards, of the origin of our continents, and of the last creation of plants, animals, and men, it then gives to our new world, and to this proud race of ours, so young an age, that men of all times, among all earth's peoples, and even in our modern schools, have foolishly

revolted at it; still it is an age to which they have been compelled to resign themselves since the labours of the De Lucs, the Cuviers, and the Bucklands, have so fully demonstrated that the state of the globe's surface, as well as the monuments of history and those of science, must compel alike the learned and the vulgar to submit to it. When it speaks of the heavens, it employs, in alluding to them and defining them, the most philosophic and the most beautiful expression; an expression which the Greeks in their Septuagint, the Latins in the Vulgate, and all the (so called) Church Fathers in their discourses, have made bold to correct, and which they have perverted from its proper meaning, because it seemed opposed to the science of their times. The heavens, in the Bible, are the EXPANSE, *expanum*, רָקִיעַ;<sup>76</sup> that is to say, it is the void, or the ether, or the immensity, and not the *firmanentum* of St Jerome; nor the στερέωμα of the Alexandrine interpreters; nor the *eighth heaven*, firm, solid, crystalline, and incorruptible of Aristotle, and all the ancients. And although this, which is so remarkable a term of the Hebrew, recurs seventeen times in the Old Testament, and although seventeen times the seventy have rendered it by στερέωμα (*firmanentum*), never has the New Testament thought fit to make use, in this sense, of [p.263] that expression of the Greek interpreters.<sup>77</sup> When it speaks of light, it represents it to us as an element independent of the sun, and as anterior by three epochs to that in which that great luminary was kindled;<sup>78</sup> thus anticipating the systems of the moderns, whom we have seen led, along with the great Newton, to suppose in the universe an ether, eminently subtle, powerfully elastic and diffused every where, the contractions and dilatations of which would produce, not only the various phenomena of light, but those too of gravitation.<sup>79</sup> When it speaks of the creation of plants, it makes them vegetate, grow, and bear seed before the appearance of the sun, and under conditions of light, heat, and humidity, which were not those under which our vegetables live at the present day;<sup>80</sup> and it is thus that it reveals to us, some thousands of years ago, an order of things which the Fossil Botany of these late times of ours has declared incontestable, and the necessary existence of which is attested by the gigantic forms of the vegetables lately discovered in Canada, and at Baffin's Bay; some, like M. Marcel de Serres,<sup>81</sup> having recourse, in order to explain it, to a terrestrial magnetism at that time more intense, or

75 Nehem. ix. 6; Col. i. 16; Dan. vii. 10, compare with Jude 6; Gen. iii. 1, 13, 15; Apoc. xx. 2, xii. 9, 12; Gen. iii. 24; John viii. 44; 2 Pet. ii. 4, 9, 10; John xii. 31.

76 Gen. i. 6; Ps. xix. 7.

77 It has made use of it only once, and that in speaking of something quite different from the heavens. Col. i. 5.

78 Gen. i. 4, 14.

79 This hypothesis of etherial pulsations and of a vibrating medium expanded every where, was the constant idea of this incomparable philosopher, in his most elevated views on the constitution of the universe. He even deduced from it the explanation of all the phenomena of combination, cohesion, elasticity, and of movement which seem to be produced by intangible and imponderable principles - (See his *Letter to Dr Boyle on the Cause of Weight*: his Memoir addressed to the Royal Society of London in Dec. 1675: and two articles of Baron Meurice in the Bibl. Uni. de Genève, 1822, p. 79).

80 Gen. i. 12.

81 Memoires de Marcel de Serres.

to more luminous auroræ boreales; others, like M. de Candolle,<sup>82</sup> to a great inclination of the ecliptic, although in reality (according to the famous theorem of La Grange) the mechanism of the heavens confines within very narrow limits this variation of the planetary [p.264] orbs.<sup>83</sup> When it speaks of the air, the weight of which was unknown before the time of Galileo, it tells us that at the creation “God gave to the air ITS WEIGHT (כִּשְׁקָל), and to the waters their just measure.”<sup>84</sup> When, it speaks of our atmosphere and of the upper waters,<sup>85</sup> it assigns to them an importance which the science of the moderns alone has been able to demonstrate;<sup>86</sup> seeing that, according to their calculations, the force annually employed by nature for the formation of clouds is equal to an amount of work which the whole human race could not do in less than 200,000 years.<sup>87</sup> And when it separates the higher waters from the lower, it is by *an expansion*, and not by a solid sphere, as its imprudent translators would do, both in Greek and in Latin. When it speaks of the mountains, it distinguishes them, in point of fact, into primitive and secondary; it speaks of them as *generated*, as *raised*, as melted like wax; it lowers the valleys; in a word, it speaks as a geological poet of our own days would do. “The mountains arose, O Lord, and the valleys went down unto the place which, thou hadst founded for them.”<sup>88</sup> When it speaks of the human races of every tribe, of every colour, and of every language, it gives one and the same origin, notwithstanding that the philosophy of all ages would so often have revolted against this truth; which, we have seen that of the moderns forced at length to

acknowledge.<sup>89</sup> When it speaks of the internal state of our globe, it declares to us two great facts, of which the learned were [p.265] long ignorant, but now rendered incontestable by their last discoveries; the one relating to its solid crust, and the other to the great waters which it covers. When it speaks of its solid envelope, it informs us, that if its surface gives us bread, underneath (תחתיה) the earth is ON FIRE;<sup>90</sup> that, besides, it is reserved unto fire, and that it will be burnt in the last times, with all the works that are therein.<sup>91</sup> And when it speaks of the waters which, our globe contains, it alone accounts, at least in this respect, for the immense catatclysms which (according to what we are told by men of science themselves) have completely, and for long periods, submerged it at different epochs. And while the latter tell us of the inconsiderable depth of the seas; while they assure us that a rise of two hundred metres only, or of once-and-a-half the height of the tower of Strashourg, could suffice for the disappearance of the Baltic, the North Sea, the English and St George's Channels; and that Mont Blanc, or at least Chimborazo, if thrown into the deepest part of the Pacific Ocean, would be found high enough to form an island; while La Place thought there was ground to conclude, from the size of the tides, that the mean depth of

82 Bibliothique Universelle, lviii., 1835.

83 The oscillations of the ecliptic, including both sides of its mean position, cannot exceed 1 1/3 degree.

84 Job. xxviii. 25.

85 Gen. i. 7.

86 See Leslie's Calculations.

87 Annuaire du Bur. des Longitudes, 1835, p. 196. Arago, in this calculation, supposes that 800 millions form the population of the globe, and that the half only of that number can work.

88 Ps. ccv. 8, 6, 9; Gen. ii. 14, viii 4; Ps. xc. 2; Prov. viii. 25; Ps. xcvi. 5, cxliv. 6; Zech. xiv. 4, 8; Ezek. xlvii.

89 See Sumner, *The Records of the Creation*, vol. i. p. 286; and Professor Zimmerman, *Histoire Geographique de Homme*; Wiseman, *Third Discourse on the Natural History of the Human Race*, vol. i. p. 149.

90 Job xxviii. 5. Literally, "Underneath it is turned up, and as it were fire."

91 2 Pet. iii. 7, 10.

the ocean does not exceed a million of metres (the height of the Saleve or of Hecla); while we have this demonstrated to us the absolute insufficiency of the seas for these immense submersions which our globe has undergone; . . . the Scripture teaches us that the earth was

taken out of the water, and subsists in the water,<sup>92</sup> “and that its solid crust covers a GREAT DEEP (דְּמִתְהוֹס), the waters of which were broken up (נִבְקָשׁ), with surges and violence,<sup>93</sup> at the epoch of the deluge, as at that of chaos and of the countless ages that preceded it.” When it speaks of the deluge, it supposes submersions and subversions, which, all unbelievers of former times said were too great to be believed, and which at the present day geologists have [p.266] found too insufficient rather to explain all the subversions which our earth has discovered to them. When it relates the preparatives and the progressive steps of that immense cataclysm, it reveals facts which the science of the moderns may not yet have universally adopted, but neither has it been able to contradict them by other facts: it assumes the existence of an interior fire, which, by raising the temperature of the seas and of the deep waters, must have produced, on the one hand, an enormous evaporation, and impetuous rains, as if the flood-gates of the heavens had been opened; and, on the other, a resistless dilatation, which not only raised the waters from their abysses, broke up the fountains of the GREAT DEEP, and swelled them into mighty waves reaching to the top of the highest mountains,<sup>94</sup> but caused immense stratifications of carbonate of lime, under the double action of one enormous heat and of a pressure equivalent to 80,000 atmospheres. When it describes the state of our globe, in the days which preceded the bringing of order out of chaos, it assumes the existence in it of an internal heat, and of submarine fires, while covering the whole of it with water in a liquid state.<sup>95</sup> When it speaks of the creation of birds and fishes, it assigns them a common origin; and we know that modern naturalists have ascertained, that between those two classes of animals [p.267] there are deep-seated points of resemblance, which there is nothing to indicate to our eyes, but which are revealed in their anatomy, and even in the microscopic form of the globules of their blood.<sup>96</sup> When it lays an arrest on the sun - that is to say, on the earth’s rotation - in the days of Joshua the son of Nun, it takes care, too, to make the moon to stop also, in the same proportion with the sun, and from the same cause; a precaution, as Chaubard has shown,<sup>97</sup>

92 2 Pet. iii. 5.

93 Gen. vii. 11.

94 Water dilates by 1-23d in passing from the temperature of melting ice to that of boiling water:

a rise of 16 or 17 degrees of Reaumur will augment its volume, then, by 1-111th. Now we find, by an easy calculation, that the quantity of water necessary to submerge the earth to the height of 1-1000th of the radius of our globe, is equal to 1-333d of its entire volume, or to 1-111th of its third. If, then, we suppose the third of the terrestrial globe to be metallic (at the specific mean weight of  $12\frac{1}{2}$ ), that the second third is solid (at the weight of  $2\frac{1}{2}$ ), and that the third third is water; then, 1st, the mean specific weight of the whole globe will be equal to  $5\frac{1}{2}$  (according to the conclusions of Maskeline and of Cavendish); and, 2d, a rise of 16 degrees of Reaumur in the mean temperature of the mass of the waters, would suffice, in the days of the deluge, to submerge the earth to the depth of 6368 metres - that is to say, to 1546 metres, above Mont Blanc. This was very nearly the hypothesis previously suggested by Sir Henry Englefield.

95 Gen. i. 2.

96 *Memoires du Dr J. L. Prevost, u' Genève.*

97 *Elemens de Geologie par Chaubard; 1 vol. in 8vo, Paris.* - The author establishes there, by numerous arguments, the chronological coincidence of Joshua's miracle with the deluges of Ogyges and Deucalion. He there remarks, that these two cataclysms relate to the same epoch, lasted the same time, were accompanied with the same catastrophes, and produced currents in the same direction, flowing from west to east.

which never would have been thought of by an astronomy that was a stranger to the knowledge of our daily movement; since, after all, nothing more was required for the purposes of this miracle than the prolongation of the day.<sup>98</sup> When it speaks of the Lord's coming as a flash of lightning, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last day, it once more bears witness to the rotation of the earth, and to the existence of the antipodes; for, at that solemn moment, it says it will be day for one part of men, and it will be night at the same hour for another part.<sup>99</sup> When it describes the past and future riches of the land of Canaan, to which a marvellous force of vegetation is promised for the last times, it speaks of it as rich, not only in springs, but in subterranean waters,<sup>100</sup> and seems to anticipate the perforations by which the moderns have learned to fertilize an arid country, by boring the soil, so as to cause water to gush up. When it speaks of the language of men, it gives it a primitive unity, which a first study of our innumerable idioms seems to contradict, but which comes to be confirmed by a more pro- [p.268] found examination. When it describes the deliverance of Noah, it gives to the ark dimensions which we at first sight pronounce to be too small, which we would have made a hundred times greater had we been charged with the narrative, but which a study of the fact has made appear sufficient. When it speaks to us of the number of the stars, instead of supposing them to be a thousand (1022), as in the catalogue of Hipparchus, or as in that of Ptolemy; whilst, in both hemispheres taken together, the most

practised eyes are incapable of discovering more than five thousand; whilst, before the invention of the telescope, a man could not see, even in the finest night, more than a thousand, the Scripture calls them INNUMERABLE; it compares them, as Herschel would do, to sand on the seashore; it tells us that God has sown them with his hand in the immensity of space like dust, and that, nevertheless, “he calls them all by their name.” When it speaks of that immensity, hark with what a learned and divine wisdom it portrays it to you! how guarded it remains in its noble poesy, and how wise in its sublimity!

“The heavens declare the glory of God, and the EXPANSE showeth his handywork. There is no speech nor language; nevertheless we hear their voice.” When it speaks of the relations borne by the stars to this sublunary world, instead of supposing them animated, as the ancients did - instead of ever attributing to them some influence on human affairs, as was fondly imagined for so long a period even by the professedly Christian populations of Italy and France, down to the days of the Reformation, they are composed of inert matter, it tells you, shining, no doubt, but passively acted upon. The heavens, even the heaven of heavens, advance with the order, consistency, and unity of an army which advances to battle. “Lift up your eyes on high, and behold who hath created these things, that bringeth out their host by number; he calleth them all by names; not one faileth. Why sayest thou, O Jacob, My way is hid from the Lord, and my judgment is passed over [p.268] from my God?”<sup>101</sup> When it describes the heavens, it takes care to distinguish three; first, the heaven of the birds, of tempests, of the powers of the air and spiritual wickednesses; next, the heaven of the stars; and, finally, *the third heaven, the heaven of heavens*. But when it speaks of the God of all this, mark how beautiful its language! The sound of his thunder is in the

98 Josh, x. 12.

99 Luke xvii. 31 34; Matt. xxiv. 3, &c.

100 Deut. viii. 7: “A land of brooks of water, of fountains, and *depths* that spring out of valleys and hills” (תְּהוֹמוֹת).

See also Isa. xxxv.6; Ezek. xxxi. 4; Ps. lxxviii. 15, 16.

101 Isa. xl 26, 27.

rotundity of the air, it tells us<sup>102</sup> but the heavens, and even the heaven of heavens, cannot contain him.<sup>103</sup> “In what place would you enclose him?

and what likeness will ye compare unto him? He hath set his glory above the heavens, and he even humbleth himself when he beholds the heavens! Were you to take the wings of the morning, and fly with the speed of light, whither shouldst thou go from his face, or whither shouldst thou flee from his presence?”<sup>104</sup> But after having deemed that it has said enough of all those visible grandeurs, it tells us that “these are but the skirts of his ways; and how small is the portion that we know of them!” And, finally, when holy Scripture thinks enough has been said of all the grandeurs even of the Creator of these immensities, listen to it farther. “He telleth the number of the stars,” it says to you, “and he healeth the broken in heart, and bindeth up their wounds.”<sup>105</sup> “Wonderful in counsel, and magnificent in the means he employs, he putteth thy tears into his bottle; a sparrow falleth not to the ground without his permission; the very hairs of your head are numbered.”<sup>106</sup> “The eternal God is thy refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms.”<sup>107</sup> “O my God, how manifold are thy works! and thou hast magnified thy Word above all thy name!”<sup>108</sup>

And now, amid all these proofs of greatness . . . [p.270] “where shall wisdom be found? and where is the place of understanding? The depth saith, It is not in me; and the sea answers, It is not with me! God alone understandeth the way thereof, and he knoweth the place thereof . . . He who looketh unto the ends of the earth, and seeth under the whole heaven; to make the weight for the winds; and he weigheth the waters by measure. When he made a decree for the rain and a way for the lightning of the thunder; then did he see wisdom, and sound it to the bottom; and unto man he said, Behold the fear of the Lord, that is wisdom; and to depart from evil, is understanding!”<sup>109</sup>

Such, then, is the inspiration of the holy Scriptures; and it is thus we may see there celestial reflections emanating from the very places where people had thought they might detect blemishes. If, with a calm and reverential hand, you uplift the veil of obscurity with which it required, on your account, to shroud its face, you will discover there a majestic brightness; for it comes down, as Moses did, from the holy mountain, and brings to you in its hands the tables of the testimony! At the very place where you had dreaded an obscurity, you find a splendour; at the place where people had noted an objection, God has turned it into a testimony; at the place where there was a doubt, you find

an assurance.

We conclude, then, again, that with regard to this seventh objection, the difficulties become proofs; and that, on this head, as well as on so many others, we cannot fail at every page to recognise in the whole of the Bible a communication from God.

But let us listen farther to a last objection.

102 Ps. lxxvii. 19.

103 1 Kings viii. 27.

104 Isa. xi, 18; Ps, viii, 1, 10, cxiii. 6 cxxxix. 7.

105 Ps. cxlvii. 3, 4.

106 Ps. lvi. 8; Isa. xxviii. 29; Matt. x. 29 30.

107 Deut. xxxiii. 26, 27.

108 Ps. cxxxviii. 2.

109 Job xxviii. [p.271]

### *Section VII. The Declarations of Paul Himself.*

It is idle to dream of disputing the fact of a partial and intermittent inspiration in the Scriptures (we are sometimes told) since the apostle Paul himself has clearly decided the question. Has he not carefully, in point of fact, distinguished what he pronounced by inspiration from what he advanced in his own name only, as a simple believer? And do we not find him, in his First Epistle to the Corinthians, express this distinction in the clearest manner, and three several times, on the occasion of the several questions that have been addressed to him on the subject of marriage?

First of all, at the 25th verse of chapter vii, when he says in so many terms, “Now, concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord; yet I give AN ADVICE as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful;”

Next, at the 10th verse, when he writes, “And unto the married I command (NOT I, BUT THE LORD), Let not the wife depart from her husband, and let not the husband put away his wife;”

And finally, at the 12th verse, where he adds, “But to the rest speak I, not the Lord (I, AND NOT THE LORD), If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, . . . let him not put her away,” &c.

Once sees clearly, then, say the objectors, from these three sentences, that there are in the apostle's epistles, passages that are Paul's, and other passages that are God's; that is to say, inspired passages and others that are not so.

The reply is easy.

No sooner do we examine more narrowly into the passages on which the objection is laid, than we perceive that they cannot be legitimately employed against the doctrine of a plenary inspiration. Far from imposing limits on the divinity of the apostolic sayings, these verses, on the contrary, hold a language which the most entire and sovereign inspiration alone could authorize. Paul could not speak thus without putting his epistles, as Peter has done, I was about to say "ON A LEVEL with THE OTHER holy Scriptures," we must say ABOVE them (inasmuch as he gives utterance there to a more recent and more obligatory expression of the Lord's desires).

We proceed to judge how far this is the case. What is it that, in this 7th chapter, the apostle of Jesus Christ does? He treats three cases of conscience. As to one of these cases, God, says he, has neither commanded nor interdicted any thing. "He that marrieth his virgin sinneth not. I am not, therefore, charged with *any order*; but, in my character as an apostle, it is only *an advice* that I have to give you on the Lord's part," - and he then takes care to add, at the 40th verse, "And I think, also, that I have the Spirit of God." The Lord, therefore, here desires to leave you free, says the apostle; he would not lay a snare for you; and if you do not think yourselves bound to follow the general advice that is given you, you violate no commandment - you sin not. Only, he who marries does well; he who marries not, does better.

As for the other case, on the contrary, beware; FOR THERE IS A COMMANDMENT OF THE LORD. The Lord has already pronounced his will (Matt. v. 31, 32 ; Mal. ii. 14, 15); and I have nothing new to declare unto you: the Old Testament and Jesus Christ have spoken. It is NOT I, therefore, the apostle of Jesus Christ. it is THE LORD who has already made known his will to you: "To such Christians as are married, I command (not I, but the Lord), that the wife depart not from her husband, and that the husband put not away his wife," - (Verses 10, 11.)

But, as for the third case, that is to say, as respects the brethren

who may find themselves united to unbelieving wives, you a commandment of the Lord's under the Old Testament; "I have repealed it; and *I think that I have the Spirit of God!* I abolish, therefore, the old order of things, and am commissioned to put a contrary order in its place. It is not the Lord (v. 12), that tells you to keep with you an unbelieving wife; it is I Paul, the apostle of Jesus Christ, not of men, neither by man, but by God the Father, and by Jesus Christ, whom he raised from the dead."<sup>110</sup>

Here, then, we see it as clear as noonday, that the apostle, instead of appealing to the Lord's utterance of old, repeals it, in order to substitute an opposite order in its place; so that this passage, far from invalidating inspiration, fully confirms it; seeing that it would amount to the most outrageous blasphemy, if the apostle had not felt that in holding this language he was the mouth of God, and had he ventured to say of his own proper authority, "It is not the Lord, IT IS I! I, I say, and not the Lord - if any brother has an unbelieving wife, let him not send her away!" - The Lord had said the very contrary.<sup>111</sup> We must acknowledge, then, that these verses of St Paul, far from giving their sanction to the supposition of any human mixture in the writings of the New Testament, stand there to attest to us that in their epistles, and in the most familiar details of their epistles, the apostles were the mouth of God, and placed themselves, not only in the same line with Moses and the ancient prophets, but, further, above them; inasmuch as a second expression of God's will ought to take precedence of that which went before it; and as the New Testament ought to surpass the Old, if not in excellence, at least in authority.

We have heard some persons still further oppose to us, as an admission of the intermittence and imperfection of his inspiration, those words of St Paul, in which, [p.274] after having told the Corinthians<sup>112</sup> of his having been caught up into the third heaven, he adds, "*Whether in the body or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth.*" "Can it be supposed," it

<sup>110</sup> Gal. i. 1.

<sup>111</sup> Deut. viii, 3; 1 King; xi. 2; Ezra x. 2, 3, 11, 19.

<sup>112</sup> 2 Cor. xii. 4.

has been said, "that the Holy Ghost knew not how this miracle was

performed? Necessarily, therefore, we must refer such a verse to Paul, not to God.”

We reply, that though the Holy Ghost was not ignorant of it, Paul was; and that the Holy Ghost desired that Paul himself should tell us of his ignorance. Can it be forgotten that God has never ceased, in revealing himself to us in the Scriptures, to employ the personality of the sacred writers, and that it is under this form that he has desired almost constantly to instruct his Church? When David, “speaking by the Spirit,”<sup>113</sup> exclaims in the Psalms, “that he acknowledges his transgressions, and that his sin is ever before him, and that he was shapen in iniquity,” it is not the Holy Ghost, doubtless, that acknowledges his own transgressions, and that has his own sin before his eyes; but it is the Holy Ghost that put, for our sakes, those expressions of repentance in the heart and on the lips of his humbled prophet. It was in an analogous sense, then, that He could make St Paul say, “Whether in the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth.”

We are not yet done, however, with these objections. There still remain three more, which we have called evasions; because, instead of resting, like the former, on some certain argument, or facts, they are rather systems by which people imagine they can withdraw a part of the Scriptures from the action of the divine inspiration. It remains for us, therefore, to examine these.

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, September 2004.

<http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>

Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,

[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

113 Mark xii. 36; Act; iv. 25,

[p.275]

## **V. Examination of Evasions.**

Several systems of exceptions, we have said, have been proposed by some. There are persons who, while they fully admit that the thoughts found in Scripture have been given by God, would maintain, nevertheless, that its style and expressions are purely human; others have excluded the inspiration of the historical books; others, in fine, would make an exception of certain details, at least, which to them have appeared too trite, and too remote from edification, to admit of our attributing them to the Spirit of God.

### *Section I. Might Not Inspiration Pertain to the Thoughts Only, Without Extending to the Words?*

“The prophets and the apostles,” some say, “were, no doubt, inspired when they wrote their sacred books, in so far as respected their thoughts; but we must believe, that, beyond this, they were left to themselves as respects their language; so that in this written revelation the ideas are God’s, and the expressions those of a man. The task of the sacred writers resembles, in some sort, that of a man before whose eyes there have been successively passed some very highly coloured pictures, while he has been charged to describe them [p.276] merely in so far as they have passed before his eyes. It is thus that the Divine Spirit is considered to have presented the holy truths they announce to the view of the evangelists and the prophets, leaving them no more to do than simply to express them; and this mode of conceiving of what they did,” it is added, “at once accounts for the striking differences of style which their writings exhibit.”

We reply:

- 1. That this system is directly contrary to Scripture testimony. The Bible declares itself to be written, “not with the words which man’s wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth.”<sup>1</sup> It calls itself “the word of God,” “the words of God,”<sup>2</sup> “the voice of God,” “the oracles of God,”<sup>3</sup> “the lively oracles of God,”<sup>4</sup> “the holy letters of

God,”<sup>5</sup> “the scripture of God.” A *scripture*, or writing, is made up of letters and words, and not of invisible thoughts only: but, we are told,<sup>6</sup> “all SCRIPTURE is given by inspiration of God.” What is WRITTEN,

1 1 Cor. ii. 13.

2 Throughout.

3 Rom. iii. 2.

4 Acts vii. 38.

5 2 Tim. iii. 15.

6 2 Tim. iii. 16.

therefore, is inspired of God (θεόπνευστος); and that which is inspired of God is ALL SCRIPTURE - it is all that is written (πᾶσα γραφή).

2. While this system is contradictory to the Bible, it is also most irrational. The ideas of our fellow-men embody themselves in words; and it is there only that you can seize them. Souls are revealed to us only in the flesh. You do not learn their character; you know nothing of their desires or their experiences; you do not even suspect their existence; and betwixt you and them there are no ties, until they have become clothed with bodies, and have received organs, so that they can manifest themselves to you. My most intimate friend is known to me only by the language of his voice and his gestures. If he had no power of employing these, in vain might he remain for twenty years at my side: he would be to me as if he were not. [p.277]

More than this. There exists, in so far as we are concerned, an inevitable dependance between souls and their organs, betwixt their ideas and words. Not only do we come to know the existence of the former only by the language of the latter, but (even after they have spoken to us) we can but guess only at their true character, as long as we have not the assurance that the organ has been the faithful interpreter of the mind, that the word has truly reflected the idea, and the proposition the thought. And if we have some room to apprehend that language has not been the pliant and adequate servant of the will, we possess no certainty that we have not been mistaken. Though we might know that God himself had placed in the soul of a writer the purest thoughts of heaven, still there would always be required, in order to our having through these words a certain revelation of them, that there should be given us the assurance that the language is exact, that the reflections are faithful, and that they reproduce to us without alteration the objects

deposited in the secret chambers of that soul.

Language, then, is the wondrous mirror which reflects to us the depths of the soul.

Were you a son weeping for the loss of a mother, and were God, for your consolation, to desire that you should see again, for some moments, in a looking-glass, the ever-to-be-venerated features of that mother, would it be enough that she herself were made to come down behind you and occupy the place where the reflected light would come from the object to your eyes in most abundance? Doubtless not, it would further be necessary that the mirror should be without any twist, furrow, or blemish. Were it unequal and faithless, of what use would it be to you? You would have near you, it is true, the smiling features of your own mother; her inimitable look would bear towards you the ardent expression of her maternal good wishes and her august benediction; but all this would be in vain; you would have no better than a stranger before your eyes, one [p.278] perhaps of a hideous expression - a deformed creature, with features positively revolting! O my good mother, it is, then, no longer you! you would exclaim. Thus would it also be for you with the thoughts of God, if left to receive them disfigured by the errors of the human language that reflected them to us. It is no longer thou, O thought of my God! we should have to say to it. It is necessary then for our security, that we should have the divine guarantee as well for the fidelity of the mirror as for the faithfulness of the objects.

These reflections will suffice, no doubt, to enable us to comprehend how irrational it is to think of receiving with exactness and certainty the thoughts of another through the medium of inexact and uncertain expressions. Can you lay hold of these thoughts otherwise than by words? And without God's words, how can you be sure of possessing his thoughts?

3. This theory of a divine revelation, in which you would have the inspiration of the thoughts without the inspiration of the language, is so inevitably irrational that it cannot be sincere, and proves false even to those who propose it; for, without their suspecting it, it makes them come much further down in their arguments than their first position seems at a first glance to indicate. Listen to them. Though the words are those of man, say they, the thoughts are those of God. And how will

they prove this to you? Alas! once more, by attributing to this Scripture from God, contradictions, mistakes, proofs of ignorance! Is it then the words alone that they attack? and are not these alleged errors much more in the ideas than in the words? So true it is that we cannot separate the one from the other, and that a revelation of God's thoughts ever demands a revelation of God's words also.

4. This theory is not only antibiblical, irrational, and mischievous; further, it is taken up arbitrarily, and amounts at best to a gratuitous hypothesis.

5. Besides, it is very useless; for it resolves no difficulty. You find it difficult, say you, to conceive how the Holy Ghost could have given the words in Holy Scripture; but can you tell us any better how he gave the thoughts? Will it be more easy for you, for example, to explain how God suggested to Moses the knowledge of the different acts of the creation, or to St John that of all the scenes of the last day, than to conceive how he made them write the narrative of these things in the language of the Hebrews, or in that of the Greeks?

6. But we have much more to say than this. That which in this theory ought above all to strike every attentive mind, is its extreme inconsistency, seeing that those even who hold it most strenuously, are forced withal to admit that, in its greatest part, the Scripture behaved to be inspired to the men of God **EVEN IN ITS WORDS**.

Suppose that the Holy Ghost were to call on you to go down this morning to the public street, there to proclaim, in Russian or in Tamil, "the wonderful works of God;" what would become of you, were he to be content with inspiring you with ideas, without giving you words? You might have the third heaven before your eyes, and in your heart the transports of archangels, still you would have to remain as if dumb and stupid before the persons composing this multitude. In order to your inspiration being of any use to you, it would be necessary that the periods, the phrases, and even the smallest words of your discourse, should be entirely given to you? What do I say? People might very well dispense with your own thoughts, provided you could make them hear, without even understanding them, the thoughts of God in the words of God. Well, then, let us carry this supposition into Jerusalem, and into the persons of the apostles. When the fishermen of Capernaum and Bethsaida, met in their upper chamber on the day of Pentecost, received

the command to come down, and to go forth and publish, before that people which had assembled from every region under [p.280] heaven, the wonderful works of God, in Latin, in Parthian, in Elamite, in Chaldean, in Coptic, in Arabic, would not the giving of the words be necessary? What could they have done on that occasion without the words? Why, nothing; while, with their words, they could convert the world!

When, afterwards, in the church of Corinth, the faithful who had received miraculous powers spoke in the midst of the congregations in strange tongues, and found it necessary that some other, to whom the gift of interpretation had been given, should translate after them the unknown words which they had uttered in the ears of their brethren, was it not equally necessary that the words and all the phrases should be entirely dictated to them?<sup>7</sup> When all the prophets, after having written their sacred pages, set themselves to meditate upon them with so much respect and care, as they would have done to the oracles of a stranger prophet; when they meditated upon them night and day, searching what (as Peter tells us<sup>8</sup>) the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow - was it not, then, also necessary that all the words should have been given them? When Moses gives an account of the creation of the world, and of the extrication of chaos; when Solomon describes the Eternal Wisdom; when David recites, a thousand years beforehand, the prayers of the Son of God on the cross; when Daniel relates in detail, and without very well understanding them himself, the remote destinies of the World and of the Church; and when, in fine, John continues, in his own prophecies, the revelations of the prophet Daniel, was it not necessary that the smallest words should be given to them? and do not all interpreters, in reading them, acknowledge how far we might be led away from the true meaning, by the smallest word being put in the place of some other word, by the tense [p.281] of the verb being ill-chosen, by the imprudent placing of a particle?

From this, therefore, we must conclude, since so considerable a part of the Scriptures is necessarily inspired, even in its words, that the system of an inspiration of the thoughts, without an inspiration of the language, is inconsistent in the highest degree. There are not two kinds of the Word of God in the Holy Scriptures; there are not two sorts of

God's Oracles. If it was "as moved by the Holy Ghost that holy men spoke," then all the Sacred Letters are divinely inspired; and that which is divinely inspired in the Sacred Letters is ALL SCRIPTURE.

But these last reflections are about to conduct us to something at once more simple and more important. Here let the utmost caution be observed, for the question has been misrepresented. It has been said that the sacred Scriptures were inspired by God; and people have asked themselves up to what point this behoved to be the case. The matter for inquiry, however, did not lie there.

7. We have said, that the question relates to the BOOK, and not to the WRITERS. You believe that God gave them the thoughts always, and not always the words; but the Scripture tells us, on the contrary, that God has given them always the words, and not always the thoughts. As for their thoughts, while they were in the act of writing, God might inspire them with ideas more or less lively, more or less pure, more or less elevated: that interests my charity alone, but

7 1 Cor xiv.

8 2 Pet. i. 10, 11.

has no bearing on my faith. The SCRIPTURE - the Scripture which they have transmitted to me, perhaps without themselves seizing its meaning, at least without ever entirely comprehending it, this is what concerns me.

Paul might have been mistaken in his thoughts, when, on appearing before the council of the priests, and not recognizing God's high-priest, he ventured to say to him, "God shall strike thee, thou whited wall!" This is of little consequence, however, provided I know that [p.282] WHEN HE WRITES THE WORD OF GOD, "it is Jesus Christ that speaks in him!"<sup>9</sup> Peter might have been mistaken in his thoughts when, refusing to believe that God could send him among the heathen, he did not perceive and acknowledge that "in every nation, they who turn to God are accepted of him." He might have been still more grievously mistaken when, at Antioch, he compelled Paul to withstand him to the face, because he was to be blamed, and because he walked not uprightly according to the truth of the Gospel.<sup>10</sup> But how does this concern me, after all, I repeat, at least as respects my faith? For the question is, not how I can know at what moments, or in what measure, Paul, John,

Mark, James, or Peter, were inspired in their thoughts, or sanctified in their conduct: what, above all, interests me, is to know that all the sacred pages were divinely inspired; that their written words were the words of God; and that, in giving these to us, they spoke, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth,<sup>11</sup> (οὐκ ἐν διδασκατοῖς ἀνθρωπίνης σοφίας λόγοις) that then it is NOT THEY that speak, but the Holy Ghost;<sup>12</sup> in a word, that "God hath spoken BY THE MOUTH of his prophets since the world began."<sup>13</sup>

The sacred writers were SOMETIMES inspired; but the Holy Scriptures were so ALWAYS. Accordingly, the times, the measures, the degrees, the alternations of the inspiration of the men of God, are not for us an object of faith; but that which is an object of faith, is that the Scripture is divinely inspired, and that that which is divinely inspired is the whole Scripture. "Not one jot or tittle of it shall pass away."

There is doubtless an inspiration of thoughts, as there is an inspiration of words; but the first makes the CHRISTIAN, while it is the second that makes the PROPHET.

A true Christian is inspired in his thoughts: the Spirit of God reveals to him the deep things of God;<sup>14</sup> it is not flesh and blood that have made him know the counsels of God and the glories of Jesus Christ, it is God the Father;<sup>15</sup> for the Holy Ghost leads him into all truth;<sup>16</sup> and he has been incapable of truly owning in his soul Jesus as

9 2 Cor. xiii. 3; 1 Cor vii. 17.

10 Gal. ii. 11-14.

11 1 Cor. ii. 13.

12 Mark xiii. 11.

13 Acts iii. 21.

14 1 Cor. ii. 10.

15 Matt. xvi. 17.

16 John xvi. 13.

Lord (the Lord of lords) but by the Holy Ghost.<sup>17</sup> Every true believer, then, is more or less inspired by God in his thoughts; but he is not so in his words. He is Christian, but not Prophet. The holiest discourses of Cyprian, Augustine, Bernard, Luther, Calvin, Beza, Leighton, are only the words of men on the truths of God - venerable words, no doubt, precious and powerful words, and worthy of our utmost attention, because of the wisdom that has been given to them, and of the abundant expression which we find in them of the thought of

God; still these, after all, are but the words of men - they form but a sermon. It is quite otherwise in the case of the prophet. The latter may have, and he may not have, the thought of God in his thought; but that which he will always have, as long AS HE SHALL SPEAK AS A PROPHET, is “the word of God IN HIS MOUTH.” The Spirit of God will speak by him, and the word of God will be on his tongue.<sup>18</sup> He will be the mouth of God, a mouth intelligent or unintelligent, voluntary or involuntary - that is of little consequence, provided that God’s oracles flow from him, and that I receive the thought of my God in the words of my God.

In a word, one may be a Christian without having on his lips the words of God, and one may be a prophet without having on his heart or in his understanding the thoughts of God; but one cannot be a Christian without having in his heart the thoughts of God, and one cannot be a prophet without having on his lips the words of God.

In the language of the Bible (this we shall ere long establish), a prophet is a person in whose mouth God [p.284] puts, for a time, the words which he wishes to have uttered upon earth. Such a person prophesied only by intervals, “according as the Spirit gave him utterance.”<sup>19</sup> One might not be a prophet, like King Saul, more than twice in his life; and, as his soldiers, more than once.<sup>20</sup> One might then pronounce the words of God while understanding them, or without understanding them, often even without having been previously apprized, and sometimes even without having wished it.

When Daniel had traced his last pages, he did not understand, he himself tells us, what the Spirit had made him write.<sup>21</sup> When Caiaphas uttered prophetic words, “*he spoke not of himself*,” he had the will, but he had neither the *consciousness* nor the *comprehension* of what God caused him to pronounce.<sup>22</sup> When Balaam went up three times to the top of a hill to curse Israel, and when, three times, words of benediction proceeded from his lips, as it were in spite of himself, because “the Lord had met him and put a word into his mouth,”<sup>23</sup> he had the consciousness of what he did, but neither fully comprehended, nor fully willed it. When Saul’s armed followers went in search of David to Ramah, and when the Spirit of the Lord was upon them, so that they also prophesied; and when Saul, three successive times, sent others of them, who also three successive times prophesied; and when the profane Saul went

himself likewise to the great well in Sechu, and when God (to illustrate his power, and to manifest more clearly to us what it is to be a prophet, and what his word is) had made his Spirit to come on that

17 1 Cor. xii. 3.

18 2 Sam. xxiii. 1, 2.

19 Acts ii. 4.

20 2 Sam. x. 19.

21 Dan. xii. 8, 9.

22 John xi. 51.

23 Numb. Xxiii. 16.

unbelieving man also; when he went on and prophesied; when the word of the Lord was in that ordinarily profane mouth, and he prophesied before Samuel all that day and all that night, “what was it that happened to the son of Kish? Was Saul also among the prophets?”<sup>24</sup> Yes, and Saul had the consciousness of his condition, and of the part he acted as a prophet; but of [p.285] this he had neither the full will, nor the anticipation, nor probably the full comprehension. When the old prophet had seated himself amicably at table with the man of God, whom he had seduced from his road by an unbelieving and carnal kindness, and when, all of a sudden, under an impulse from on high, menacing words proceeded in a loud voice from his mouth against his imprudent and guilty guest, he prophesied with the consciousness of what he did, but he prophesied without having the wish to do so. What do I say? Did not God make his voice be heard in the empty air, in the presence of Moses and of all the people, on Mount Sinai? Did he not cause it to be heard by the couch of a child in the tabernacle at Shiloh? To the ears of the three apostles, and of the two saints who had risen again from Hades, on Mount Tabor? To John the Baptist, and to all the people, on the banks of the Jordan?

Be it well understood, then, it is the holy letters (τά ἱερα γράμματα, 2 Tim. iii. 15); it is all *that is written*, that is to say, the *phrases* and the *words*, that are divinely inspired, that are θεόπνευστοι. The question, then, is about the words, and not about the men who have written. As to the latter, that concerns you little. The Spirit was able more or less to associate their individuality, their conscience, their recollections, their affections, with what he caused them to write, and you are nowise obliged to know how far this was the case; but that which it behoves

you to know is (as St Peter has said), “that NO WRITTEN PROPHECY came by *the will of man*, but that it was as *moved by the Holy Ghost*, holy men of God spake;” and just as at Belshazzar’s feast people troubled themselves little about knowing what was passing in the fingers of that terrible hand which came forth from the wall over against the candlestick, while, on the contrary, all the thoughts of the guests were turned to the words that were traced on the plaster of the wall, “*Mene, mene, tekel, upharsin*,” because they knew well that these words were from [p.286] God; so likewise it concerns you little, in point of faith, to penetrate into what passed in the thoughts of Mark, the thoughts of John, the thoughts of Luke, the thoughts of Matthew, during the time that they were writing the roll of the Gospels. It behoves you rather to direct your entire attention towards the words which they have written, because you know that these words are from God. Be the prophet holy like Moses, wise like Daniel, an enemy of God like Caiaphas, ignorant of the language in which he speaks like the prophets at Corinth, impure like Balaam - what do I say? - insensible, like the hand that wrote on the wall in the palace at Babylon; without form, without body, without soul, like the empty air in which was heard the voice of God (on Sinai, on the banks of Jordan; on Mount Tabor. . .), it is of little consequence, once more (unless it be where their personality itself should be found so interested as to make an essential part of their revelation.) Thy thoughts, O my God, thy thoughts and thy words, these are what concern me!

24 1 Sam. Xix. 23, 24.

## ***Section II. Should We Except From Inspiration the Historical Books?***

“One will admit,” we are told, “that the inspiration of the Scriptures might have been extended to the choice of expressions, wherever this miraculous operation was necessary: in the laying down of doctrines, for example, in announcing the history of a past more ancient than the birth of the mountains, or in unveiling a future which God only can know. But would you proceed to maintain that men who lived at the time of the events they relate, had any need of the Holy

Ghost in order to tell us facts of which they themselves were either agents or witnesses, or which they had heard related by others; the humble marriage of Ruth in the small town of Bethlehem, for example, or the emotions [p.287] felt by Esther in the palace of Shusan, or the nomenclatures of the kings of Israel and Judah, their reigns, their lives, their deaths, their genealogies? - Luke, who, from Troas, accompanied the apostle to Jerusalem, to Cesarea, to the isle of Malta, and as far as Rome, had he not enough of recollections of what had passed in order to tell us how Paul had been laid hold of under the porches of the temple; how his nephew revealed to him, in the castle, the conspiracy of the forty Jews; how the centurion took the young man to the chief captain, and how the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked of him all that he knew? Did he then absolutely require for facts so simple and so well known, a continual intervention of power from on high?" Some do not think so, and maintain, on the contrary, that it is neither necessary nor rational to believe that all the historical chapters of the two Testaments are divinely inspired.

To such objections our first answer will always be very simple. "All Scripture," we say, "is divinely inspired." - Thou hast known the holy letters, O Timothy: well then, "all the holy letters, all the Scriptures are given by the breath of God." - We have not heard the Holy Ghost make an exception anywhere to these declarations; accordingly, neither in man, nor in angel, do we acknowledge any right to hazard any.

But we will say more. Were it allowable to place one book of God before another - if we must distinguish in the firmament of the Scriptures the more glorious constellations and stars of the first magnitude, we should certainly give the preference to the historical books. - In fact:

1. It is to the historical books that the most striking and most respectful TESTIMONIES are rendered by the prophets in the Old Testament, and by the apostles in the New. - What is there more holy in the Old than the Pentateuch? what is there greater in the New than [p.288] the four Gospels? - Is it not solely of the historical books of the Bible that it is written: "The law of the Lord is perfect; his testimonies are wonderful; they are sure; they make wise the simple; they are pure; they are more to be desired than gold; the words of the Lord are pure

words; they are like silver seven times refined. Blessed is the man who meditates on his law day and night.”<sup>25</sup>

2. Besides, mark with what respect our LORD HIMSELF QUOTES THEM, and how in doing so he takes a pleasure in pointing to the smallest details in the divine decrees, and sometimes to the use of a single word.

3. The histories in the Bible have not been given us solely for the transmission to future ages of the memorials of past events: they are presented to the Church of all ages, for the purpose of making her know by facts THE CHARACTER OF HER GOD; they are there as a mirror of providence and grace; they are destined to reveal to us God’s thoughts, God’s designs, the invisible things of God, his heaven, his glory, his angels, and those mysteries which the angels desire to look into.<sup>26</sup> - For all this the most entire inspiration is requisite.

4. Remark further, that the historical Scriptures are given to us for the purpose of revealing to us THE DEEP THINGS OF MAN. It has been said of the Word of God, “that it pierces like a sword, to the division of the soul and spirit; that all is naked and open to it, and that it is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart.” This holds true of the written Word as well as of the personal Word of God, for the one is the language of the other; but it is especially true of the historical word. Do you not see that that word, in its narratives, is a two-edged sword, and that it tries men’s consciences? And in like manner as it describes to you what took place on our globe in the days of chaos, when the Spirit of God moved on the face of the abyss, it [p.289] equally tells YOU of what takes place in the abyss of the human heart, the mysteries of the invisible world, the secret motives, the hidden faults, and many a thought which, but for it, would only have been known in the great day when the Lord will bring to light things hid in darkness, and will make manifest the purposes of men’s hearts. Is it thus, then, that men write history?

5. The historical Scriptures behoved on another account to have the most entire inspiration, namely, in order that they might relate to us without any error the mysterious interventions of the ANGELS in this world’s affairs, in those of the Church, and in those of Heaven. Is there a subject more delicate, more novel, more difficult? Do not those ardent and pure, humble and sublime creatures, whose existence we know of

only from the Bible, differ as much from man as the heavens differ from the earth? Was any thing similar to the angels ever conceived by the imaginations of the peoples, by their poets, or by their sages? No, they never even show the slightest approach to it. One will perceive, then, how impossible it was, without a constant operation on the part of God, that the biblical narratives, in treating of such a subject, should not have constantly borne the all too human impression of our narrow conceptions; and that the sacred writers should not have often let slip from their pen imprudent touches, investing the angels by turns with attributes too divine, or affections too human. All nations have taken a fancy for figuring to themselves invisible beings, as the inhabitants of the celestial regions, whom they have tricked out with all those marks of superiority that charm the heart of man. But how have all their conceptions been creeping, childish, and vulgar, compared with what the angels are! How have all those creations of our fancy been comparatively earthly, passionate, selfish, impure, and often odious! See the gods, the demigods, and the whole

25 Ps. xix. 7-10; i. 1.

26 1 Pet. i. 12.

Olympus of the ancients; see the fairies, the genii, and the sylphs of the moderns: see even farther, the angels of Scripture [p.290] speedily disfigured in the books of man, in the Apocrypha of Enoch, for example, in several of the Fathers, in the legends of Rome, and even in the more recent creations of several of the French poets. Winged passions, devout puerilities, sacrilegious idols, immortal egotisms, celestial wickednesses, deified impurities! But study the angels of Scripture; there not only is every thing great, holy, and worthy of God; not only is that character at once ardent and sublime, compassionate and majestic, constantly recalled to us by their names, their attributes, their employments, their dwellings, their hymns, their contemplations of the depths of redemption, and the ineffable joys of their love; but that which above all ought to strike us, is the perfect harmony of all this as a whole; it is that all these features accord together; it is that all these attributes correspond to each other, and maintain themselves in the justest proportions.

In a word, this whole doctrine, sustained from one end to the other

of the Scriptures, throughout a course of fifteen hundred years, presents to us a unity which of itself alone will be found to attest the inimitable reality of its object, but which bears the most striking testimony to their entire inspiration.

While all the mythologies speak to us of the inhabitants of the moon and of the planets, the Bible says not a word of them: it says nothing to us about the second heaven; but it pictures to us, with no less fulness than precision, the sublime inhabitants of the third heaven, or of the heaven of heavens. This subject recurs constantly there, and under the most varied forms. Descriptions of the angels are often found in the Bible; descriptions unembarrassed, full of details, independent of each other. They are exhibited to us in all situations in heaven and on earth, before God and with men, ministers employed in executing acts of mercy and sometimes also acts of vengeance, bathed in the radiance of the divine glory, standing before God and worshipping him night and day; but also engaged in [p.291] ministering to the humblest believers, helping them in their distresses, in their travels, in their imprisonments, on their deathbeds; and finally coming, at the last day, on the clouds of heaven, with the Son of man, to remove all the wicked from his kingdom, and to gather in his elect from the four winds.

And what were the historians of the angels? Let us not forget this: some were shepherds; others were kings, or soldiers, or priests, or fishermen, or tax-gatherers; some writing in the days of Hercules, of Jason and the Argonauts, three hundred years before the war of Troy; others in the age of Seneca, of Tacitus, and of Juvenal. And yet we see that the relater has the same beings throughout before his eyes. Unlike men, they are always like themselves. We are defiled, they are perfect; we are selfish, they glow with love; we are haughty, they are gentle and meek. We are vain and proud in a body which will be gnawed by the worms, they are humble in their glory and immortality. We would sometimes fain worship them; “See thou do it not,” they say to us, “I am but thy fellow-servant!”<sup>27</sup> We are disquieted with lusts, they are fervent in spirit, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, for they cannot die.<sup>28</sup> We are hard-hearted, they are compassionate; we leave the poor Lazarus to groan as he lies famished at our gate and our dogs lick his sores, but they come to take him when he is dead, and convey him away to Abraham’s bosom;<sup>29</sup> they utter shouts of joy at the conversion of a

sinner; and yet, Jesus said, “the angel of one of these little ones continually beholds in the heavens the face of my Father.”<sup>30</sup> Such is the angel of the whole of the Scriptures.

Now, let each ask himself, how, without a constant inspiration of all the historical books, it could have happened, that over a course of so many ages, not one of the authors who had occasion to bring such beings before us, has let slip, with regard to them, either words [p.292] fraught with excessive respect, after the manner of the liturgies of Rome, or other words bearing too much of the impress of our humanity, after the manner of many of the Fathers? and, how not a single discordant trait falling from their pen, spoils the perfect harmony of that inimitable character, or derogates from the ever amiable dignity of that sublime creation?

Once more, this unity, this purity, this perfection, comes not from man: it is from God! and we ought to own that here, as well as elsewhere, it was necessary that the Holy Ghost should himself superintend all that is written by his historians, and make himself the guarantee of their slightest expressions.

6. But this is not all. See farther how, even without the knowledge of the authors, the histories in the Bible are full of the future. Even in relating the events of the past, “they are types,” says Paul, “for us upon whom the ends of the world are come.”<sup>31</sup> They relate, it is true, national scenes or domestic scenes; but while they relate, Jesus Christ is incessantly and prophetically portrayed under all his aspects, and in all his characters. See the history of Adam, of Noah, of Abraham, of Isaac, of Joseph, of Moses, of the sacrificial lamb, of the deliverance from Egypt, of the pillar of fire, of the manna, of the rock which was Christ (1 Cor. x. 4), of the goat Azazel, of all the sacrifices, of Joshua, of David, of Solomon, of Jonah, of Zorobabel. One would need to write a commentary on the whole history, in order to do justice to this truth. Read over, in order that you may appreciate it, the pages of Paul on Agar, on Sarah, on Aaron, on Melchisedec.

If, then, one would reflect upon this, he would soon acknowledge, with wonder, the constant forth-putting of the power of inspiration in all parts of these Scriptures; and one would feel assured, that if there be pages in the Bible that have need to be inspired in [p.293] every line and in every word, these are the historical books: they preach, they reveal,

they set forth doctrine, they legislate, they prophesy.

27 Apoc. xxii. 9.

28 Luke xx. 36.

29 Luke xvi. 22.

30 Matt. xviii. 10.

31 1 Cor. x. 6, 11.

Compare them not, therefore, with other histories: they have quite another scope.

They behoved to have this full inspiration, in order to recite, without any error, facts inaccessible to man's knowledge, the creation of the universe, the extrication of chaos, the birth of light, the rise of the mountains, the intervention of angels, God's secret counsels, the thoughts of man's heart and his secret faults; but they specially behoved to have it in order that they might prefigure Christ by a thousand types unperceived by the writer himself, and thus exhibit even in their narratives of the past, the character of the Messiah, his sufferings, his death, and the glories that were to follow. It was necessary for them, in order that they might speak in a suitable manner of those events even that were known to them, to pass some over in silence, to relate others, to characterize them, to judge them, and thus to show in them the thought of God; but it was above all necessary for enabling them to describe in the just measure prescribed by that thought of God, and by the needs of the future Church, the scenes, whether national or domestic, which behoved to carry along with them the types of the work of redemption, to prefigure the last times, and to take in a vast sweep of thousands of years posterior to them. They required it for the purpose of determining the measure of what they might confide to their readers, and what they should withhold, for the discreet use of their expressions, and for that admirable restraint upon themselves which they have uniformly preserved.

7. We could wish we had time to speak here of their dramatic power (if such an expression may be permitted), that divine and indefinable charm, that mysterious and ever-recurring attraction, which we find attached to all their narratives, which captivates man's soul under all climates, which makes us find in them, throughout all our lives, as in the scenes of nature, an [p.294] ever fresh charm; and after being delighted and moved by these incomparable narratives in our early childhood,

affects our tender feelings even in hoary age. Certainly, there must needs be something superhuman in the very humanity of these forms, so familiar and so simple. - Men are incapable of telling a story thus. - Who shall tell us the secret of this attractiveness? In what does it consist? We should find it not easy to say, perhaps: it seems to lie in an ineffable mixture of simplicity and depth, of the natural and the unlooked for, of local colouring and spirituality; it further lies in this, that the narratives are marked by rapidity and simplicity, that they are at once minute in detail and concise; it lies, finally, in the harmony and the truth of the sentiments; it presents man, it presents nature, in their inmost reality. - In a word, you cannot fail to feel (even without being able to account for it) that He who speaks in this book, has immediately before him all the most hidden strings of man's heart, so as to be able to touch them at will, with a hand light or powerful, in the precise measure that his Spirit has proposed to itself. Read over the scenes in which Ruth and Boaz appear on the plains of Bethlehem, those where Abraham and Isaac meet on mount Moriah, those of David and Jonathan, those of Elijah and Elisha, those of Naaman the Syrian, of the widow of Zarephath, or of the Shunamite, and, above all, those of the life and death of the Son of man; and, after that, search every where else in the books of men, and see if you can find any thing similar. Read, if you like, the four Vedahs, and the voluminous collection of Pauthier, the sacred books of the East, Confucius, Manon, Mahomet;<sup>32</sup> and see if there are to be met with there eight lines that can be

32 *Les Livres sacrés de l'Orient*, comprenant le *Chouking*, ou *Livre par excellence* le *Sse Chou*, ou les *Quatre livres moraux de Confucius et de ses disciples*; les *Lois de Manon*, premier législateur de l'Inde; le *Koran de Mahomet*, par Pauthier, Paris 1840.

compared to these incomparable narratives of Scripture. - But that we dreaded enlarging too far, we could have [p.295] wished to make some comparisons here, and to take in turns the relations of the same facts in the Old Testament and in the Koran, in the New Testament and in the spurious Gospels, in the patriarchal scenes of Genesis, and in what has been made of them by men every time they have related them. Read over, for instance, in Moses, the life of Joseph, his infancy, his misfortunes, his temptations, and as far as that inimitable scene in which Jacob's eleven sons appear before their brother; as far as that "*God be*

*gracious unto thee, my son!*” (xliiii. 29), and as far as “I am Joseph (אֲנִי יוֹסֵפֹה) which at no time of life can one peruse without fresh emotion; and, then, go and take up that history again in Mahomet; go read his xii. chapter, intitled *Joseph*, written at Mecca in a hundred and eleven verses, and beginning with these words: “We have made this book come down from heaven in the Arabic tongue, in order that people may understand it, and we preceed to relate the most beautiful story that we have revealed to thee in this Koran.”

“Let, then,” says the celebrated Duplessis Mornay,<sup>33</sup> “the hardest hearts, and the most squeamish palates in the world, come and read over these histories of our Bible; . . . they will feel their whole bodies thrill, their hearts move, and a tenderness of affection come over them in a moment, more than had all the orators of Greece and Rome preached to them the same matters for whole days. Let them go and read the same histories in Flavius Josephus, to whom the emperor Titus ordered a statue to be erected on account of the elegance of his history, he will leave them colder and less moved than he found them. What, then, if this Scripture has in its humility more elevation, in its simplicity more depth, in its absence of all effort more charms, in its grossness more vigour and point, than we know to find any where else of these qualities?”

Oh no! we must say of the historical Scriptures, [p.296] even in this respect, that never have men related events as they have done, neither before nor after.

8. People have not perhaps sufficiently remarked, they have not sufficiently admired their divine brevity. If you would, in this respect, appreciate the Scriptures, compare them with the biographies that men have written, or with the systems of doctrine which they have given, when left to do so. See, for example, the modern Church of the Jews, and see that of the Latins. While the former has joined to the Scripture its two Talmuds, by attributing to them the same authority, one of which (that of Jerusalem) forms a large folio volume; and the other (that of Babylon), which is most followed, and which must be studied by all its doctors, is a work of twelve folio volumes;<sup>34</sup> and while the Roman Church in its Council of Trent declares, “that it receives, with the same affection and reverence as the Holy Scripture, its traditions respecting faith and morals;” that is to say, the vast repertory of its synodal acts, of

its decretals, of its

33 De la Verité de la Religion Chrétienne, pp. 613, 614.

34 La dernière édition d' Amsterdam. Maimonides has made a learned extract from it in his Yad Hachazakah. See Prideau, *Histoire des Juifs*, Amsterdam, vol. ii. p. 130.

bulls, of its canons, and of the writings of the holy fathers;<sup>35</sup> behold what the Spirit hath done in the Bible, and there admire the celestial prudence of its inimitable brevity.

Who among us could have been, for three years and a half, the constant witness, the passionately attached friend, of a man like Jesus Christ, and could have been able to write in sixteen or seventeen short chapters, or in eight hundred lines, the history of the whole of that life - of his birth, of his ministry, of his miracles, of his preachings, of his sufferings, of his death, of his resurrection, and of his ascension into the heavens? Who among us would have found it possible to avoid saying a word of the first thirty years of such a life? Who among us could have related so many acts of kindness [p.297] without an exclamation; so many miracles without reflections on them; so many sublime thoughts without any emphasis; so many sufferings without complaint; so many acts of injustice without bitterness; so many sinless infirmities in their Master, and so many sinful infirmities in his disciples, without any suppression; so much ingratitude in their cowardly abandonment of him; so, many instances of resistance, so much ignorance, so much hardness of heart, without the slightest excuse or comment? Is it thus that man relates a history? Who among us, further, could have known how to distinguish what behoved to be said cursorily from what required to be told in detail? Who among us, for example, could have thought that the whole creation of the world behoved to be related in a chapter of thirty-one verses; then the probation, the fall, and the condemnation of our race, in another chapter of twenty-four verses; while he consecrated so very many chapters and pages to the construction of the tabernacle and of its utensils, because these presented to future ages a continual and typical view of Jesus Christ and of his redemption? Who among us, for the same reason, would have devoted the fifth part of the book of Genesis to relating the history of one alone of the twelve children of Jacob, while two chapters only had seemed to suffice for seventeen hundred years of the history of the human race, from Adam's fall to the

deluge? Who among us would have thought, like Matthew, of mentioning only four women (and such women!) in the forty-two generations of the ancestors of Jesus Christ, and of their recording there the names of the incestuous Tamar, the impure Rahab, Ruth the Moabitess, and the adulterous spouse of Uriah, without tempering the scandal by a single reflection? Who among us would have, consecrated but a single verse to the conversion of a Roman proconsul (Acts xiii. 12)? Who among us, after having shared, during ten years, in the labours of Paul, his perils, his imprisonments, his preachings, and his prophetic gifts, could have related twenty-two [p.298] years of such a life without saying a word about himself, and without making known, except by the mere change of the personal pronoun (at chap. xvi. ver. 10), that from Troas to Jerusalem and Cesarea, and from Jerusalem and Cesarea to Malta and thence to Rome, he had been his suffering, faithful, indefatigable companion? It is necessary, in order to our being aware of this, that it should be Paul himself who, during his last imprisonment, should write to Timothy: “At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me; Luke only is with me.” - (2 Tim. iv. 16,11; Philem. 24; Coloss. iv. 14.) Holy and heavenly reserve, humble and noble silence, such as the Holy Ghost alone could have taught!

35 Concile de Trent, sess. 4, 1st and 2d decrees, published 28th Apr. 1546. Bellarmin. de Verbo Dei, lib. iv. cap. 3, 5, 6. Coton, lib. ii. cap. 24, 34, 35. Baile Traité i. du Perron contre Tilenus.

Where will you find, among all uninspired narrators, a man who could have written, like Luke, the Acts of the Apostles? Who could have contrived to relate within thirty pages the church history of the thirty noblest years of Christianity - from the ascension of the Son of man above the clouds of heaven, to the imprisonment of St Paul in the capital of the Roman world? Incomparable history! See, at once, how short it is, and yet how full! What do we not find in it? Addresses delivered to the Jews, to the Greeks, before the tribunals, before the Areopagus, and before the Sanhedrim, in places of public resort and before a proconsul, in synagogues and before kings; admirable descriptions of the primitive Church; miraculous and dramatic scenes witnessed in the midst of her; the interventions of angels, to deliver, to warn, or to punish;

controversies and divisions in Christian congregations; new institutions in the Church; the history of a first council and its synodic epistle; commentaries on the Scripture; accounts of heresy; judgments from God, solemn and terrible; appearances of the Lord in the highway, in the temple, and in prison; details of conversions, often miraculous and singularly varied - that of Eneas, that of the eunuch, that of Cornelius the centurion, that of the Roman jailer, that of the proconsul, that of Lydia, [p.299] that of Apollos, that of a numerous body at Jerusalem - not to mention such as were only commenced, as in the emotion felt by king Agrippa, in the troubled state of Felix's mind, in the kind acts of the centurion Julius; missionary excursions; different solutions of sundry cases of conscience; permanent divisions with respect to external matters among different classes of Christians; mutual prejudices; disputes among the brethren and among the apostles; warm expressions, explanations, and yet triumphs of the spirit of charity over these obstacles; communications from one military officer to another, from one proconsul to another; resurrections from the dead; revelations made to the Church, in order to hasten the calling of the Gentiles; collections for the poor by one Church for another; prophecies; national scenes; punishments consummated or prepared; appearances before Jewish tribunals or Roman municipalities, before governors and kings; meetings of Christians from house to house; their emotions, their prayers, their charity, their doubts; a persecuting king struck by an angel and eaten by worms, just as when, in order to gratify the populace, he had actually slain one apostle and was meditating the death of another; persecutions under every form - by synagogues, by princes, by municipalities, by the Jews, or by popular tumults; deliverances experienced by men of God, through the instrumentality sometimes of a child, sometimes of an angel, sometimes of a Roman tribune or ship-captain, of pagan magistrates or idolatrous soldiers; storms and shipwrecks described with a nautical exactness of detail which, as we ourselves have witnessed, continues to charm the sailors of our own day; - and all this in thirty pages, or twenty-eight short chapters. Admirable brevity! Was God's Holy Spirit not necessary for this conciseness, for this choice of details, for this manner at once pious, varied, brief, richly significative, so sparing in the employment of words, and yet teaching so many things? - Fulness, conciseness,

clearness, unction, simplicity, elevation, practical richness; such is the book of Church history that was needed for God's people. True; but, once more, it is not thus that men compose histories.

Could you find upon the earth a man capable of relating the murder of his mother with the calmness, the moderation, the sobriety, the apparent impassibility of that quadruple narrative of the evangelists, telling of the crucifixion of Jesus, of that Jesus whom they loved more than one loves his mother, more than one loves his life? of that Jesus whom they had seen on his knees in Gethsemane; then betrayed, forsaken, dragged with his hands bound to Jerusalem, and finally nailed naked to a cross, while the sun hid his light, and the earth quaked and opened, and when He who had raised the dead to life again, was himself reduced to the state of the dead! Was not God's Spirit then required at every line, at every word of such a narrative, in order to make a suitable choice of details, amid an age and a world of recollections?

9. There was a necessity, moreover, for an entire guidance by the Holy Ghost, in order to the maintenance of that prophetic reserve which the sacred historians were enabled in so many respects to observe; and of that altogether divine prudence, which reveals itself not only in what they teach, but also in what they withhold; not only in the terms which they employ, but also in those they avoid.

And here, to enable one to form some estimate of this, observe them, for example, when they speak of the mother of Jesus. What divine foresight, and what prophetic wisdom, both in their narratives and in their expressions! How readily might they have been led, in their ardent adoration of the Son, to express themselves, when speaking of the mother, in terms of too much respect! Would not a single word, suffered to escape from the want of circumspection so natural to their first emotions, have forever sanctioned the idolatries of future ages towards Mary, and the crime of the worship which is paid to her? But they have never [p.301] allowed themselves to drop any such word. Had they so much as merely called her the mother of God? No, not even that; although he was in their eyes Emmanuel, the God-Man, the Word which was in the beginning, which was with God, which was God, and which was made flesh. Listen to them. What do we find them say of her after the death and the resurrection of their Saviour? One single sentence, after which they say not a word more about her. "These all continued

with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.” (Acts i. 14.) (“*Hi omnes erant perseverantes unanimiter in oratione cum mulieribus, et Mariâ et matre Jesu et fratribus ejus.*”) Here they name her neither first nor last; here she appears, as the mother of Jesus, among the brethren of Jesus, and the women of Galilee. And what do we find them say of her before the Lord’s death? Note this carefully. Ah, it is not thus that men relate events! Of all that Jesus Christ may have said to his mother after the opening of his mission, they have selected but three sayings to be handed down to us. The first is as follows: “Woman (when she interfered with his commencing ministry, and asked of him a miracle), woman (woman!) what have I to do with thee?”<sup>36</sup> Then, when a woman from among the people, in the warmth of her enthusiasm, cried out from amid the crowd: “Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked!” “Yea, rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it!”<sup>37</sup> Such is the second. Hear now the third: His mother and his brethren were shaken in their faith, and some of them had been heard to say, “He is beside himself (*dicebant enim, quoniam in furorem versus est*); and one said unto him, ‘Behold thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to speak with thee.’” “Who is my mother?” was his reply; and stretching forth his hand towards his disciple’s he said: “Behold my mother . . . [p.302]

<sup>36</sup> John ii. 4.

<sup>37</sup> Luke xi. 27, 28.

every woman that shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my mother.” “*Ecce mater mea.*” And when, in his last agony, he beholds her from the cross, he no longer calls her by the name of mother; but he bequeaths her to the disciple whom he loved, saying, “Woman, behold thy son; John, behold thy mother;” and from that hour that disciple took her to his own home, not to worship her but to protect her, as a weak and suffering creature whose soul had been pierced through with a sword.

Is it thus, then, we again ask, that men relate events, and must not the prophetic Spirit alone have been the relater of these facts? We could wish to give other examples: they at this moment crowd upon our mind, and it costs us a sacrifice to omit mentioning them; for the more

narrowly we study these historical books, the more does the prophetic wisdom of God's Spirit who dictated them reveal itself there in details, at first sight far from obvious. We could wish to point out among others the altogether prophetic wisdom with which the Holy Spirit often, on coming to relate some one important fact more than once, is careful to vary his expressions, in order to prevent the false interpretations that might be put upon it, and to condemn beforehand the errors which were in a distant future to be attached to it. We would cite, for example, the manner, so remarkable and so unexpected, in which the tenth law of the Decalogue is repeated in Deuteronomy,<sup>38</sup> with a remarkable transposition of its first terms; the Holy Ghost thus desiring to confound prophetically the artifice whereby the doctors of Rome were to endeavour, fifteen centuries afterwards, to divide that commandment into two, in order to veil over the criminal omission they have dared to make of the second: "And thou shalt not make unto thyself any graven image, nor any likeness . . . thou shalt not bow down to them, nor serve them."

We could wish to [p.303] point farther to the variety of expression with which the Holy Ghost has related to us the divine institution of the holy Supper, and has paraphrased it several times, for the purpose of enabling us better to comprehend what was the meaning of Jesus Christ, and to condemn beforehand the carnal sense which people were to give to these words: "THIS IS MY BLOOD; this CUP is the New TESTAMENT in my blood," he also said: "This cup is the COMMUNICATION of the blood of the New Testament." We would desire to call attention to the prophetic wisdom with which the Holy Ghost, in order to confound those who in the sequel were to allege that Judas did not participate in the last Supper, and that he went out before, or did not come in till after it, has taken care to let us know, by Mark and Matthew,<sup>39</sup> that Jesus gave notice of the treachery of Judas before the communion, Judas being present; and by Luke, that he gave notice of it also afterwards, Judas being present.<sup>40</sup> We could wish to show in the case of all the New Testament writers, the constant sobriety of their words, when the subject in hand bears on the relations of pastors to the churches; and that admirable prudence with which they have always abstained from applying, even in a single instance, to the ministers of the Christian Church, the name *sacerdotes*, or sacrificers; reserving to

them that title of elders or presbyters which was given to laymen in Israel, and distinguishing them always from the sacerdotal race (which represented Jesus Christ, and which behoved to cease when the sole true priest had appeared). We could wish to point out, also, that prudence with which never do we find a soul

38 Deut. v. 21; Exod. xx. 17; Luke viii. 25.

39 Matt. xxvi. 21-26; Mark xiv. 19-33.

40 Luke xxii. 19-23.

conducted to any other pastor, any other director (καθηγητής)<sup>41</sup> than Jesus Christ, and with which, in recommending deference towards spiritual guides, the Scripture is careful to name them always in the plural, in order that none might ever have its authority to appeal to in support of that idea, so natural to pastors and [p.304] to the members of flocks, that every soul ought to have its pastor among men. “Call no man on earth your father; and do not make yourself be called DIRECTOR, for Christ alone is your director.” What precaution, what reserve in the narratives, in order that too much might never be attributed to man, and to recount “the great things that God did by means of the apostles,”<sup>42</sup> in such a manner that self in all might be abased, that all glory might redound to God, and that all the Lord’s servants may learn to say with the last prophet of the Old Testament and the first prophet of the New, “He must increase, and I must decrease.”

We repeat it, one must do violence to his own feelings, with the volume of the Bible before him, not to cite more such examples from it.

From all these traits taken together, it behoves us then to conclude, that, though the whole Scripture is divinely inspired, the historical books, more than all the rest, make this divine intervention most manifest; they show it to be most indispensable; they attest, that for such pages it was necessary that the invisible and almighty hand of the Holy Ghost should be placed over that of the sacred writer, and guide it from the first line to the last. Here something more was necessary than learned men, than saints, than enlightened minds, than angels or archangels - here God was necessary.

We will say, then, with Origen, that the sacred volumes breathe the plenitude of the Spirit, and that there is nothing either in Prophets, or in Law, or in Gospel, or in Apostle, which does not come down from the

fulness of the majesty of God;<sup>43</sup> and with St Ambrose,<sup>44</sup> [p.305] - “drink both the cup of the Old and that of the New Testament, for, in both, it is Christ that thou drinkest. Drink Jesus Christ, that thou mayest drink the blood by which thou hast been redeemed. Drink Jesus Christ, in order that thou mayest drink in all his sayings. We drink holy Scripture, we devour holy Scripture, when the juice of the everlasting Word descends into the veins of our mind, and penetrates the energies of our soul.” And with Augustine:<sup>45</sup> “Wonderful are the depths of thine oracles! Behold how their surface charms little ones; but wonderful depth, O my God, what wonderful depth! One shudders at the contemplation of it - a thrill of reverence and trembling of love!”

41 Matt. xxiii. 8, 10.

42 Acts xiv. 27; Rom. xv. 8; 1 Cor. iii. 6.

43 *Homilia* ii. in *Jerem.*, cap. I.

44 “Utrumque poculum bibe Veteris et Novi Testamenti, quia ex utroque Christum bibis. Bibe Christum, ut bibas sanguinem quo redemptus es: bibe Christum, ut bibas sermones ejus. Bibitur Scriptura sacra, et devoratur Scriptura divina, cum in venas mentis ac vires animi succus verbi descondit eterni.” (*Ambrosius in Psalm i. Enarratio.*)

45 Mira profunditas eloquorum tuorum, quorum ecce ante nos superficies blandiens parvulis; sed mira profunditas, Deus meus, mira profunditas! Horror est intendere in eam, horror honoris et tremor amoris! (*Confess.* lib. xii. Cap. 14.)

But, how now (it has been sometimes said further), must we believe that the letter of the Pagan Lysias,<sup>46</sup> or the harangue of the Jew Gamaliel,<sup>47</sup> or the discourses of Job’s harsh friends, were all inspired? No, without doubt. No more than those of Cain, or of Lamech, or of Rabshakeh, or of Satan. But the sacred writers were as really guided by God, in order that they might transmit them to us, as they were to tell us<sup>48</sup> the song of Mary in the hill country, or that of the seraphim in the year that king Uzziah died, or that of the celestial army at Bethlehem. The Holy Ghost is not always the author of the words which he reports, but he is always the historian.

Meanwhile another evasion is made in order to except a part of the Scriptures from the Theopneustia. If this is not the most serious objection, it is, at least, one of those that are most frequently advanced.

[p.306]

***Section III. Will the Apparent Insignificance of Certain Details In the Bible Authorize Their Being Excepted From Inspiration?***

“Was it suited to the dignity of inspiration to accompany the thoughts of the apostle Paul, even into those vulgar details to which we see him descend in many of his letters? Could the Holy Ghost have gone so far as to dictate to him those ordinary salutations with which they close? or those medicinal counsels which he gives to Timothy with respect to his stomach and his frequent infirmities? or those commissions with which he charges him with respect to his parchments and a certain cloak which he had left with Carpus at Troas, when he quitted Asia?”

We beg the reader will allow us to beseech him to ponder well, when, on taking the Bible into his hands, he does not perceive, from his very first readings, the tokens of God in such or such a passage of the Word. Let not those reckless hands proceed to cast a single verse out of the temple of the Scriptures. They clasp an eternal book, all the authors of which have said, like Paul, “And I think that I also have the mind of the Lord.” If then he does not as yet see any thing divine in such or such a verse, the fault is in himself, not in the passage. Let him say rather, like Jacob, “ Surely the Lord is in this place, and I knew it not.”<sup>49</sup>

Let us examine more closely the passages alleged.

Paul, from the recess of his prison, asks for the return of his cloak; he had left it with Carpus at Troas; he begs Timothy to hasten before winter, and not to forget to bring it with him. This domestic detail, so many thousand times adduced as an objection to the inspiration of the Scriptures, from the days of the Anomeans, [p.307]

46 Acts xxiii. 25.

47 Acts v. 34.

48 Luke i. 46.

49 Gen. Xxviii. 16.

spoken of by Jerome,<sup>50</sup> this detail seems to you too trivial for an apostolical book, or, at least, too insignificant, and too remote from edification, for the dignity of inspiration. Unhappy is the man, nevertheless, who does not perceive its pathetic grandeur!

Jesus Christ also, on the day of his death, spoke of his garment and his vesture. Would you have that passage dismissed from the number of inspired sayings? It was after a night of fatigue and anguish. He had been led through the streets of Jerusalem for seven hours in succession, by torch-light, from street to street, from tribunal to tribunal, beaten and buffeted, blindfolded in mockery, and struck with sticks on the head. The morrow's sun had not risen when they bound his hands to lead him further from the sacerdotal palace to Pilate's pretorium. There, his flesh torn with stripes, bathed with blood, then delivered over in order to his final execution into the hands of ferocious soldiers, he saw all his clothes taken from him that he might be arrayed in a purple robe, while people knelt before him, and put a reed in his hand, and spit in his face. Then, before placing the cross on his torn limbs, his garments were thrown over his wounds, in order to his being taken to Calvary; but, when they were about to proceed to his execution, they were taken from him for the third time; and it was then that, spoiled of every thing, first of his upper garment, then of his very inner vesture, he was to die on the felon's gibbet, in view of an immense concourse of people. Was there ever found under heaven a man who has not found these details deeply moving, sublime, inimitable? and was there ever found one who, from the recital of this death-scene, would think of retrenching, as useless or too commonplace, the account given of those garments which were parted, and of that vesture on which a lot was cast? Has not infidelity itself said, in speaking of it, that the majesty of the Scriptures astonished it, that their [p.308] simplicity addressed itself to the heart, that the death of Socrates was that of a sage, but that the death of Jesus Christ was that of a God?<sup>51</sup> And if divine inspiration was reserved for a portion only of the holy books, would it not be for these very details? Would it not be for the history of that love which, after having lived upon the earth more poor than the birds of the air and the foxes of the field, desired to die poorer still, despoiled of every thing, of his upper and under garments, fixed to a felon's gibbet, with his arms extended and nailed to the tree? Ah! let your mind be at ease with respect to the Holy Ghost! He has not derogated from his dignity; and very far from having thought that he descended too far in reporting these facts to the earth, he hastened to relate them; and it was a thousand years beforehand, it was in the age of the war of Troy, that he sang them to the harp of David:

“They pierced my hands and my feet (he said); they look and stare upon me; they part my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture!”<sup>52</sup>

Well then, this is the same Spirit who has desired to show to us Paul writing to Timothy and asking for his cloak. Mark what he says. he, too, was spoiled of every thing. Even while as yet but a youth, he was great among men, a favourite of princes, admired by all: he forsook all for Jesus Christ. For thirty years and more he has been poor; in labours more abundant than others, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent; of the Jews five times received he forty stripes save one; thrice was he beaten with rods; once was he stoned; thrice he suffered shipwreck; in journeyings often, in perils of waters, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils on the sea; in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in cold and nakedness

50 See Proemium in epist. ad Philem.

51 Rousseau's *Emile*.

52 Ps. xxii. 17, 18; John xix. 23, 24.

(we quote his own words.)<sup>53</sup> Mark now what he says: behold him advanced in years; he is in his last prison; he is in Rome; he is waiting for his [p.309] sentence of death; he has fought the good fight; he has finished his course; he has kept the faith; but he is shivering with cold; . . . winter has commenced; and he is in want of clothes! Buried in one of the dungeons of the Mamertine prisons, he lies under such a load of opprobrium that even all the Christians of Rome are ashamed of him, and when first called to appear before his judges, no man stood by him. The time was, ten years before, when already a prisoner in Rome, and loaded with chains, he had at least received some money from the Philippians, who, knowing his wretched state, had subscribed among themselves in their indigence something to be sent as alms to him there; but now behold him forsaken; nobody was with him but Luke; all had abandoned him; winter was at hand. He needed a cloak; he had left his two hundred leagues off with Carpus at Troas; in the chilly dungeons of Rome there was nobody to lend him one: had he not joyfully parted with all for Jesus?<sup>54</sup> had he not counted all the world's glories as dung that he might win Christ? and does he not willingly endure all things for the elect's sake?<sup>55</sup> We were ourselves last year in Rome, in a hotel at the

beginning of November, on a rainy day. With what a lively feeling, under the chill impressions of the evening, did we represent to ourselves the holy apostle Paul in the subterranean prisons of the Capitol, dictating the last of his letters, expressing his regret at the want of his cloak, and begging Timothy to send it to him before winter!

Who is there now that would wish to retrench from the inspired epistles a trait so affecting and so pathetic? Does not the Holy Ghost take you as it were into Paul's prison, there to have instant ocular evidence of his affectionate self-renunciation and sublime poverty; so as to make us see also, as with our own eyes, what was the depth of his love, sometime before, when it made him [p.310] write in his letter to the Philippians: "I tell you, even weeping, that there are many among you who mind only earthly things, and whose end is destruction!" Do you not seem to behold him in his prison, loaded with his chain, engaged in writing, and the tears dropping on his parchment? And do you not seem also to behold that poor body of his, one day ill-clothed, suffering, and benumbed; the next, beheaded and dragged into the Tiber, in expectation of that day when the earth will give up her dead, and the sea the dead that are in it, and when Christ shall change our vile body to be fashioned like unto his glorious body?" And if these details are beautiful, do you think they are not useful too? And if useful for the man who reads them as a simple historical truth, what do they not become for him who believes in their inspiration, and who says to himself: "O my soul, these words are written by Paul; but it is thy God that addresses them to thee!" Who could tell the strength and the comfort which, by their very familiarness and their actuality, they may have carried into prisons and cottages? Who could reckon up the poor men and the martyrs to whom such traits have imparted encouragement, example, and joy? We recollect, in Switzerland, in our day, the pastor Juvet, who was refused a coverlet, twenty years ago, in the prisons of the Canton de Vaud. One may call to mind in the Universal Church that Jerome of Prague, who was shut up for three hundred and forty days in

53 2 Cor. xi. 23-27.

54 Phil. iii. 8.

55 2 Tim. ii. 10.

the prisons of Constance, in the bottom of a dark fetid tower, and never

allowed to leave it except to appear before his murderers. No more has there been forgotten, among the English, holy Bishop Hooker, dragged from his damp, disgusting cellar, covered with wretchedly poor clothes and a borrowed cloak, as he proceeded to the stake, tottering on his staff, and bent double with rheumatism. Venerable fathers, blessed martyrs, you would no doubt call to mind your brother Paul, shut up in the prisons of Rome, suffering from cold and nakedness, and asking for his cloak! Ah! unhappy he [p.311] who feels not the sublime humanity, - the tender grandeur, the provident and divine sympathy, the depth and the charm of such a mode of instruction! but more to be pitied still, perhaps, is he who declares it to be human, because he does not comprehend it! Here we would quote the noble words of the venerable Haldane<sup>56</sup> on this verse of Paul:- “Here, in his solemn farewell address, of which the verse before us forms a part - the last of his writings, and which contains a passage of unrivalled grandeur - the apostle of the Gentiles is exhibited in a situation deeply calculated to affect us. We behold him standing upon the confines of the two worlds - in this world about to be beheaded, as guilty, by the Emperor of Rome - in the other world to be crowned, as righteous, by the King of kings here deserted by men, there to be welcomed by angels here in want of a cloak to cover him, there to be clothed upon with his house from heaven.”

Ah! rather than bring forward these passages in order to rob the Scriptures of their infallibility, one should have owned in them that wisdom of God, which so often, by a single stroke, has contrived to give us instructions for which, without that, long pages would have been necessary. One should have adored that tender condescension which, stooping to our feebleness, has been pleased not only to reveal to us the loftiest conceptions of heaven in the simplest words of earth, but also to present them to us in forms so lively, so dramatic, so penetrating, by often concentrating them, so as to enable us the better to seize them, in the narrow compass of a single verse.

It is thus, then, that St Paul, by these words thrown [p.312] out at random, among the very last commissions of a familiar letter, darts for us a sudden light on his ministry, and discovers to us with a word the whole of the apostle’s life, as a single flash of lightning, during night, illuminates in an instant all the summits of our Alps, and as some people reveal to you their whole soul by a look.

How many striking instances of this might we cite! They crowd upon us; but we are obliged to restrain ourselves; and it will behove us rather to keep to the precise passages which have been adduced as objections.

*56 The Verbal Inspiration of the Old and New Testament maintained and established, by Robert Haldane, Esq. Edinburgh 1830.* We warmly recommend to our readers the book of a man whose memory ought to be dear to our churches, and whose short residence at Geneva bore so much fruit. We would also refer, on the same subject, to a treatise by Mr Alexander Carson: *The Theories of inspiration, &c. &c. Dublin 1830.* Both these works have been of much use to us.

Before proceeding farther, we must, however, frankly avow, that we are almost ashamed to defend under this form the Word of the Lord; and for any such apology we experience, as it were, a disgust of conscience. Is it altogether becoming? and can we engage in it without some irreverence? We ought to look well at all times to the manner in which we defend the things of God, and see to it that we do not imitate the recklessness of Uzzah in putting forth his hand to the ark of God, and wishing to hold it, for the oxen stumbled. The anger of the Lord, we are told, was kindled against him for his error.<sup>57</sup>

If it be fully acknowledged, on both sides, that any word is contained in the oracles of God, then why defend it . . . as worthy of him, by man's reasonings? You may do so, no doubt, before unbelievers, but with men who own the divinity of the Scriptures, is it not to commit an insult on that word - is it not to take up a false position, and to lay your hand on the ark, as Uzzah did? Did this Word present itself to your eyes as a root out of a dry ground; had it no form nor comeliness, and no beauty to make you desire it, still you ought to venerate it, and look for every thing for it from him who has given it. Does it not imply, then, our being wanting in respect for him when he speaks, when we would prove the respect that is due to him? Should I not have been ashamed when shown my Sa- [p.313] viour and my God rising from supper, taking a bason, laying aside his garments, girding himself with a towel, and proceeding to wash his disciples' feet - should I not have been ashamed to set myself to prove that, in spite of all this, still he was Christ! Ah, I

should rather have wished to worship him more fervently than ever! Well, then, the majesty of the Scriptures desires to stoop to us! There do you not behold one who rises from the table, lays aside his garments, girds himself like a servant, and kneels before sinners, in order to wash their feet? “If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me!” Is there not in that very humiliation, which reveals itself to us with such a charm, as it were the voice of the Word in his humiliation? As for us, it strikes us that there is no arrogance to be compared with that of a man who, owning the Bible to be a book from God, then makes bold to sift with his hand the pure in it from what is impure, the inspired from what is uninspired, God from man. This is to overturn all the foundations of the faith; it amounts to placing it, no more in believing God, but in believing ourselves. It ought to be enough for us that a chapter or a word form part of the Scriptures, in order to our knowing it to be divinely good; for God has pronounced upon it as he has upon the creation, “I beheld all that I had made, and behold all was good.” We will never say then, I find this saying admirable, therefore it is from God; and still less, I see no use in it, therefore it is from man. God preserve us from so doing! But we say, it is in the Scriptures, therefore it is from God. It is from God, therefore it is useful, therefore it is wise, therefore it is admirable; and if I do not yet see it to be so, the fault lies only with myself. We hold there is at error in this protection which man’s wisdom would accord to that of God; we hold there is an outrage involved in that clumsy stamp with which it sets itself to legalize the holy Scriptures, and in that absurd signature with which it dares to mark its pages.

If, then, we still go on here with the work of showing

57 2 Sam. vi. 6, 7. [p.314]

how the divine wisdom shines out in some passages which people dare to consider human, it is not for the purpose, of establishing their divine origin on the judgments of our better informed wisdom, or to procure a tardy respect for them from the mere fact of the beauty they disclose. Our respect goes before; it was founded on the passage being written in the “Oracles of God.” Henceforth, before having seen, we have believed. We have no thought, therefore, but that of refuting the objection by some examples of its temerity. Let us listen, further, to two

or three passages to which people have made bold to refuse the honours of inspiration, because they have started with the idea that they are without any spiritual bearing. We will quote but a very small number here. It takes no time to pronounce of a sentence that it is useless or vulgar - to demonstrate that there is a mistake in the objection, requires pages.

One of the passages which we have most frequently heard adduced, when people have wished to justify the distinction between what is inspired in the Word of God, and what is not, is Paul's recommendation to Timothy with regard to the stomach complaints and ailings with which that young disciple was afflicted. "Drink no longer water, but use a little wine, for thy stomach's sake and frequent infirmities."<sup>58</sup>

Nevertheless examine this passage more closely; what an admirable and living revelation do we find in it of the grandeur of the apostolic calling, and of the amiability of the Christian character! Mark, first, that it was as it were in the temple of God that it was pronounced; for immediately before you hear those solemn words:- "I charge thee before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things, without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. Lay hands suddenly on no man, keep thyself pure, drink no longer water." One sees that it is in the presence of their common Master, and of his [p.315] holy angels, that Paul desired to speak to his disciple; let us enter then into the same temple, in order to comprehend him - let us place ourselves on the same heights, "before the Lord and his holy angels," then shall we speedily perceive how many beauties are revealed by these words, both in the ministry of the apostles, and in the ways of the Lord. This the celebrated Chrysostom well understood, when, preaching on those very words, he observed how little the Lord's most useful servants should be surprised, should it so happen that their Lord should deem it fit to prove them, as he did Timothy, with complaints in their chest, or head, or stomach - should he put some thorn in their flesh; and should he thus buffet them by some angel of Satan, in order to fashion them, on the one hand, for sympathy, for cordial affections, for tender compassions; and, on the other, for patience, self-denial, and, above all, for prayer. Read over seriously, and as if in the light of the last day, this beautiful passage of the apostle's;

ere long, within the small compass of this single verse, you will wonder how many precious lessons the Holy Ghost would give us, besides that pointed out by the pious bishop of Constantinople. How many words, and almost chapters, would have been required, in order that as much might be said to us under another form! Here you will learn, for example, Timothy's sobriety; he had wished, like Paul, to bring his body under - he abstained entirely from wine. You will see here, in the third place, with what a tender and fatherly delicacy the apostle reproved him, either for his imprudence, or for austerity carried too far. You will remark here with what wisdom the Lord authorizes, and even bids, by these words, the men of

58 1 Tim. v. 23.

God to pay the necessary attention to their health, at a time, nevertheless, in which he has thought fit to compromise it by sicknesses. In the fifth place, you will here admire the prophetic forecast with which these words, put in the mouth of an apostle, condemn beforehand those human traditions which were afterwards to interdict the use of wine to [p.316] believers as an impurity. Here you will see, in the sixth place, with what tender solicitude, and with what fatherly watchfulness, the apostle, in the midst of his high functions, and notwithstanding the cares with which all the churches overwhelmed him (from Jerusalem to Illyricum, and from Illyricum to Spain), directed his regards to the personal circumstances, to his health, to the weakness of his stomach, to his often infirmities, and to the imprudent habits of his daily regimen. You will further learn here an historical fact, which will throw an useful light for you on the nature of the miraculous gifts. Notwithstanding all the interest felt by Paul in his disciple, he is incapable of re-establishing Timothy's health, even he who, however, had so often healed the sick, and even raised the dead to life again; for the apostles (and we learn it again by this verse, as well as by the illness of Epaphroditus),<sup>59</sup> did not receive the gift of miracles for a continuance, any more than that of inspiration; it was a power that was renewed to them for every particular occasion.

But if these numerous lessons from the apostle are important, and if we thus receive them all in a single verse, and in a way the best fitted to affect us, oh! how penetrating do they not become to the Christian

soul, from the moment he has the certain conviction that here we have not the words of a good man only; that they are not even those of an apostle only; but that it is the voice of his God who desires to teach him, under so affecting a form, sobriety, brotherly love, an affectionate interest for each other's health, the usefulness of infirmities and afflictions even for God's most zealous servants, and who, in order to convey so many precious lessons to him, condescends to address him by the mouth of a simple creature!

People, further, often object to us those greetings which close the epistles of Paul, and which, after all, [p.317] we are told, are of no more importance than those ordinary compliments with which we all usually conclude our letters. Here there is nothing unworthy of an apostle, no doubt; but no more is there any thing inspired. Here the Holy Ghost has allowed Paul's pen to run on, as we ourselves would allow a clerk to conclude by himself, in the usual form, a letter, the first pages of which we had dictated to him. Look, for example, at the last chapter of the epistle to the Romans. Is it not evident there, that the apostle surrenders himself, in the course of sixteen verses, to the purely personal reminiscences of his friendships? Was there any need of inspiration for the dry nomenclature of all those persons? The apostle mentions eighteen by their names, without reckoning all to whom he sent remembrances collectively in the house of Aquila, in that of Narcissus, or in that of Aristobulus. These verses require no inspiration; and, what would have sufficed at most, in order to their being written, would have been such a superintendence on the part of the Holy Ghost, as that which he still exercised when he left them to their personality.

59 Phil. ii. 27.

We are not afraid to avow that we delight to recall here these sixteen verses that have been so often objected to; for, far from furnishing any ground for objection, they belong to the number of passages in which the divine wisdom recommends itself by itself; and, if you will examine more closely, you will, ere long, join us in admiring the fecundity, the condescension, and the elevation of this method of instruction; you will find in it, under the most practical and the most artless form, a living picture of a primitive church; and you will recognize in it to what an elevation, even the least known, and the most

feeble among them, may rise in its bosom.

Listen first, with what an affectionate interest the apostle recommends to the kind regard of the church of Rome that humble woman, who, it would appear, undertook the voyage from Corinth to Rome for the sake of his temporal affairs. She was a sister well beloved, [p.318] who had put herself at the service of the saints, and who had not been afraid to open her house to a great many of the believers, and to Paul himself, notwithstanding the perils of that hospitality. She was servant to the church of Cenchrea. It behoved the brethren who were settled at Rome, therefore, to receive her in the Lord, and to aid her in all her needs. Behold, then, what an example the apostle sets us, in some words, of that Christian urbanity which ought to characterize all the mutual relations of God's children. Admire, as he passes so rapidly under review the brethren and the sisters of the church of Rome, the manner in which he contrives to pour even over this list of names which is called dry, the sweet unction of his charity. He has some words of encouragement and affectionate esteem for each of them; he recalls in it the generous hospitality of Phebe, the risk of death which Aquila and his companion braved for him, the honour which Epenetus had of having been the first of the Achaians that were converted to Jesus Christ, the great labours of Andronicus and of Junia, who were even in the faith before him; his Christian love for Amphiass, the evangelical labours of Urbane, the proved fidelity of Apelles, the manifold labours of Tryphena and Tryphosa in the Lord, and those of the beloved Persis. What an appeal, too, to the conscience of every serious reader is there in this rapid catalogue! See, then, he ought to say to himself, who the faithful were to whom salutations were sent in the church of Rome! And were the same apostle to write a letter to the church in which I myself occupy a place for some days, what would he say of me? would my name be found in it? could he add that, like Phebe, I receive the saints into my house; that, like Aquila and Priscilla, I hold Christian meetings under my happy roof; that, like Mary, I have bestowed much labour on the Lord's ministers; that, like Andronicus and Junia, I had suffered for Jesus Christ; that, like Rufus, I am chosen in the Lord; that, like Urbane, I am his helper; that, like Tryphena, [p.319] and Tryphosa, I labour in the Lord; and that I even labour much, like the beloved Persis?

But behold, above all, what a lesson there is for Christian women

in these admirable verses! In the unaffected familiarity which terminates this letter, what a lofty idea is given us of their vocation! What an important part, then, is assigned them in the church, and, what a place in heaven! Without having yet seen the city of Rome, Paul mentions there by their own names, no fewer than nine or ten women among his fellow-labourers. First we have, besides Phebe, that admirable Priscilla, who had even exposed herself to death for the apostle, and towards whom all the churches of the Gentiles felt so much gratitude. Then we have a lady, called Mary, who had, he says, bestowed much labour on the apostles; there was Tryphena; there was Tryphosa, who laboured also in the Lord; there was Persis, who was particularly dear to him, and who had laboured much in the Lord; there was Julia; there was the sister of Nereus; there was Olympia, perhaps;<sup>60</sup> there was, in fine, the venerable mother of Rufus. And observe, in passing, with what respect he has named this lady, and with what delicacy he proceeds to salute her with the tender name of mother. Have we not here the very Christian politeness which he recommends to these same Romans in the 12th chapter of this epistle: “Salute Rufus, chosen in the Lord,” he writes, “and his mother, WHO IS ALSO MINE!”<sup>61</sup> What an affecting pattern do not these verses propose to husbands and wives, in the persons of Aquila and of Priscilla! You see them here in Rome; you may have seen them, five years before, banished from Italy by the Emperor Claudius, arriving at Corinth, and receiving in their house the apostle Paul; then, eighteen months afterwards, setting off with him to Asia, and staying at Ephesus, where they [p.320] already had a church in their house,<sup>62</sup> and where they received with so much success the young and brilliant Apollos, who, notwithstanding his talents, thought himself fortunate in having it in his power to put himself to the school of their Christian conversation and their charity. Now that Claudius had died, so as to make way for Nero, you see them, when hardly returned to Rome, immediately consecrate their new residence to the church of God. It is in their house that it meets; and you learn here, further, as it were in passing, that these spouses had not hesitated to lay down their lives for the life of Paul.

But, besides all these lessons, which, in these sixteen short verses, are offered to our consciences, you may there learn further two facts of deep importance for the history of the church. And, first, you see there, with the most unsought and the fullest evidence, that at that time there

was no question in Rome about Peter, or his episcopate, or about his popedom, or his primacy, or even his presence. Do you not perceive a prophetic foresight in the care taken by the Holy Ghost to do, for this epistle to the Romans, what he has not done for any other of the fourteen of Paul's epistles, and to close it thus with a long catalogue of the women and of men that were the most esteemed at the time in the whole Roman church? Behold, then, the apostle of the Gentiles, who, twenty years after his conversion, writes to them with greetings addressed to as many as twenty-eight persons living in the midst of them, by their proper names, and many others besides by collective designations, and who has not a word to send them for the prince of the apostles, as he is called, for the vicar of Jesus Christ, for his superior, for the bishop of the universal church, for the founder of the Roman church !! Peter was the apostle of the Circumcision, and not of the Gentiles;<sup>63</sup> his place was at Jerusalem; there we have to look for him, and there [p.321] Paul had always found him. In his first journey, three years after his conversion, Paul visited him and abode fifteen days in his house.<sup>64</sup> In his second journey, to go to the first council, he again meets him there. In his third journey, in the year 44, at the time of the death of Herod 60 Or Olympias. This name might have been that of a woman; but it is probably that of a man.

61 Rom. xii. 10.

62 1 Cor. xvi. 19.

63 Gal. ii. 7, 8, 9.

64 Gal. i. 18.

Agrippa, again it is there that Peter has his residence.<sup>65</sup> In his fourth journey, seventeen years after his conversion,<sup>66</sup> Paul finds him still there, in the charge of an apostle, not of the Gentiles (mark this well) but of the Circumcision. And when at last he was on the way accomplishing his fifth and last journey, he writes to the Romans and the Galatians; and then in order that the whole Church might know well that Peter is not at Rome, and never was there, we find Paul taking care to salute by their names all the most eminent among the believers at Rome, even among the women. What bishop in our days, of the Latin sect, would dare to write a letter of sixteen chapters to the church of Rome, without saying to it a single word either about its pope, or about Peter, or about a vicar of Jesus Christ?<sup>67</sup>

But there is another historical fact, still more interesting, to the knowledge of which these very sixteen verses, said to be useless, conduct us by the most striking traits. See, in the very details of these short salutations, by what humble instruments, and yet how extensively, the gospel had established itself in so short a time, in the mighty city of Rome. No apostle had set his foot there,<sup>68</sup> yet behold with wonder what progress had already been made by the Word of God, solely through the labours of artizans, merchants, women, slaves, and freedmen, who happened to be in Rome! Jesus Christ had his disciples there, even in the palaces of the Jewish princes who resided at the imperial court, and even among the pagans who served nearer the person of [p.322] Nero. Paul asks that salutations should be sent from him, first (among other Christians) to those of Aristobulus' household; and, secondly, to those of the household of Narcissus "who are in the Lord." Now, the former of these two great personages was the brother of Agrippa the Great and of Herodias; the second was the all-powerful favourite of the emperor Claudius. Agrippina caused him to be put to death only at the close of the year 54.

Ah! let all who call themselves Christians renounce then, and for ever, those rash systems in which people rise against the words of the Scriptures, to impugn their propriety; in which people take away from God's Bible such and such a passage, and such and such a word, in order to make (at least as respects that passage and that word) a Bible of man's; and in which people thus charge themselves with the responsibility of the temerities that shall be ventured upon besides, by doctors of greater hardihood, imitating upon a book what they shall have seen you do upon a verse! What idea can a man have of the sacred writers, when he would impute to them the mad audacity of mingling their own oracles with those of the Most High? We recollect the case of a man who had lost his reason, who was supported by our hospitals, whose handwriting, however, as a copyist, was so beautiful that one of the Geneva ministers engaged him to transcribe his sermons. Great was the confusion of the latter, when on looking at his papers again, he ascertained that the unhappy man had thought it his duty to enrich all the pages with his own thoughts. The distance is less, however, between a lunatic and a minister, even were he holy as Daniel and sublime as Isaiah, than between Daniel and Isaiah and the Eternal Wisdom!

65 Acts xii. 1, 3.

66 Gal. ii. 7.

67 See on this subject the excellent dissertation of Pastor Bost: "*Du pouvoir de St Pierre dans l'Eglise*. Geneva 1833." 68 Rom. i. 11, 13, 14, 15; xv. 22.

68 Rom. i. 11, 13, 14, 15; xv. 22.

Now, then, having advanced thus far, we would wish, before proceeding farther, to recommend to our readers, in the practice of sacred criticism, three precautions, the importance and necessity of which ought to be impressed upon them by the theopneustic doctrine.

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, September

2004.<http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>

Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,

[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

[p.323]

## **VI. On Sacred Criticism, in the Relations it Bears to Divine Inspiration.**

Here we must not be misunderstood. Far from us be the idea of attaching the smallest disfavour to works of sacred criticism! These, on the contrary, we honour we pronounce them necessary; we study them; we consider all ministers of the gospel bound to know them, and that the Christian church is bound to be warmly grateful to them. That is indeed a noble science! It is so because of its object; to study the destinies of the divine text, its canon, its manuscripts, its versions, its witnesses, and the innumerable authors who have quoted it! It is so because of the services it has rendered: how many triumphs achieved over infidelity, how many objections silenced, how many mischievous doubts for ever dissipated! . . . . it is so by its history: how many eminent men have consecrated to it either the devotedness of a pious life, or the might of the finest genius! . . . . it is so, in fine, by its immense results, of which no one, perhaps, will ever know the measure if he has not studied it.

May God preserve us, then, from setting faith here against science; faith which lives on the truth against science which studies it! faith which goes and lays hold of it in the hand of its God, against science which seeks it elsewhere more indirectly, and which often finds it! All that is true in one place, is in pre-established harmony with all that is true in another more elevated place. Faith knows, then, from the first, and before [p.324] having seen any thing, that all truth will render testimony to it. All true science, be it what it may, is its friend; but sacred criticism is more than its friend - it is almost of its kindred. Nevertheless it is all this only as long as it remains true, and as it keeps its own place. The moment it quits it, it must be kept down; it then ceases to be a science; it is but a silly piece of guesswork. Now, as there are three temptations to wander from it, we desire here to recommend three precautions to young men studying it.

### *Section I. Sacred Criticism is a Scientific Inquirer, and Not a Judge.*

First of all, critical science does not keep its place when, instead of being a scientific inquirer, it would be a judge; when, not content with collecting together the oracles of God, it sets about composing them, decomposing them, canonizing them, decanonizing them; and, when it gives forth oracles itself! Then it tends to nothing less than to subvert the faith from its foundation. This we proceed to demonstrate.

Employ your reason, your time, all the resources of your genius, to assure yourself whether the book which has been put into your hands, under the name of the Bible, contains, in fact, the same oracles, the first deposit of which was confided, under the divine Providence, to the Jewish people,<sup>1</sup> and of which the second deposit, under the same guarantee, was committed to the church universal of the apostolic times. Assure yourself, then, if this book be authentic, and if the copyists have not altered it. All this labour is legitimate, rational, honourable; it has been undertaken before you abundantly; and if the investigations of another have not satisfied you, resume them, follow [p.325] them out, get all the information in your power; all the churches of God will thank you. But when this work is over, when you have ascertained that the Bible is an authentic book, and that the unexceptionable seals of God Almighty are attached to it, then listen to what science and reason alike call to you; then listen to God; then *sursùm oculi, flexi poplites, sursùm corda!* then down upon your knees! lift up your hearts on high, in reverence, with profound humility! Then science and reason have no longer to judge, but to receive; no longer to pronounce, but to comprehend. There is still a task, and it is a science, if you will but it is no longer the same; it is that of understanding and submission.

But if your wisdom, on the contrary, after having received the Bible as an authentic book, makes bold to constitute itself the judge of what is found contained there; if, from this Scripture, which calls itself inspired, and which declares that it is, at the last day, to judge you yourself, that wisdom of yours dares to take away any thing; if, seating itself like the angels of the last judgment,<sup>2</sup> it drag the book of God to the seashore of science, in order to collect in its vessels what it sees in it to be good, and to throw out what it finds in it to be bad, if it pretend to separate there the thought of God from the thought of man; if, for example (to adduce but one trait among a thousand) it venture to deny, like Michaelis, that the first two chapters of Matthew are from God,

because it does not approve the Scriptural quotations found in them; next, to deny the inspiration of Mark and that of Luke, because it has found them, it says, in contradiction with Matthew;<sup>3</sup> in a word, if it think it has the power of subjecting the book, acknowledged to be authentic, to the outrageous control of its ignorance, and of its carnal sense; then, it is necessary that it should be reproved; it is guilty of [p.326] revolt, it judges God. Here there is no longer science, there is fascination; there is no longer progress, there is obscurantism.

One may judge of this, if he compare with this blundering of theologians on the word of God, the more rational procedure of physicians and naturalists in studying his works. Here, at least, people hold beforehand as an axiom, that all objects in creation answer to ends that are full of wisdom and harmony. Here science sets itself, not to contest these ends, but to discover them.

Here, what people call progress, is not the daring rashness of controlling the works of their God; it is the good fortune to have sounded them, to have obtained a better recognition of their marvels, and to have been able to present them under some new aspects to the admiration of men.

1 Rom. iii. 1, 2.

2 Matt. xiii. 48, 49.

3 Introduction to the New Testament, by Michaelis, vol. ii. p. 17; vol i. pp. 206. 214 (English translation.)

Why, then, will Christians not do with the works of God in the works of redemption, what naturalists do with the works of God in creation? Why, if, even among the pagans, a physician - the great Galen - could say "that in describing the different parts of the human body, he was composing a hymn in honour of Him who has made us," will not the Christian comprehend that to describe with truth the various parts of the Word of God, would be always "composing a hymn in honour of Him who has made it?" Thus thought the apostolic fathers; thus the pious Irenæus, the disciple of Polycarp, the pupil of John. "The Scriptures are perfect," said he. "In the Scriptures let God always teach, and let man always learn! Thus it is that from the confused polyphony of their instructions, one sole and admirable symphony will make itself heard in us, praising by its hymns the God who has made all things."<sup>4</sup>

Were we to be told, there was a very studious na- [p.827] tion in

existence, among whom the science of Nature, taking a new direction, had begun immense works with the purpose of establishing that there are mistakes in creation; plants badly constructed, animals ill conceived, organs ill adapted - what would you think of such a people and their grand attempt? Would you say that they effected any advance in science? Would you not rather conceive that they darkened and degraded it, and that people there were putting themselves to a deal of learned labour in finding out the art of being ignorant? While anatomists have been unable to explain the use of the liver in the human body, or of antennæ in that of insects, they have not on that account found nature in fault; they have put it all to the account of their own ignorance. Why, then, when you happen not yet to have discovered the use of something that is said in the Scriptures, do you lay the blame on any but yourselves, and why will you not wait?

This is no new idea. It is now sixteen hundred years since a godly man expressed it better than we have done, and preached it with unction to his contemporaries. “If ever, in reading Scriptures,” says Origen, in the thirty-ninth of his homilies,<sup>5</sup> “you happen to stumble on some thought which becomes for thee a stone of stumbling and a rock of offence, blame none but thyself (αἰτιῶ σαυτόν); doubt not that this stone of stumbling and rock of offence has some great meaning (οὐχ εἶν νοήματα), and is to fulfil that promise, ‘He that believeth shall not be confounded.’ - (Rom. ix. 33.) Begin, then, with believing; and soon you will find, under this imaginary stumbling-block, a *plentiful and holy utility*.<sup>6</sup> If we have received the commandment not to speak idle words, for we shall give account thereof at the last judgment, how much more ought we to think, with regard to God’s prophets, that every word proceeding from their mouth had its object to effect and its utility!<sup>7</sup> I believe, then, that for those who know how to make use of the virtue [p.328]

4 “Sic, per dictionum multas voces, una consonans melodia in nobis sentietur, laudans hymnis Deum qui fecit omnia.” According to the Greek, as preserved by John Damascenus: Διὰ τῆς τῶν λέξεων πολυφωνίας, ἐν σύμφωνον μέλος μὴν αἰσθήσεται (Adv. Hæreses, lib. ii. c. 47.)

5 Origenes adamantius, Hom. xxxix. in Jerem. xlv. 22.

6 Πολλὴν φέρειαν ἔχον.

7 Εργατικὸν ἦν.

of the Scriptures, each of the letters written in the oracles of God,

has its object and its use (ἐργάζεται), even to an iota and single jot.... And in like manner as among plants, there is not one which has not its Virtue; and, nevertheless, it belongs only to those who have acquired a knowledge of botany to be able to tell us how each ought to be applied and prepared in order to its becoming useful; so likewise whoever is a *holy and spiritual botanist of the Word of God* (τὶς Βοτανικός ἐστὶν ὁ ἅγιος καὶ πνευματικός), he, collecting each iota and each element, will find the virtue of that ‘Word, and will perceive that nothing in that which is written is superfluous (ὅτι οὐδὲν παρέλκει). Would you have another comparison? Every member of our body has its office for which it has been placed there by the great Architect. Nevertheless, it belongs not to all to be acquainted with its use and virtue, but only to those physicians who have occupied themselves with anatomy..... Well, then, I consider the Scriptures as *the collection of the plants of the Word*, or as the perfect body of the Word. But if thou art neither botanist of the Scriptures nor anatomist of the prophetic words, go not to imagine that there is any thing superfluous there; and when you have been unable to find the reason for that which is written, blame not the holy letters; lay the blame on thyself alone.”<sup>8</sup> Thus spake Origen; but we might have found thoughts quite to the same effect in other fathers, and particularly in Irenæus,<sup>9</sup> who lived still nearer the apostolic times.

However, we must further bid the reader remark, that this pretending to judge the Word of God over-throws all the foundations of the faith. It would even render it impossible in the hearts of all who are but a little consistent. This it is but too easy to demonstrate.

In order that a soul receive life, it must receive faith; [p.329] in order that it may have faith, it must believe God; in order that it believe God, it must begin with renouncing the prejudices of its own wisdom on sin, on the future, on the judgment, on grace, on itself, on the world, on God, on all things . . . . Is it not written that the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, that lie even cannot receive them, and that they are foolishness unto him?<sup>10</sup> The gospel, accordingly, will shock his reason or his conscience, or both. And yet he must submit upon the sole testimony of God; and it is not until after having thus settled his relation to it, that he will recognize it as being “the wisdom of God and the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth.” He must believe, then, without having seen; that is to say, the gospel,

before he has comprehended it, ought to confound his own wisdom, revolt his natural heart, buffet his pride, and condemn his own righteousness! How then would you ever get it to be accepted by men who would, like you, wait to have every thing approved, before receiving every thing? Imbued with your principles, they will impute to man in the Scriptures every thing that shocks their natural feelings. They will think that they ought to retrench from it the *prejudices* of the apostles on the consequences of Adam's sin, on the Trinity, on the expiation, on eternal punishments, on the gehenna, on the resurrection of the body, on the doctrine of devils, on election, on the gratuitous justification of the sinner by faith, perhaps also on miracles. How shall a man, if he be unhappy enough to imitate you, ever find life, peace, and joy, by means of faith? How shall he hope against hope? How shall he believe that he is ever saved, wretched man that he

8 And he adds, Τοῦτο μοι τὸ προοίμιον εἶρηται καθολικῶς χρήσιμον εἶναι δυναμένον εἰς ὅλην τὴν γραθὴν, ἵνα προτράπωσιν οἱς θέλοντες προσέχειν τῇ ἀνάγνωσει, μηδὲν παραπέμπεσθαι ἀναξέταστον καὶ ἀνεξερευνήτον γραμμά.

9 Irenæus, Adv. Hæres, lib. ii. cap. 47.

10 1 Cor. ii. 14.

is? He will have to pass his days lost in vague, misty, uncertain doctrines! and his life, his peace, his love, his obedience must remain, until death, such as his doctrines are! We conclude, then, with this first advice: Make critical science a learned inquirer; don't make it a judge.

[p.330]

## *Section II. Let Sacred Criticism be an Historian, Not a Soothsayer.*

There is, in relation to the inspiration of the Scriptures, one other not less important precaution, which we must point out in the use that is made of science.

The task of sacred criticism is to collect facts on the Scriptures: do not suffer her to engage you in vain hypotheses; there she will do you much mischief. She ought to be an historian; make her not a prophetess. When she divines, do not listen to her; turn your back upon her; for she will dissipate your time, and more than your time. Now, the believer's

safeguard here is still the doctrine of inspiration such as we have exhibited it; I mean of the inspiration, not of the men, but of the book.

All Scripture is divinely inspired: such is the declaration of the authentic book of the Scriptures. But as for what passed in the understanding and in the conscience of the sacred writers, that is hardly ever revealed to us, and it is what we are not required to know. Much time and many words have been lost owing to men having neglected this grand principle. Scripture is inspired, whether the author knew or did not know beforehand what God was making him write. In such researches, therefore, as studying in each book of the Bible the particularities of its style, of its language, of its reasoning, and all the circumstances of its sacred writer, we can see nothing but good; they are useful, legitimate, respectful; and it is in these, certainly, there is science. Should the student proceed to endeavour, by these same characters, to fix its date, and the occasion of its being written, still we can perceive nothing but what is instructive and becoming in such an investigation. It may be well, for example, to know [p.331] that it was under Nero that Paul wrote to the Jews,<sup>11</sup> enjoining them “to be subject to the powers that be.” It may be useful to know, that Peter had been married more than twentythree years when Paul reminded the Corinthians<sup>12</sup> that he (the first of the popes, as he is called) still continued, in all his apostolic journeyings, to lead his wife about with him, and that the other apostles, and James himself (who was reputed the first of the pillars of the church<sup>13</sup>), did the same thing. In this, too, there is science. We highly value, for the sake of the church of God, all labour which enables it to comprehend better a passage, aye, were it but a single word of holy Scripture. But to proceed from that to crude hypotheses on the sacred writers, to make what they say depend on the haphazard of their presumed

<sup>11</sup> Rom. xiii. 1.

<sup>12</sup> 2 Cor. ix, 5.

<sup>13</sup> Gal. ii. 9.

circumstances, instead of considering their circumstances as prepared and willed by God for what they were to teach, to subordinate the nature, the abundance, or the conciseness of their teachings to the concurrence, more or less fortuitous, of their ignorances, or their

recollections - this is to degrade inspiration; it is to lay the foundations of infidelity; it is to forget that “the men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost (φερόμενοι), not with words which man’s wisdom teacheth, but with those which the Holy Ghost teacheth.”<sup>14</sup>

Did the evangelists, it has been asked, read each other? And of what consequence is this to me, provided they were “moved by the Spirit;” and if, after the example of the Thessalonians, I receive their book, not as the word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God?<sup>15</sup> The putting of this question, we may remark in passing, may be very innocent, but it is no longer so in the manner in which it is treated, and in the importance that is attached to it.

When people inquire whether John had read the gospels of the other three; whether Mark and Luke [p.332] had read the gospel of Matthew before writing their own (as Dr Mill<sup>16</sup> and Professor Hug<sup>17</sup> would have it, and as Dr Lardner<sup>18</sup> and Professor Michaelis<sup>19</sup> would not have it); when it is asked whether they only caused to be transcribed with discernment the most important portions of the oral tradition (as Dr Gieseler<sup>20</sup> would have it); when on this huge volumes are written, in attack or defence of these systems, as if faith and even science were really interested in them, and as if great things behoved to result from them to the Christian church; when it is affirmed that the three first evangelists had consulted some original document now lost, Greek according to some, Hebrew according to others (an idea first conceived by Le Clerc, and taken up sixty years after him by Messrs Kopp, Michaelis, Lessing, Niemeyer, Eichhorn, and others<sup>21</sup>); when people plunge still deeper into this romantic field; when they reach at last a drama so complicated as the Bishop of Landaff’s,<sup>22</sup> with his first Hebrew historical document, his second Hebrew dogmatical document, his third document, his fourth document (a translation of the first), then his documents of the second class, formed by the translation of Luke and Mark and Matthew, which brings the sources at last to the number of seven, without reckoning three more of them peculiar to St Luke and St Mark; or further still, with Mr Veysie<sup>23</sup> in England, and Dr Gieseler in Germany, we would trace up either the three first gospels, or the four gospels, to apocryphal narratives in previous circulation in the Christian churches; when, with the first of these doctors, people will have it that Mark copied them with a more literal exactness than Luke, on account,

it is said, of his igno- [p.333]

14 1 Cor. ii. 13; 2 Pet. 1. 21.

15 1 Thess. ii. 13.

16 Millii Proleg., § 108.

17 Einleitung in die Schriften des Neuen Testaments. Stuttgart 1821.

18 Vol. vi. p. 220-250.

19 Introduction, &c., vol. i. p. 112-129.

20 Historisch-kritischer Versuch, &c. Minden 1818.

21 Horne's introd. vol. ii. p. 443, edit. 1818.

22 Bishop Marsh's *Michawvlis*, vol. iii. part ii. p. 361.

23 Veysie's Examination, p. 56.

rance of Greek, while Matthew, first written in Hebrew, must, beyond doubt, have been afterwards translated into Greek by some one, who must have modified it out of Mark and Luke, and transmitted it to us at last in the state in which we possess it; when, not content with sketching these systems in a few phrases, as a task of passing curiosity, people have written thereon so many and such bulky volumes, as if the interests of the kingdom of God were involved in them, oh! we cannot avoid saying that we experience, in the view of all this science, a profound sense of grief! But after all, is this science? No! these are no longer scientific inquirers - they have forsaken facts - they prophesize the history of the past; these are the astrologers of theology. It is thought, in astronomy, that a book of observations on the smallest satellite discovered near Uranus, or on the finding of a second of parallax in the case of some star, or on a single spot measured in the moon, is a precious acquisition for science, whilst all the writings of the Count de Boulainvilliers, and the three hundred volumes on the Barbaric sphere, on the influences, the aspects, or the horoscopes of the seven planetary bodies, can be for it no better than a piece of folly, or a useless encumbrance. Thus we should set a higher value, in the pursuits of sacred criticism, on whatever might throw some surer light on the smallest passage of the Scriptures; but what end could all these crude hypotheses ever serve? In these, people desert the luminous paths of science, as well as those of faith; they weary themselves in the pursuit of empty nothings! Vain and noisy toil expended in misty conjectures formed upon the clouds! Nothing good can come down from them! Wretched pursuits, which teach men to doubt where God teaches them to believe! "Who is he," saith the Lord, "who darkens, by words without

knowledge, the counsels of the Most High?”

In fact, would that we could say that there was nothing there beyond idle fancies, and an enormous loss of time! But in these, people do much worse than [p.334] waste their precious hours: they lose their faith there; they fascinate their mind's eyes; they draw away young students from the great and first Author of the Scriptures. It is clear that these idle pursuits can proceed only from a want of faith in the inspiration of the Scriptures. Believe, for one moment, that Jesus Christ had given to his apostles (the πῶς καὶ τί, Matt. x. 19, 20) the what and the how that they were to speak; admit that the Holy Ghost made them relate the life of Jesus Christ, as he made them relate his sitting at the right hand of God, and you instantly perceive that all these hypotheses vanish into nothing. Not only do they teach you nothing, they cannot teach you any thing; but they put your believing thoughts into a wrong track; they gradually undermine the doctrine of inspiration; they indirectly weaken God's testimony, its certainty, its perfection. They turn the thoughts of your piety from their true direction; they mislead those young persons who were looking for the living waters from the wells of the Scriptures, and who are drawn away to heal themselves amid the sands, far from the springs that gush up into eternal life. What, after all, will they find there? Broken cisterns, clouds without water, and at most, perhaps fantastic streams, gleaming to them for some days in the sun, like a deceitful mirage on the deserts of human thought.

What would you say of a learned divine who should endeavour to trace the discourses and the doctrines of Jesus Christ to the instructions of Joseph the carpenter, or to the lessons of the school at Nazareth? Idle and pernicious task, you would exclaim. Well, then, the same must be said of all those conjectural systems which would, on human principles, explain the composition of the Scriptures. Idle and pernicious, we say! Admit inspiration, and all this labour vanishes like an idle dream. The Scriptures are the word of God; they are given by him, and we know that no prophecy ever came by the will of man; but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy [p.335] Ghost.<sup>24</sup> The story of Paul's nephew giving warning to his uncle in the prison of Antonia, is inspired by God, although Luke may have heard it twenty times from the mouth of the apostle before receiving it from the Holy Ghost. That story is inspired, equally with the account of the invisible angel who

was commissioned by God to strike the king of the Jews upon his throne, in the city of Cesarea. The account given us of Jacob's ring-straked and speckled sheep is from God, as well as that of the creation of the heavens and the earth. The history of the fall of Ananias and Sapphira is as divinely inspired, as is that of the fall of Satan and his angels.

Ah! no doubt the evangelists had one common document after which these holy men of God spoke; but as has been so well said by Bishop Gleig,<sup>25</sup> that document was neither more nor less than just the preaching and the life of our divine Saviour. That was their prototype.

Accordingly, when you hear it asked, from what documents Matthew could have taken his account of the birth of Jesus Christ? Luke, that of his early years? Paul, the Saviour's appearance to St James, or the Saviour's words on the blessedness of giving? whence Hosea took what he says of the tears of Jacob? and Jude, Enoch's prophecy? and Michael's contention about the body of Moses? - you may reply, that they were derived from the same source from which Moses learned the creation of the heaven and the earth.

We have shown how sound views on the inspiration of the Scriptures, will preserve youthful students from being led into the two grand errors of modern criticism, and at the same time enable them to derive from that noble science the utmost possible amount of good. The former of these errors, we have said, consists in pretending to subject the Scriptures to our judgment, after [p.336] having admitted their authenticity; the latter consists in indulging dangerous conjectures on the sacred books. But we have still to make an important reflexion on the relations of learning to the great question which occupies us.

### *Section III. Sacred Criticism is the Doorkeeper of the Temple, Not its God.*

This reflexion will present itself at once under the form of an advice and of an argument. But let not this alarm the reader. We venture on the advice only as a prelude to the argument; for

24 2 Pet. i. 21.

25 Remarks on Michaelis' Introd. to the New Testament, the 32d and following pages. Horne's Introd. ii. p. 458. Ed. 1818.

we do not forget that our task in this book is to establish the fact of the divine inspiration, not to preach it. To begin with the advice; it is as follows:-

Learning is a doorkeeper who conducts you to the temple of the Scriptures. Never forget, then, that she is not the God, and that her house is not the temple. In other terms, when you study sacred criticism, beware of keeping to that, even as regards learning. She leaves you in the street; you must enter. And now for the argument.

If you penetrate, in fact, into the sanctuary of the Scriptures, then not only will you find inscribed by the hand of God on all its walls that God fills it, and that he is every where there, but, further, you will receive the proof of it experimentally. There you will behold him every where; there you will feel him every where. In other terms, when one reads God's oracles with care, he not only meets with the frequent declaration of their entire inspiration, but, further, through unexpected strokes, and often through a single verse or the power of a single word, he receives a profound conviction of the divinity stamped upon it throughout.

As regards advice, it must not be imagined that we [p.337] have given it with the view of discrediting learned investigations; we offer it, on the contrary, in their interest, and in order to their completion. In fact, it too often happens that a prolonged course of study, devoted to the extrinsic parts of the sacred book (its history, its manuscripts, its versions, its language), by entirely absorbing the attention of the men who give themselves to it, leaves them inattentive to its more intrinsic attributes, its meaning, its object, the moral power which displays itself there, the beauties that reveal themselves there, the life that diffuses itself there. And as there exist, nevertheless, necessary relations between these essential attributes and those exterior forms, two great evils result from this pre-occupation of the mind. By this absorption the student stifles his spiritual life as a man, and compromises final salvation. This, however, is not the evil we have to do with in these pages: as a learned inquirer, he compromises his science by it, and renders himself incapable of forming a sound estimate of the very objects of his studies. His learning is wanting in coherence and consistency, and from that very

cause becomes contracted and creeping. How can a man become acquainted with, the temple, when he has seen but the stones, and knows nothing of the Shekinah? Can the types be understood, when he has not even a suspicion of their antitype? he has seen but altars, sheep, knives, utensils, blood, fire, incense, costumes, and ceremonies; he has not beheld the world's redemption, futurity, heaven, the glory of Jesus Christ! And, in this state, he has been unable so much as to comprehend the relations which these external objects have amongst themselves, because he has not comprehended their harmony with the whole.

A learned man, without faith, living in the days of Noah, who had studied the structure of the ark, would have lost his soul, no doubt; but, further, he would have remained ignorant of a great part of the very objects which he pretended to appreciate. [p.338]

Suppose that a Roman traveller, in the days of Pompey the Great, had wished to describe Jerusalem and its temple. Arriving in the city on a Sabbath day, he repairs to the holy place with his guide; he makes the tour of it; he admires its enormous stones; he measures its porticoes; he inquires about its antiquity and the names of the architects; he passes through its gigantic gates, which two hundred men daily open at sunrise and shut again at noon; there he sees arriving by thousands, in regular order, the Levites and choristers in their linen habits; and while in the interior, the sons of Aaron perform their rites; while the psalms of the prophet king resound under the sacred vaults, and thousands of choristers, accompanying them with their instruments, respond to each other in their sublime antiphonies; while the law is read, the word preached, and the souls that look for the consolation of Israel are lifted up with delight to the glories that are invisible, and filled with the deepest awe in contemplating that God “with whom there is plenteous redemption;” while aged Simeons are raising their thoughts to “that glorious salvation unceasingly waited for;” while sinners are turning to God; while more than one poor publican strikes upon his breast; while more than one poor widow, with joyous emotion, takes out her two mites for God's treasury; and while so many invisible but ardent prayers are rising towards heaven; - what may we suppose our traveller to be doing? Why, counting the pillars, admiring the pavements, measuring the courts, scrutinizing the congregation, taking drawings of the altar of incense, the candlestick, the table of shewbread, the golden censer; after

which, he walks off, mounts to the battlements of the fortress, goes down to the Xystus and to the brook Kedron, makes the circuit of the walls, counting his steps as he goes, and then returns to his quarters, there to write out his observations amid to prepare his book. No doubt, he might boast of his having seen the Hebrew nation, and their worship and temple; he might publish his jour- [p.339] ney, and find numerous readers; but, even with respect to the scientific knowledge which his book is meant to diffuse, how many errors of judgment will be found in it! and how many errors would the worshippers in the temple have to refute in it!

Here, then, is the advice we proffer, in the sole interests of your theological learning. It necessarily follows, from the necessary relations that subsist betwixt the eternal ends contemplated by God in his Word and its external forms, that, in order to judge correctly of the latter, you must first have made yourselves acquainted with the former.

If you would form a judgment of a physician, you would no doubt desire to know what country he is from, what has been his course of study, what universities he has attended, and what testimonials he can produce; but should he be the first to tell you what are your most latent disorders; should he reveal to you sensations in your system which you have hitherto vaguely felt, and the secret reality of which you recognize as soon as he has defined them to you; should he, above all, prescribe and supply the only remedy that could ever give you relief; would not such an experience tell you far more about him than his diplomas can do?

Well, then, the following is the counsel we venture to give to all such of our readers as have made any acquaintance with sacred criticism. Read the Bible, study the Bible by itself and for itself; ask it, if you like, where it has taken its degrees, and in what school its writers have studied; but come to its consultations, as a sick person eager to be cured; be as careful to make the experience of its words, as you can have been in studying its language and its history; and then, not only will you be healed (which is not the question at issue here), but you will be enlightened. “he that healed me said: Take up thy bed and walk! Whether he be a sinner I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see!”<sup>26</sup>

<sup>26</sup> John ix. 25. [p.340]

Here the author would take occasion to mention what a thirst he felt for apologetical books during his youthful studies; how Abbadie, Leslie, Huet, Turretine, Grotius, Littleton, Jennings, Ranhardt, and Chalmers formed his habitual reading; and how, while tormented with a thousand doubts, he came at last to be convinced and satisfied only by the word itself of the Scriptures. That word gives testimony to itself, not only by its assertions, but by its effects, like light, like heat, like life, like health; for it carries in its beams health, life, heat, and light. A man might prove to me, by correct calculations, that at this moment the sun ought to be above the horizon; but can I have any need of these, if my eye behold him, if I am bathed in his beams and invigorated by them?

Read the Bible, then; do not be learned by halves; let every thing have its proper place. It is the Bible that will convince you. It will tell you whether it came from God. And when you shall have heard a voice there, sometimes more powerful than the sound of mighty waters, sometimes soft and still as the sound that fell on the ear of Elijah: “The Lord, merciful and compassionate, the God who is pitiful, slow to wrath, abundant in mercy, the God of all consolation, the God who pardons so much, and more ! ! !” . . . ah, then, we venture to tell you beforehand, that the simple reading of a psalm, of a story, of a precept, of a verse, of a word in a verse, will, ere long, attest the divine inspiration of all the Scriptures to you more powerfully than could have been done by all the most solid reasonings of doctors or of books.

Then you will see, you will know by experience, that God is every where in the Scriptures; then you will not ask of them if they are inspired; for you will feel them to be quick and powerful searchers of the thoughts and desires of the heart, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing to the dividing asunder of your soul and spirit, and of your joints and marrow, causing your tears to flow from a deep and unknown source, overthrowing you with resistless [p.341] power, and raising you up again with such a tenderness, and such sympathies, as are found only in God.

All this is as yet mere advice; but we proceed to show in what respect, nevertheless, these considerations may be presented, if not as a proof, at least as a strong presumption, in favour of the inspiration of the very words of Scripture. In them, in fact, we indicate to our readers a

threefold experience, which at all times has borne the fruit of profound convictions among other Christians, and the testimony rendered by which ought, at least, to strike them as demanding the most serious consideration.

One of the strongest proofs, no doubt, of the divine authority of the Scriptures, is that majesty of theirs which fills us with respect and awe; it is the imposing unity of that book, the composition of which extends over a period of fifteen hundred years, and which has had so many authors, some of whom wrote no less than two centuries before the fabulous times of Hercules, Jason, and the Argonauts; others in the heroic days of Priam, Achilles, and Agamemnon; others in the days of Thales and Pythagoras; others in the age of Seneca, Tacitus, Plutarch, Tiberius, and Domitian; and who all, nevertheless, pursue one and the same plan, constantly advancing, as if they had all understood each other, towards one sole grand end, the history of the world's redemption by the Son of God; it is this vast harmony of all the Scriptures; this Old Testament filled with Jesus Christ, as well as the New; this universal history, which nothing stops, which tells of the revolutions of empire to the end of time, and which, when its scenes of the past have come to a close, continues them onward with those of the future, until the moment arrive when all the world's empires shall have become the possession of Jesus Christ and his saints:- at the first page, the earth created for the reception of sinless man; in the following pages, the earth cursed for the reception of man ever sinning; at the last page, a new earth for the reception of man who will never sin more! - at the first page, the tree of [p.342] life interdicted, paradise lost, sin entering into the world by the first Adam, and death by sin; at the last page, paradise found again, life again entering into the world by the second Adam, death vanquished, no more sorrow to be found, God's image restored in man, and the tree of life in the midst of the paradise of God. Assuredly there is in this majestic whole, commencing before there were men, and continued on to the end of time, a powerful and altogether heavenly unity; a convergence of long ages, universal, immense, whose grandeur captivates thought, transcends all our human conceptions, and proclaims its Author's divinity as irresistibly as, on a summer night, the view of a sky glittering with stars, and the thought of all those shining worlds which revolve night and day in the immensity of space. "Myriads of

things in perfect intimacy and symphony,” says one of the earliest fathers of the Church.<sup>27</sup> And yet, over and above the beauties presented by time Scriptures, viewed thus as a whole, we have to contemplate something not less glorious, which reveals to us also the divine action in their smallest parts, and attests to us their verbal inspiration.

Three orders of persons, or rather three orders of experiences, testify to this.

1. And first, if you consult ministers who have spent their whole lives in meditating on the Scriptures, with the view of finding daily nourishment from them for the Lord’s flocks, they will tell you that the more they have given themselves to this blessed study, and have set themselves to look more narrowly into the oracles of God, the more also has their admiration of the letter of that Word increased. Surprised, as they proceed, by unexpected beauties, they have recognised in these, even in the most minute expressions, instances of divine foresight, profound mutual bearings, spiritual grandeurs which reveal themselves there by the sole fact of a more exact translation, or of the attention of the mind being [p.343] longer directed to the detail of a single verse. They will tell you that the man of God who keeps for some time close to the eyes of his soul some text of that holy book, soon feels himself called to adopt the language of the naturalist who, with the microscope, studies a leaf from the forest, with its integuments, its nerves, its thousand pores, and its thousand vessels. He that made the forest made the leaf! he exclaims; yes, says the other, and he who made the Bible, made its verses also!

2. A second order of experiences, of which we would here cite the testimony, is that of the interpreters of the prophecies. All of them will tell you with what evidence, after one has bestowed some time on that study, it is perceived that in these miraculous pages every verse,

27 “Μυρία φίλα καὶ σύμφωνκ.” Theophilus ad Autolyc., lib. i. cap. 36. See also Justin Martyr, ad Græcos cohort., c. 8.

every word, without any exception, and even down to apparently the most indifferent particle, must have been guaranteed by God. The slightest alteration in a verb, in an adverb, or even in the simplest conjunction, might lead an interpreter into the most serious error. And it has often been remarked, that if the prophecies that are now fulfilled

were ill understood before the event, this arose, in a great measure, from the circumstance that people had not examined, with sufficient attention, all the details of their text. Of this we might adduce many examples.

3. But there is yet another order of persons who attest to us more loudly, if possible, the divine inspiration of the Scriptures, even in their smallest parts; these are Christians who have experienced their power, first in their conversion, and afterwards in the conflicts that followed. Go, and in the biographies of those who have been great in the kingdom of God, look for the moment at which they passed from death unto life; inquire, around you, about the same fact, of the Christians who in their turn have experienced this virtue of the Word of God: they will all bear one unanimous testimony. When the holy Scripture, overmastering their conscience, made them lie low at the foot of the cross, and there revealed to them the love of God, what [p.344] seized hold of them was not the Bible as a whole, it was not a chapter, it was a verse; aye, a word, which was for them like the humble and powerful knob of the electric pile, the disks of which should mount to heaven, or, as it were, the point of a sword wielded by the very hand of God. They found it quick and powerful. It was an influence from above which was concentrated in a single word, and which made it become for them, “as a fire, saith time Lord, and as a hammer that breaketh the stone.”<sup>28</sup> They perused, in the moment of their need, a psalm, or some words of the prophets, or some sentences from the epistles, or some narratives of sacred history; and as they were reading, behold, a word seized their conscience with an unknown, sweeping, irresistible force. It was no more than a single word, but that word remained upon their soul; there it spoke, there it preached, there it resounded, as if all the church bells of the city of God had been struck to call him to fasting, to the bending of the knee, to prayer, to meeting with Jesus Christ! It was but a word, but that word was from God. It was but one of apparently the meanest chords of the harp from heaven; but that chord was so stretched as to be in unison with the heart of man; it gave forth unexpected sounds, allpowerful harmonies, which stirred their inmost souls; and then they felt that those tones are miraculous, that those harmonies proceed from heaven. They knew it to be the call of Jesus Christ.

Such, then, is the voice of the Church; such has been in every age the unanimous testimony of the saints. The inspiration which the Bible

attributes to itself, they have said, we ourselves have experienced. We believe it, no doubt, because it attests it; but we believe it also because we have seen it, and because we ourselves can bear to it the testimony of a blessed experience, amid of an irresistible impulse of feeling.

One might adduce such examples by thousands. Let [p.345]

28 Jer. xxiii. 29.

us be content to name here two of the noblest minds that have ever served as guides to humanity. Let the reader call to his recollection how the two greatest lights of ancient and modern times were kindled. It was a word - a single word of the Scriptures which, just at the moment that had been prepared by God, put into their souls the light of the Holy Ghost.

Luther, while as yet a monk, went off to Rome. He lay ill a-bed at Bologna, in a foreign land, overwhelmed with the burden of his guilt, and believing himself to be at the gates of death. It was then that the 17th verse of the 1st chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, "*Justus ex fide vivet*" - "the just shall live by faith" - came like a beam from heaven, and enlightened his whole being. These simple words seized him twice with a superhuman power; first at Bologna, there to fill him with inexpressible energy and peace; after that at Rome itself, there to check and elevate him, while with an idolatrous crowd he dragged himself on both knees up Pilate's fabulous staircase. It was with these words that the Reformation of the West commenced. "Words of creative power for the Reformer and the Reformation," exclaims on this subject my precious friend Merle D'Aubigné. It was by them that God then said, "Let there be light, and there was light."<sup>29</sup> "In truth," says the Reformer himself, "I felt as if entirely born again; and these words were for me the very gate of paradise." "*Hic me prorsus renatum esse sensi, et apertis portis in ipsum paradysum intrasse.*"

Here, too, shall we not call to mind the greatest of the doctors of Christian antiquity (the admirable Augustine), when, in his garden near Milan, wretched, ill at ease, feeling, as Luther felt a tempest in his soul, as he reclined under a fig-tree, "*jactans voces miserabiles et dimittens habenas lacrymis*," groaning, and giving vent to a flood of tears, he heard from an adjoining house that youthful voice, which sang, with [p.346] a rapid repetition of the burthen of the song: "*Tolle, lege! tolle,*

*lege!*” “Take and read; take and read!” He went off to the neighbourhood of Alypius for the roll of the Epistles of Paul, which he had left there; (*adripui, aperui et legi in silentio*) - he grasped it, opened it, and read in silence the first chapter that caught his eye. And when he came to the 13th verse. of the xiii. chapter of the Epistle to the Romans, then all was decided by a word. Jesus had overcome: the grand career of the holiest of the doctors began its course. A word, but a word from God, had lighted up that mighty beacon which was to illuminate ten centuries of the church’s existence, and whose rays delight her still. After thirty-one years of revolt, of conflicts, of relapses, of wretchedness, faith, life, peace had descended into that loving soul; a new light, but an everlasting light, had risen upon it. After these words, he wanted nothing more; he shut the book, he tells us; he no longer felt doubt. “*Nec ultra volui legere, nec opus erat;*” for with the close of that sentence, a stream of light and security was poured into his soul; and all the night of his doubts had vanished. “*Statim quippe cum fine hujus sententiæ, quasi luce securitatis infuses cordi meo, omnes dubitationis tenebræ dffugerunt!*”

There is one experience more of the same kind with which we have been too deeply struck not to refer to it in these pages, although its testimony may probably be admitted by those only who are already pious men. The farther a man advances in the Christian life - the more abundant the measure he receives of God’s Spirit - the more, also, you must have observed what, in two contrary senses, on the one hand, our sacred books, and, on the other, the best

29 See Preface to the History of the Reformation.

writings of men, become for him. While you will see him ever more and more independent of the latter, because more fully aware that they have hardly any thing more to teach him, or at least, because, after having read them once, he has re- [p.347] ceived all that they have to give him, mark with admiration how very much otherwise it is for him with respect to the divine sayings, and with what a marvellous contrast he is seen to be ever more attached to the letter of the Scriptures, ever more convinced of the wisdom that is revealed there, and of the divine power put forth there, ever more eager to drink in their slightest expressions, ever more capable of deriving delicious nourishment, for

whole days and nights, from a single passage, and from a single verse! Certainly, there is in this fact, to the person who has witnessed it, something peculiarly striking. We ourselves have seen it.

Such, then, is the triple testimony which we would invoke, and by which the Church attests to us that an influence from God has been infused into the smallest parts of the sacred Word, in such wise, that “all Scripture is divinely inspired.”

We must, however, be properly understood. We have made no pretension here to impose upon some the experience of others. Proofs from feeling, are proofs to those alone who have felt. They have, no doubt, an irresistible force for men who, having experienced them, have seen the testimonies of the Word confirmed in them with unquestionable evidence; but nothing would be less logical than to offer them as demonstrations to souls who are strangers to them. If you have had these experiences, you will be more than convinced, and we should have no more to say to you. Accordingly, we have presented them only as strong historical presumptions, to dispose you in this way to receive with readier submission the Scriptural proofs already put before you. A whole multitude of well-informed and pious persons, we say, attest to you for ages past, and by a threefold experience, that in the close study of the Word of God, one is brought to recognise, on the clearest evidence, its inspiration, even in its words. Let this act, at least, as a powerful recommendation to listen with respect and candour to the testimonies in [p.348] which the Bible itself has told you what it is. At least, let this voice of the church call to you, as it were, from an adjoining house, *Take and read, take and read! adripe, aperi, lege in silentio!* Read it in silence; and you yourself will feel how far its inspiration goes. No more doubt, you will say, like Augustine; for the morning star has risen in my heart; and you will not need to read more. *Nec ultrà voles legere, nec opus erit; statim quippe cum fine unius sententiæ, quasi luce securitatis infuses cordi tuo, omnes dubitationis tenebræ diffugient!*

Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, September

2004. <http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk/>

Converted to OpenOffice and BST Greek/Hebrew by Dr. Ed Rice June 2017,

[www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology](http://www.GSBaptistChurch.com/theology)

[p.349]

## **VII. Conclusion.**

The question has been put, Is the Bible inspired, even in its language? We have affirmed that it is. In other words (for we have willingly consented to reduce our whole thesis to this second form, equivalent to the first), the question has been put, Have the men of God given us the Scriptures exempt from all error, great or small, positive or negative. We have affirmed that they have.

The Scriptures are composed of books, phrases, and words. Without starting any hypothesis as to the manner in which God has dictated them, we maintain, with the Scriptures, that this word is divine, without any exception. And were any one to ask of us how God proceeded in order to guarantee all their words, we should wait, before replying to him, until he has let us know in what manner God proceeded in order to guarantee all their ideas; and we should be reminded, of the child who said to his father, “Father, where does God get his colours when he dyes the cherries with such a beautiful red?” “My boy, I will tell you that when you have let me know how he paints all the leaves with so fine a green.”

### *Section I. Retrospect.*

Divine inspiration, we have said, is not a system; it [p.350] is a fact: and that fact, if attested by God, becomes to us a dogma. But it is the book that is inspired; it is with the book that, above all things, we have to do, and not with the writers. We might almost dispense with believing the inspiration of the thoughts, while we could not dispense with believing that of the language. If the words of the book are God’s words, of what consequence to me, after all, are the thoughts of the writer? Whatever his mental qualifications, what proceeded from his hands would always be the Bible: whereas, let the thoughts be given him, and not the words, and it is not a Bible that he gives me, it is only something more than a sermon.

Nevertheless, we have been at great pains to make our reservations.

Scripture is entirely the word of man, and Scripture is entirely the word of God. O man, we have said, it is here especially that you are called to wonder and admire! It has spoken for thee, and like thee; it presents itself to thee, wholly clothed in humanity; the Eternal Spirit (in this respect at least, and in a certain measure) has made himself man, in order to speak to thee, as the Eternal Son made himself man, in order to redeem thee. It was with this view that he chose, before all ages, men subject to the same affections with thyself.<sup>1</sup> He provided for this, and prepared their character, their circumstances, their style, their manner, their times, their way. And thus it is that the gospel is the tenderness of God, and the sympathy of God; as it is, to speak with St Paul, “the wisdom of God and the power of God.”

Let it not be imagined, then, that the stamp of the individual character of the sacred writers in the several books of the Bible, authorizes us to regard their inspiration as intermittent or incomplete. It matters little for the fact of their divine inspiration whether there be the absence or the concurrence of the sacred writer’s emotions. God may either employ or dispense with them.

[p.352] Christ. See what use they made of the Bible. What was it in their eyes? Did they not believe in its entire divine inspiration? Is it possible not to conclude from their whole conduct that, for them, the Scriptures were inspired of God, even to their most minute expressions? But there is for us a proof still more decisive than all the rest. Let us consult the example of the Son of God himself. Let us attend to what he says of the Scriptures. Let us listen to him, especially when he quotes them. Assuredly (we must not be afraid to say it) among the most ardent defenders of their verbal inspiration, there is not one to be found who has ever expressed himself with more respect for the altogether divine authority, and the perpetuity of their most minute expressions, than has been done by the man Jesus. And when a modern writer happens to quote the Bible in the way that Jesus Christ quoted it, in order to deduce some doctrine from it, you will see him forthwith ranked among the most enthusiastic partisans of our doctrine of plenary inspiration.

Nevertheless we have had objections to consider.

Some opposed to us the necessity for translations, and their unavoidable imperfection; others, the numerous various readings presented by the ancient manuscripts which had to be employed in

printing our Scriptures. We replied that those two facts could nowise affect the question. It is the primitive text that we have to do with. Were the apostles and prophets commissioned to give us a Bible entirely inspired and without the admixture of any error? - such is the question. But, at the same time, we have been called to participate in the Church's triumph at the state in which our sacred manuscripts are found, and the astonishing insignificance of the various readings. The Lord's providence has watched over this inestimable deposit.

What was farther adduced as an objection to the inspiration of the words, was the use made by the apostles, in the New Testament, of the Septuagint; but [p.353] we on the contrary, pointed to the fact that in the independent and sovereign manner in which they have made use of it, you have a fresh proof (of the presence) of the Spirit who caused them to speak.

1 James v. 17.

Finally, some have gone so far as to object to us, that, after all, there are errors in the Scriptures; and these errors they have specifically stated to us. This fact we denied. Because they have not at once understood some narrative, or some expression, some have rashly ventured to censure the Word of God! While willing to present some examples of the recklessness and erroneousness of such reproaches, we hastened at the same time to take note of this objection, for the purpose of showing its authors that they could not attack the inspiration of the language without imputing error to the thoughts of the Holy Ghost. Reckless indeed they are! At the very time that they say of the Bible, as Pilate said of Jesus Christ, "What evil hath he done?" they put it upon its defence at the bar of their tribunal! To such objectors we would say, "What then would you do to those who smite him on the cheek, who spit upon him, and, who say to him) 'Prophesy who it is that smote thee?' Surely it is not for you to place yourselves on such a judgment-seat."

The language of Scripture has been blamed for erroneous expressions, betraying, on the part of the sacred authors, an ignorance (otherwise, it is said, pardonable enough) of the constitution of the heavens, and of the phenomena of nature. But here, as elsewhere, the objections, on being viewed more closely, pass into subjects of

admiration. It is as if in making us polish the diamonds of holy Scripture by a more diligent examination, they elicited unexpected splendours, and served only to dazzle us with more brilliant reflections of its divinity. At the same time that you cannot find in the Bible any of those errors which abound in the sacred books of all Pagan nations, as well as in all the philosophical systems of antiquity, it in a thousand ways discloses in its language the knowledge of “the Ancient [p.354] of Days;” and you will, ere long, ascertain that - whether we look to the expressions which it employs, or to those which it avoids employing - that language maintained, throughout thirty centuries, a scientific and profound harmony with the eternal truth of facts. In that language it seems to say: What you knew only but as yesterday, I spoke not of to you, yet I knew it from eternity.

The words of Paul also were objected to us, in which that apostle distinguishes that which the Lord says from that which he himself says. We believe we have shown that, on the contrary, he could not have given a more convincing proof of his inspiration than is found in the boldness of such a distinction, seeing that, with an authority altogether divine, he repeals some of the laws of the Old Testament.

Still this was not all; we had to reply to other objections, presenting themselves rather under the form of systems, and which would make bold to exclude a part of God’s book from being held to be inspired.

Some have been willing to admit the inspiration of the thoughts of the Bible, and to contest that of the language only; but we reminded such, first, that there exists so necessary a dependence between the thoughts and the words, that it is impossible to conceive a complete inspiration of the former without a full inspiration of the latter.

We charged this fatal system, besides, with being no better than a purely human hypothesis, fantastically assumed, without there being any thing in Scripture to authorize it. Accordingly we said that it led inevitably to suppositions that were most disparaging to the Word of God; while, at the same time, to our mind, it removed no difficulty, seeing that, after all, it but substitutes for one inexplicable operation of God another which is no less so.

But further, we added, what purpose does this system serve, since it is incomplete, and since, by the confession of those even who maintain it, it applies to one portion only of the Scriptures?

Others, again, have been ready sometimes to concede to us the plenary inspiration of certain books, but with [p.355] the exclusion from these of the historical writings. Besides that every distinction of this kind is gratuitous, rash, opposed to the terms of the Scriptures, we were fain to show that these books are perhaps, of the whole Bible, those whose inspiration is best attested, most necessary, most evident; those which Jesus Christ quoted with most respect; those which sound men's hearts and tell the secrets of their consciences. They foretell the most important events of the future in their most minute details; they constantly announce Jesus Christ; they describe the character of God; they inculcate doctrines; they give forth laws; they make revelations. In a word, they exhibit the splendour of a divine wisdom, both in what they say, and in what they are silent about. In order to write them, more than men, more than angels, were called for.

We have been asked, finally, if we could discover any thing divine in certain passages of the Scriptures, too vulgar, it has been said, to be inspired. We believe we have shown how much wisdom, on the contrary, shines out in these passages, as soon as, instead of passing a hasty judgment on them, we would look in them for the teaching of the Holy Ghost.

In fine, we besought the reader to go directly to the Scriptures, for the purpose of devoting to the prayerful study of them that time which he might hitherto have given to judging them; and we assured him, on the testimony of the whole church, and after a threefold experience, that the divine inspiration of the minutest parts of the Holy Word will ere long reveal itself to him, if he will but study it with reverence.

But we must draw to a close.

## *Section II.*

It follows from all we have said, that there are in the Christian world but two schools, or two religions: that which puts the Bible above every thing, and that which puts something above the Bible. The former was evidently that of Jesus Christ; the latter has been that of the rationalists of all denominations and of all times.

The motto of the former is this: The whole written Word is inspired

by God, even to a single jot and tittle; the Scripture cannot be destroyed.

The motto of the second is this: There are human judges lawfully entitled to pass judgment on the Word of God.

Instead of putting the Bible above all, it is, on the contrary, either science, or reason, or human tradition, or some new inspiration, which it places above that book. Hence all rationalisms; hence all false religions.

They (profess to) correct the Word of God, or (to) complete it; they contradict it, or they interdict it; they make it be read without reverence by their pupils, or they prohibit the reading of it.

Those rationalists, for example, who, at the present day, profess Judaism, place above the Bible, if not their own reason, that at least of the 2d, 3d, 4th, 5th, and 6th centuries; that is to say, the human traditions of their Targums, the Mishna, and the Gemara of their two enormous Talmuds. That is their Alkoran: under its weight, they have smothered the law and the prophets.

Those rationalists who profess the Roman religion, will, in their turn, subject the Bible, not to their own reason, but, first, to the reason of the 7th, 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th, 12th, and 13th centuries, which they call tradition, (that is to say, the reason of Dionysius the Little, Hincmar, Radbert, Lanfranc, Damascenus, Anastasius Bibliothecarius, Burkardt, Ives of Chartres, Gratian, Isidore Mercator); and next, to that of a priest, ordinarily an Italian, whom they call Pope, and whom they declare to be *infallible in the definition of matters of faith*.<sup>2</sup> Does the Bible require the adoration of the virgin, the [p.357] service of angels, payment for pardons, the worshipping of images, auricular confession to a priest, forbidding to marry, forbidding the use of meats, praying in a foreign tongue, interdicting the Scriptures to the people,<sup>3</sup> and that there should be a sovereign pontiff? And when it speaks of a future Rome,<sup>4</sup> is it otherwise (all the first fathers of the church are agreed about this<sup>5</sup>) than by pointing to it as the seat of the Man of Sin; as the centre. of a vast apostasy; as a Babylon, drunk with the blood of the saints and the witnesses of Jesus Christ, which made all the nations to drink of the wine of the fury of her fornication; as the mother of fornications and abominations of the earth?

2 This is the doctrine of the Ultramontanists, supported both by popes (Pascal, Pius, Leo, Pelagius, Boniface, Gregory) and by councils. Bellarmin, Duval, and Arsdekin assure us that it is the common sentiment of all theologians of any note. "Haec doctrina communis est inter

omnes notæ theologos.” (Arsdekin, Theol., vol. i. p. 118, Antwerp 1682.

- 3 Prohibemus etiarn, ne libros Veteris Testamenti ant Novi laici permittantur habere, nisi forte psalterium, vel breviarium pro divinis officiis, aut horas beatæ Mariæ, aliquis ex devotione habere velit. Sed ne præmissos libros habeant in vulgari trasilatos, arctissimè inhibemus. (The 14th canon of the Council of Toulouse, under Pope Gregory IX., year 1229.) Concilia Labbæi, tom. ii. par. 1-8, Paris 1771.
- 4 2 Thess. ii. 1-12; Rev. xiii. 1-8, xviii. 1-24. St Jerome, Exhortat. to Marcella to induce her to emigrate from Rome to Bethlehem: “Legs Apocalypsim Johannis, et quid de muliere purpurata,” &c. . . . “septem montibus, et Babylonis cantetur exitu, contuere,” &c. . . . “Tertullian: Sic et Babylon apud Johannem nostrum Romanæ urbis figura est,” &c. (Adv. Judæos, Parisiis 1675.)
- 5 Chrysostom (Hom. iv. in 2d epist. ad Thessal., c. 2.) “What hindered,” says he (of his own time) “the manifestation of the man of sin, was the Roman Empire: ‘Τουτέστιν ἀρχὴ Ρωμαϊκὴ. “Ὅταν ἄρθῃ ἐκ μέσο, τότε ἐκείνος ἔξει.”’

Those rationalists that profess an impure Protestantism, and who reject the doctrines of the Reformation, will put above the Bible, if not the reason of Socinus and Priestley, or of Eichhorn and Paulus, or of Strauss and Hegel, at least their own. There is a mixture, they will tell you, in the Word of God. They sift it, they correct it; and it is with the Bible in their hand that they come to tell you: There is no divinity in Christ, no resurrection of the body, no Holy Ghost, no devil, no demons, no hell, no expiation in the death of Jesus Christ, no native corruption in man, no eternity in punishments, no miracles in facts, (what do I say even?) no reality in Jesus Christ! [p.358] Those rationalists, in fine, who profess *Mysticism* (the Illuminati, the Shakers, the Paracelsists, the Bourignonists, the Labadists, the Bœhmists) will put above the text (of the Bible) their own hallucinations, their inward word, their revelations, and the Christ who (they say) is within them. They will speak with disdain of the letter, of the literal meaning, of the gospel facts, of the man Jesus, or of the outward Christ (as they call him), of the cross of Golgotha, of preaching, of worship, of the sacraments. They are above all these carnal helps! Hence their dislike for the doctrine of God’s judiciary righteousness, of the reality of sin, of the divine wrath against evil, of grace, of election, of satisfaction, of Christ’s imputed righteousness, of the punishments to come.

Disciples of the Saviour, hearken to what he says in his Word: there it is that he speaks to us; there is our reason, there our inspiration, there our tradition. It is the lamp for our feet. “Sanctify me by thy truth, O Lord, thy word is truth!”

Let our reason, then, put forth all its energies, under the eye of

God, first, in order to recognize the Scriptures as being from him, and then to study them. Let it every day turn more closely to these divine oracles, in order to correct itself by them, not to correct them by it; there to seek for God's meaning, not to put our own in its place; to present itself before their holy utterances as a meek and teachable handmaiden, not as a noisy and conceited sybil. Let its daily prayer, amid the night that surrounds it, be that of the infant Samuel, "Speak, Lord, for thy servant heareth!" "The law of the Lord is perfect; the words of the Lord are pure words, as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times."<sup>6</sup>

And, on the other hand, let us seek the Holy Spirit; "let us have the unction of the Holy One;" let us be baptized with it. It is the Spirit alone that will lead us into the whole truth of the Scriptures; which will [p.359] by them shed the love of God abroad in our hearts, and will witness with our spirits that we are the children of God; by applying to us their promises, by giving us in these the earnest of our inheritance, and the pledges of his adoption. In vain should we bear in our hands, during eighteen hundred years, the holy Scriptures, as the Jews still do: without that Spirit we should never comprehend in them the things of the Spirit of God: "They would appear to us foolishness, because the natural man receives them not, and even cannot do so, seeing that they are spiritually discerned."<sup>7</sup> But at the same time, while we ever distinguish the Spirit from the letter, let us beware of ever separating them. Let it always be before the Word, in the Word,

6 Ps. xii. 7.

7 1 Cor. ii. 14.

and by the Word, that we seek this divine Spirit. It is by it that he acts; by it that he enlightens and affects; by it that he casts down and raises up. His constant work is to make it understood by our souls, to apply it to them, and to make them love it.

The Bible, then, is in all its parts from God.

Still, no doubt, we shall have to meet with many passages of which we shall fail to perceive either the use or the beauty; but the light of the last day will ere long bring out their now hidden radiance. And as in the case of those deep crystalline caves, into which torches have been brought, after having been long consigned to darkness, the dawning of

the day of Jesus Christ, bathing all things in a flood of light, will pierce into every part of the Scriptures, revealing every where gems unseen till then, and causing them to dazzle us with innumerable splendours. Then will the beauty, the wisdom, the proportions, the harmony of all their revelations be manifested; and the prospect will fill the elect with ravishing admiration, with ever fresh raptures, with unutterable joy.

In this respect, the history of the past ought to lead us to anticipate that of the future; and we may judge, from what has already taken place, of the flood of light [p.360] which we may look to see poured upon the Scriptures at the second coming of Jesus Christ.

Behold what beams of living light were at once diffused over all parts of the Old Testament, at the first advent of the Son of God; and from this sole fact try to form an idea of what will be the splendour of both Testaments, at his second appearance. Then will God's plan be consummated, then will our Lord and our King, "fairer than any of the sons of men," he revealed from heaven, upborne on the word of truth, meekness, and righteousness; then shall his brightness fill the hearts of the redeemed; and the awful grandeur of the work of redemption burst in all its glory on the contemplation of the children of God.

Mark how many chapters of Scripture, even as early as the age of Jeremiah, or later, during the long reign of the Maccabees, and during the whole time that the second temple lasted, from Malachi to John the Baptist; mark, we say, how many chapters of the Scripture, now radiant for us with the divinest lustre, must have then appeared vapid and meaningless to rationalistic men in the ancient synagogue. How childish, commonplace, senseless, and useless must have seemed to them so many verses and so many chapters that now nourish our faith, that fill us with wonder at the majestic unity of the Scriptures, that compel us to weep, and that have ere now led so many weary and heavy-laden souls to the feet of Jesus Christ! What would people say then of the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah? - Doubtless, with the Ethiopian of Queen Candace "How can I understand except some man should guide me? Of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or some other man?" What purpose seems likely to be served by this mysterious history of Melchizedec? Why these long details about the tabernacle, Aaron's garments, things clean and unclean, worship, and sacrifices? What meaning could there be in the words – "Neither shall ye break a

bone thereof?” What meaning could be attached to the twenty-second, sixty- [p.361] ninth, and so many other psalms:- “My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?” “They have pierced my hands and my feet.” Why (they must have thought) does David occupy himself at such length, in his psalms, with the common incidents of his adventurous life? When was it, besides, that they parted his garments among them, and cast lots on his vesture? What mean those words – “All they that see me shake the head, saying, He trusted in the Lord that he would deliver him; let him deliver him, seeing he delighted in him?” What, then, is that vinegar, and what is the meaning of the gall – “They gave me also gall for my meat, and in my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink?” And those exaggerated and inexplicable words – “hid not my face from shame and spitting; they smote me on the cheek, and the ploughers ploughed my back?” And what would the prophet mean – “Behold, a virgin shall be with child?” Who, again, is that king, lowly, and mounted on an ass:- “Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; behold, thy King cometh unto thee. He is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass?” What, then, is that sepulture – “And he made his grave with the wicked, and with the rich in his death?”

How must all these expressions, and many others of a like kind, have appeared strange, and little worthy of the Lord, to the presumptuous scribes of those remote times! What humanity, would they have said, what individuality, what occasionality (to put into the mouths of those men of ancient times the language of the present day)! They were taught, no doubt, in their academies, at that time, learned systems and long conjectural speculations on the conjunctures in which the prophets were placed when writing such details, and no more would be seen in their words than the ordinary impress of the entirely personal circumstances which had given rise to their emotions.

But what, then, was done by the true disciples of the Word of life? How did ye act, Hezekiah, Daniel, [p.362] Josiah, Nehemiah, Ezra - our brethren in the same hope and in the same faith? and ye, too, holy women, who hoped in God, and waited for the consolation of Israel? Ah! ye bowed with respect over all those depths, as the angels of light still do; and desiring to see them to the bottom, ye waited! Yes, they waited! They knew that in what was the most insignificant passage in

their eyes, there might be, as was said by one of the (so called) Church Fathers, “mountains of doctrine.” Thus it was that in “searching (as Peter has said) what the Spirit of Christ, which was in the prophets, did signify, when it testified beforehand of the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow,” they never doubted that afterwards, when time and events should have passed their hand over this sympathetic ink, there would come forth from it wondrous pages, all bearing the stamp of divinity, and all full of the gospel. The day was to come, after the first appearance of the Messiah, when the least in the kingdom of God would be greater than the greatest of the prophets; and that day has arrived. But we ourselves know, also, that the day is yet to come, after his second appearance, when the least among the redeemed shall be greater in knowledge than ever were the Augustines, the Calvins, the Jonathan Edwardses, the Pascals, and the Leightons; for then the ears of children will hear, and their eyes will see, “things which the apostles themselves desired to see and did not see, and to hear and did not hear.”

Well, then, what doctors, prophets, and saints used to do with passages that were still obscure to them, and now luminous to us, we will do with passages that are still obscure to us, but which will ere long be luminous to the heirs of life, when all the prophecies will be accomplished, and when Jesus Christ will appear in the clouds, in the last epiphany of his glorious advent.

What lustre, as soon as it has been perceived, have we not seen shed on many a passage, many a psalm, many a prophecy, many a type, many a description, [p.363] the profound beauty of which had until then passed unobserved! What a wondrous gospel has there not emanated from them! what appeals to the conscience! what a display of the love shown in redemption! Let us wait, then, for analogous revelations, but much more glorious still, on the day when our Master shall descend again from the heavens; “for in the Scriptures,” says Irenæus, “there are some difficulties which even at present we can resolve by the grace of God; but there are others which we leave to him, not only for this age but for the age which is to come, in order that God may perpetually teach, and man also perpetually learn from God the things that are God’s.”<sup>8</sup>

If the lights of grace have eclipsed those of nature, how shall the lights of glory, in their turn, eclipse those of grace? How many stars of

the first magnitude, as yet unseen by us, shall, at the approach of that great day, be kindled in the firmament of the Scriptures? and when, at last, it shall have arisen without a cloud over the ransomed world, what harmonies, what celestial tints, what new glories, what unlooked-for splendours, shall burst upon the heirs of eternal life! Then will be seen the meaning of many a prophecy, many a fact, and many a lesson, the divinity of which, as yet, reveals itself only in detached traits; but the evangelical beauties of which will shine forth from every part of them. Then will be known the entire bearing of those parables, even now so solemnizing, - of the fig tree, of the master returning from a far country, of the bridegroom and the bride, of the net drawn to the shore of eternity, of Lazarus, of the invited to the feast, of the talents, of the vine dressers, of the virgins, of the marriage feast. Then will there be known all the glory involved in such expressions as the following:- “The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.” “Thy people, O Lord, shall be willing in the day of thy power, [p.364] in the beauties of holiness from the womb of the morning: thou hast the dew of thy youth.” “He shall strike through kings in the day of his wrath.” “He shall drink of the brook in the way; therefore shall he lift up the head.”

Then, also, shall our eyes behold, in all his glory, Jesus Christ, the Saviour, the Comforter, and the Friend of the wretched, our Lord and our God! He that liveth and was dead, and is alive for evermore! Then all the science of the heavens will be summed up in him. This was ever all the science of the Holy Ghost, who cometh down from heaven; it was all the science of the Scriptures, for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.<sup>9</sup> It is even now all the life of the saints; “their life eternal is to know him!”

The celebrated traveller, who first brought to us from Constantinople the only horse-chestnut that the West had ever seen, and who planted it, they say, in the court of his mansion-house, could he have told all that he held in his hand, and all that was to come forth from it? - The

8 Irenæus, Adv. Hær. lib. ii. cap. 47: “Ἰνα ὅς Θεὸς διδάσκῃ, ἄνθρωπος διὰ παντὸς μανθάνῃ παρὰ Θεοῦ.

9 Rev. xix. 10.

infinite in the finite! forests innumerable in a humble nut, and within its insignificant shell trees in thousands, adorning with their majestic foliage and bunches of flowers our gardens and shrubberies, darkening with their shade our public squares, and the terraces and avenues of our cities; people celebrating their national festivals under their ample bowers; our children playing at their feet, and the house sparrow twittering to its mate in their branches; whilst each of those trees will itself produce, year after year, thousands of nuts similar to that from which it sprung, and all likewise bearing in them the imbedded germs of countless forests in countless generations!

Thus the Christian traveller, on passing from the church militant into his heavenly country, into the city of his God, to his Father's house, with one of the thousand passages of the Holy Bible in his hands, knows that in that he brings the infinite in the finite - a germ [p.365] from God, of the developments and the glory of which he may doubtless even now have a glimpse, but all the grandeurs of which he cannot yet tell. Possibly it may be the smallest of seeds; but he knows that there is to come forth from it a mighty tree, an eternal tree, under the branches of which the inhabitants of heaven will take shelter. As to many of these passages he can as yet, perhaps, see no more than their germ lying within a rough shell; but he knows, at the same time, that once admitted to the Jerusalem that is from above, under the bright effulgence of the Sun of Righteousness, he will see beaming in those words of wisdom, on their being brought to the light of which the Lamb is the everlasting source, splendours now latent, and still enclosed in their first envelopment. Then it is that in an ineffable melting of the heart with gratitude and felicity, he will discover agreements, harmonies, and glories, which here below he but dimly saw or waited to see with lowly reverence. Prepared in God's eternal counsels before the foundation of the world, and enclosed as germs in his Word of life, they will burst forth under that new heaven, and for that new earth wherein will dwell righteousness.

The whole written Word, therefore, is inspired by God.

“Open thou mine eyes, O Lord, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law!”

THE END.

## Chapter 5 Inspiration of ALL SCRIPTURE

After allowing Gaussen's dissertation on inspiration to do most of the work for our Bibliology, there are only a few loose ends that need to be tied.

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

2Tim 3:16-17

Several things are cleared up and nailed down in this single sentence of Scripture. Consider some things about “all Scripture.” A lawyer, Dr. Gipp, once clarified that “All means *all* and that's all *all* means.” Ergo there is not a verse, not a thought, not a concept and/or not a phrase that is left out of the *all*.

### “All Scripture” - Is Fissured by Scholars-So-Called.

Dr. Thiessen, a genius Baptist theologian, committed sacrilege and compromised his Bibliology when he said that 1Thes 5:23<sup>29</sup> was only Paul's opinion.<sup>30</sup> He was trying to defend his unbiblical Romish belief that the human is only made up of the material and the immaterial. That is what excellent philosophers had taught the Roman Catholic clergy

---

29 “And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.”

30 Henry Clarence Thiessen, *Lectures in Systematic Theology* (Eerdmans, 1949), 226 - 227, “In the second place, Paul seems to think of body, soul, and spirit as three distinct parts of man's nature (1Thes 5:23). The same thing seems to be indicated in Heb. 4:12, where the Word is said to pierce “even to the dividing of soul and spirit, of both joints and marrow. [not KJB],” In the third place, such a threefold organization of man's nature seems also to be implied in the classification of men as “Natural,” “carnal,” and “Spiritual” in 1Cor 2:14-3:4. These Scriptures seem to point to trichotomy. But is it not possible that they are merely intended to include the whole man?...”

and Dr. Thiessen would not let go of that doctrine no matter what the Bible said about body, soul, and spirit. Indeed, contending that sometimes Paul only added his opinions in his writings is a categorical denial of the “all” in “all Scripture,” a categorical denial of inerrancy and infallibility, and a syndication of his previous stance that “there is no inspired Holy Bible in existence.”<sup>31</sup> Dr. Thiessen's *Systematic Theology* is rock solid in Christology and dispensational truth, but his flawed Bibliology has cracked his foundation with dangerous compromise.

### **“All Scripture” is Copied, none is Autograph.**

Second, consider that this “all Scripture,” must include the writings of Moses, who penned the Pentateuch, collected in the five books the Hebrews called the *Torah*.<sup>32</sup> It must include Job who by all evidence previously penned the epic Hebrew poetry book bearing his name. It includes the thirteen books collected in what the Hebrews called the *Writings*.<sup>33</sup> “All Scripture” will include Isaiah, who penned his prophetic book 750 years after Moses and 750 years before Christ. Isaiah, is collected in the twenty-one books that the Hebrews called the *Prophets*.<sup>34</sup> Young Timothy, who was the recipient of the instruction penned in 2Timothy 3:16, had no access to the original manuscripts, or autographs of these Scriptures. All young Timothy could possibly have

---

31 Ibid., Thiessen, 107, “Inspiration is affirmed only of the autographs of the Scriptures, not of any of the versions, whether ancient or modern, nor of any of the Hebrew or Greek manuscripts in existence, nor of any critical texts known. All these are either known to be faulty in some particulars, or are not certainly known to be free from all error. Some one will remark, but the autographs are all lost! True, but textual critics tell us that the number of words that are still in doubt, whether in the Old Testament or in the New, is very small, and that no doctrine is affected by this situation.”

32 The Hebrew Torah containing the 5 books – Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy.

33 The Hebrew Writings containing the 13 books - 1Chronicles, 2Chronicles, Psalms, Job, Proverbs, Ruth, Song of Songs, Ecclesiastes, Lamentations, Esther, Daniel, Ezra, Nehemiah.

34 The Hebrew Prophets containing the 21 books - Joshua, Judges, 1Samuel, 2Samuel, 1Kings, 2Kings, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi.

had were copies of copies of copies; none were 1,492 years old, as were the Torah and Writings, none were 750 years old, as were the Prophets, none, other than possibly the letter he held in his hand, were autographs, and yet all were inspired, all were profitable for doctrine, all were profitable for reproof, all were profitable for correction, all were profitable for instruction in righteousness.

It defies good logic or sound reason that just in the last hundred years, *scholars*-so-called, have convinced Christians, so called, that only autographs were inspired, only autographs were infallible, and only autographs were inerrant. But evangelicals led by Dr. Chafer and Dallas Theological Seminary have accepted such a position. Dr. Thiessen promoted such a position in Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary. It is fitting that the latter dropped the Baptist title and became Dr. John MacArthur's Master's Seminary.<sup>35</sup> This brazen compromise on what inspiration, infallibility, and inerrancy is all about, has opened a flood gate of compromised Bible copyright mongers who have perverted His Words in every conceivable way, and yet they find general acceptance in Evangelical Christianity. They have even infiltrated Independent Baptist Churches with this evil compromise.

In America the vast majority of “Christendom” are using compromised evangelical approved copyrighted ecumenical bibles as

---

<sup>35</sup> The Master's College was founded as Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary on May 25, 1927 to meet the need for a fundamentalist Baptist school on the West Coast. The intention was to provide a biblical and Christ-centered education consistent with those doctrines of the historic Christian faith. Dr. William A. Matthews, pastor of Memorial Baptist Church of Los Angeles, became the founder and first president. The seminary was extended an invitation to be temporarily housed at Calvary Baptist Church in the Los Angeles area. Several more moves followed until the seminary moved onto its own property in Los Angeles in 1942. Dr. Mathews died at his home on August 18, 1943. He was succeeded by presidents C. Gordon Evanson, Floyd Burton Boice, and **Henry C. Thiessen**. In 1946, the seminary became a graduate-level school and initiated a separate undergraduate and liberal arts program. Following Dr. Thiessen's death in 1947, Dr. Herbert V. Hotchkiss and Dr. Milton E. Fish, a Harvard graduate, strengthened the school scholastically and spiritually. August 14, 1959 marked a change, as Dr. John R. Dunkin became president, succeeding Dr. Carl M. Sweazy, who returned to full-time evangelism. The new president continued the scriptural position of the school's leadership. From:

[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The\\_Master's\\_College](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Master's_College), (all bold added by author) although wikipedia is not a trusted source for citing one's research, it was the only available source found that so revealed Dr. Thiessen, as a past president of Master's College.

their source of God's truth. Can that many people be wrong? Could only a tiny remnant of KJV-only camps be holding out for the truth? Let us look at the issue candidly.

### **“All Scripture” Is Preserved by God, not by man**

Dr. Thomas Strouse (1945- ) is the Dean of the Emmanuel Baptist Theological Seminary of Newington, Connecticut. Dr. Strouse was a founding member of the Dean Burgon Society (1979), stands firmly for the Received Text and the King James Bible, and in his Guide to Bibliology he gives a powerful clarification:

The student of the Bible must recognize that the Bible's underlying texts are extremely important. ... The student of the Word should use the Masoretic Text of the Hebrew OT because it is the standardized and traditional text of the OT, and the student should use the Received Text of the Greek NT because it is superior to the Critical Text and Majority Text textually, historically, and Christologically. Not only is the text of the Bible important, but so is the translation of the Bible. Since the Masoretic and Received Texts are superior, it follows that their resultant translation, the KJV, is superior. ... THE KJV IS THE WORD OF GOD IN THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. It has no errors in it because it carefully reflects the original language texts closest to the autographs. The AV, like all translations, has 'language limitations,' but these are not errors.<sup>36</sup>

In a letter to Dr. David Cloud, in March of 1995, Dr. Strouse clarifies some of the background that allows his strong defense of the textus receptus:

I took a course on textual criticism at Maranatha under Dr. M. James Hollowood. He was a close friend to Dr. D.A. Waite and used some of his materials to defend the

---

36 Thomas M. Strouse, *“The Lord God hath spoken: A guide to Bibliology”*, Tabernacle Baptist Theological Press, 1992.

textus receptus in 1972. In 1974-78, I was at BJU and was exposed to the critical text and I found it inferior to the textus receptus. Maranatha was started in 1968 by Dr. Cedarholm who used the textus receptus until his successor, Dr. A.Q. Weniger, came in 1983. I left Maranatha in 1988, after trying to preserve the foundational heritage of MBBC in regards to the text, the local church doctrine, and fundamentalism, and failing.<sup>37</sup>

Dr. Cloud continues his survey of Dr. Strause's excellent defensive efforts by using excerpts leveled against Dr. Carson:

In 1980, Dr. Strouse published *A Critique of D.A. Carson's the "King James Version Debate" (1980) (KJVD)*. He argues that Carson's book has "a potential of causing a devastating impact upon fundamental Christianity," and he gives four reasons for this charge: "1) The King James Version Debate (KJVD) is for the most part non-technical, and it is written to the pastor and laymen. 2) The KJVD obfuscates the central issues in textual criticism and translations. 3) The subtitle of the KJVD, *A Plea for Realism*, immediately casts a shadow upon the usage of the AV and/or the TR for whatever reasons it is used. 4) The KJVD undermines the supernatural approach to textual criticism by using the oft-repeated argumentation based on the naturalistic principles of Lachmann, Westcott and Hort." Strouse then deals with each of the 14 arguments Carson uses in his attempt to overthrow the Authorized Version. The following excerpt from the introduction and conclusion of this study shows Dr. Strouse's position on this issue:

"One of the key issues in contemporary fundamental Christianity is Bibliology, the doctrine of Scripture. Included in this controversial issue certainly is the authority, inspiration and preservation of Scripture. ... Satan has cleverly fostered a barrage of translations upon the Christian

---

37 David Cloud, *Way of Life Literature*, [www.wayoflife.org/database/strouse.html](http://www.wayoflife.org/database/strouse.html) (Accessed 9/02/2017).

public to cause doubt to be cast upon both the doctrine of Scripture and subsequently all doctrines. Certainly God is not the author of this confusion concerning His Word. And because of this confusion, Christian pastors, laymen, missionaries, etc., are doubting the validity and fidelity of their long-standing translation of the Word of God, the AV. ...

“In conclusion, it is hoped that the concerned pastor or layman is not mislead by Carson’s fourteen theses. It is apparent that Carson presents only one side of the picture, and certainly his picture is not beyond refutation. In fact, his position is permeated with theologically fallacious arguments and with statements insensitive to historical data. He stresses conflation, harmonization, and transcriptional probability similar to his mentors—Westcott and Hort. CARSON’S APPROACH TO TEXTUAL CRITICISM IS NATURALISTIC, LEADING TO THE SUBJECTIVE, ECLECTIC TEXT. THE SUPERNATURAL APPROACH, WHICH CARSON IGNORES, STARTS WITH GOD’S PROMISES AND ENDS WITH GOD’S WORD. May believers realize that the AV is the best English translation available today because it is based on the best Greek text (TR), and may believers use this approved standard both in private and public worship unto the praise of His glory!” (Strouse, *A Critique of D.A. Carson’s The King James Version Debate*, pp. 1,21).<sup>38</sup>

In a meeting entitled “National Leadership Conference, Coping with the Issues of the Next Generation of Fundamentalism,” sponsored by Calvary Baptist Seminary in Lansdale, Pennsylvania, held in Mar 1996, Dr. Strouse presented a paper defending biblical preservation. It was titled “Fundamentalism and the Authorized Version,” and it dealt with four prevalent views of preservation, 1) No Preservation, 2) Partial Preservation, 3) Heavenly Preservation, and 4) Verbal Plenary Preservation. Dr. Strouse defended the latter position (a minority position at this conference), which requires accepting the Received Text

---

38 Ibid.

and the Authorized Version as the preserved Word of God. Dr. Cloud has compiled notable excerpts from Dr. Strouse's paper as follows:

“The real issue beneath the textual debate between the Received Text (TR) and the Critical Text (CT) is whether or not God, having verbally inspired His Word, has indeed cast 7% of it into the furnace of rationalism. Those who hold that the TR is essentially equal to the autographa believe themselves to be on solid footing Biblically, Theologically, Practically and Historically. ...

“Perhaps the strongest theological argument for holding to the TR as the preserved words of God is simply that the position itself arises from a strong sense of the mighty power and faithfulness of God Himself. TR adherents believe in a God Whose wisdom foresaw the need for an inspired and preserved Scripture, and Whose omnipotence guaranteed that men throughout Christian history would have one. One wonders about the theology of those who are still in the process of deciding upon the best of numerous readings in their Greek NT. ...

“In practical terms the TR adherent has enormous assurance when he preaches from any passage of Scripture in his Bible, confidently believing all of it to be the Word of God. But what must the CT adherent or MT adherent do when he preaches from a passage which has variant readings? Does he decide himself or take the editor's variant reading? It is hard to imagine such a ministry having any solid footing, especially if expository preaching is being attempted. ...

“The unsettled text of the Critical Text and the uncertain translational techniques of the modern versions should be sufficient cautions to the fundamentalist about moving away from the certainty of the standard, received and authorized Bible. ...

“The author has some concerns for fundamentalism. Why would some want to move away from the tried and reliable 400 year heritage of the TR/AV for new translations

based on uncertain textual techniques and unproven spiritual value. After all, the AV has been identified with fundamentalism for many years. James Barr makes an astute observation:

“ ‘For fundamentalist society as a whole the Authorized Version functioned as the direct and immediate expression or transcript of divine revelation. ...The virtual use of only one English version, and it one originating within very traditional early seventeenth-century Christianity, thus indirectly but very powerfully supported the alienation of the fundamentalist public from, and its opposition to, the positions, interests and methods from which all biblical criticism grew and on which it depended’ (James Barr, *Fundamentalism*, Philadelphia: The Westminster Press, 1978, pp. 210-211).

“Others make the same claim for the AV with fundamentalism. The new-evangelical Robert Gromacki admits that the AV is the Bible of fundamentalism (Robert Gromacki, *New Testament Survey*, Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1974, p. xii). Fundamentalist leader Ian K. Paisley preached a sermon in the World Congress of Fundamentalism at Bob Jones University Campus in 1983, citing the resolution of the congress on the Holy Scriptures: ‘We recognize the unique and special place of the Authorized King James Version providentially preserved by God in the English-speaking world’ (Ian R.K. Paisley, ‘The Authority of the Scriptures vs. The Confusion of Translations,’ Greenville, SC: Bob Jones University, August 1983, cassette). ...

“This author believes that Beza's 1598 Greek Edition of the New Testament is essentially equivalent to the very words of the NT autographa. This view is based on Christ's promises of Providential Preservation of Scripture, on the inextricable relationship between the doctrine of verbal, plenary inspiration and the doctrine of verbal, plenary preservation, on the practical consideration that 93% of it is without doubt the preserved text, and the remaining 7% has

been universally ‘received’ by Christians as authentic, and on the historical validation that this is the received, standard, and authorized text of multitudes of believers.

“MAY FUNDAMENTALISTS UNDERSTAND AND PROCLAIM THE GREAT BIBLIOLOGICAL TRUTHS OF INSPIRATION, INERRANCY, INFALLIBILITY AND PRESERVATION, SO THAT FUTURE BELIEVERS WILL HAVE THE SAME OPPORTUNITY AND ASSURANCE OF MICHAIAH, WHO ‘HAD HEARD OUT OF THE BOOK ALL THE WORDS OF THE LORD’ (JER. 36:11)” (Dr. Thomas M. Strouse, *Fundamentalism and the Authorized Version*, Emmanuel Baptist Theological Seminary, 296 New Britain Ave., Newington, CT 06111. 860-666-1055).<sup>39</sup>

With Dr. Strouse's reputation as a defender of these truths consider his article on preservation entitled “Charity...Rejoiceth in the Truth: A Critique of Schnaiter and Tagliapietra's Bible Preservation and the Providence of God<sup>40</sup>” In this critique Dr. Strouse captures five driving forces of this compromise on Bible inspiration and preservation. On compromise itself Dr. Strouse writes:

David Beale, in observing the inherent weakness of soft conservatives' capitulation to Neo-Liberalism in their churches in the 1930's, states, “The tolerant conservatives were quite willing to accept peaceful coexistence, though most did not realize that it would mean gradual extinction for them.” (*In Pursuit of Purity* [Greenville, SC: Unusual Publication, 1986], p. 245). Peaceful coexistence with those who deny the Biblical doctrine of verbal plenary preservation of the Words of God is certainly not what the

---

39 Ibid. [This extensive quote is taken from Dr. David Cloud, *Way of Life Literature*. The quotes within the block quote are included because therein he extensively quotes Dr. Strouse.]

40 Thomas M. Strouse, “Charity...Rejoiceth in the Truth: A Critique of Schnaiter and Tagliapietra's Bible Preservation and the Providence of God ”, [www.biblefortoday.org](http://www.biblefortoday.org) (Accessed 1/22/2008), [www.deanburgonsociety.org/Preservation/charity.htm](http://www.deanburgonsociety.org/Preservation/charity.htm) (Accessed 9/2/2017).

Apostle Paul had in mind when he warned Timothy, stating,

*If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: **from such withdraw thyself** [all bold the reviewer's] (I Tim. 6:3-5)<sup>41</sup>*

On the compromise to the doctrine of the inerrant, infallible, verbal inspiration and preservation of Scriptures Dr. Strouse delineates five subtle venues:

Exemplary of the capitulation to theological error is the recent book entitled *Bible Preservation and the Providence of God* (Philadelphia: Xlibris Corp., 2002, 349 pp.) by Bob Jones University professor Sam Schnaiter and Bob Jones University writer Ron Tagliapietra. These authors, holding to different textual views, give an informative and perhaps helpful survey of seven textual theories, including representative proponents and translations, in the field of the transmission of the Bible text. However, this volume is both revealing and alarming as it purports to discuss Bible preservation and the transmission of the text. It is revealing in that it demonstrates the apparent need that Bob Jones University has to give the final warning (“Christians espousing the KJV Only view should protect themselves against the charge of heresy by not majoring on **minor issues**,” p. 165) and the last word (“Is there not a place for charity amongst Christians...We submit this book with the hope that God will be glorified for inspiration, preservation, and providence, and that God’s people will focus on obeying His Word instead of arguing over **trivia**,” pp. 280-281) on the subject of Bible texts and translations.

It also reveals the desire for BJU to target fundamental churches that use the KJV and reassure them concerning the supposed orthodoxy of their faculty in Bibliology. This book

---

41 Ibid.

alarms by exposing several weaknesses of the Bible faculty of BJU and other Bible schools of their textual ilk. The readers of the book should be alarmed because it manifests the deficiency of the Critical Text advocates to exegete Scripture for their Bibliological arguments. Second, it reveals the obdurate attitude of the Critical Text devotees toward the TR/KJV proponents who do exegete Scripture for their position (i. e., E. Hills, D. Waite, and D. Cloud).

Third, it emphasizes the limits of human scholarship in restoring the Words of God since only three (conservative eclecticism, majority text, independent text) of the seven textual theories (the remaining four are radical eclecticism, critical eclecticism, *textus receptus*, and King James Version Only) may be “offered to the readers for mature consideration” (p. 182). Fourth, it suggests that the allies of the position of the book are moving further into the Neo-Orthodox practice of “term changing” while pleading for charity (p. 120). Fifth, the authors attribute to the Lord Jesus Christ a cavalier attitude toward the Biblical doctrine of inerrancy by alleging that “he (sic) called the extant copies **inspired** in spite of any ‘**typos**’ in them” (p. 26)<sup>42</sup>

Lest one think this pressure to compromise the doctrine of an inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired and preserved Holy Bible is something new, or an artificial KJV-Only fabrication, examine the warnings of John William Burgon (1813-1888), author of “Early Church Fathers' Witness to Antiquity of Traditional Text” and Louis Gaussen (1790-1863), author of “*Theopneustia: The Plenary Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures.*” ...

Three descriptions of men, in these late times, ... have thought themselves authorized to reject this doctrine (of inspiration).

Some of these have disowned the very *existence* of. this action of the Holy Ghost; others have denied its *universality*; others, again, its *plenitude*.

The first, like Dr Schleiermacher, Dr De Wette, and many other German divines, reject all miraculous inspiration, and are unwilling to attribute to the sacred writers any more than Cicero

---

42 Ibid.

accorded to the poets -*affiatum spiritûs divini* – “a divine action of nature, an interior power resembling the other vital forces of nature.”

The second, like Dr Michaelis, and like Theodore of Mopsuestia, while admitting the existence of a divine inspiration, would confine it to a part only of the sacred books: to the first and fourth of the four evangelists, for example; to a part of the epistles, to a part of Moses, a part of Isaiah, a part of Daniel. These portions of the Scriptures, say they, are from God, the others are from man.

The third class, in fine, like M. Twesten in Germany, and like many divines in England, extend, it is true, the notion of a divine inspiration to all parts of the Bible, but not to all equally (*nicht gleichmaessig*). Inspiration, as they understand it, might be universal indeed, but unequal; often imperfect, accompanied with, innocent errors; and carried to very different degrees, according to the nature of different passages: of which degrees they constitute themselves, more or less, the judges. ...

Our design then, in this book, in opposition to these three systems, is to prove the existence, the universality, and the plenitude of the divine inspiration of the Bible.<sup>43</sup>

When the inspiration, inerrancy, and infallibility of Holy Scripture is compromised there are fractures that cut deep into ones theology and ergo ones Christianity. The preservation of God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired words is under constant attack as Satan reaffirms his original lie... “Yea, hath God said... ?”

---

43 L. Gaussen, *Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science* (David Scott's translation, Chicago, The Bible Institute Colportage ASS'N., 1840), 26-28

## Chapter 6 A Defense of Twenty Verses Erased from the NIV & NASB<sup>44</sup>

Textual critics that follow the leading of Westcott and Hort, and delete twenty verses from the Holy Bible are wholly lacking in the Biblical doctrine of verbal, plenary, inerrant, infallible inspiration of Scripture.

### Defense of Twenty Section 1 Introduction

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. (Psalm 12:6)*

It is proven by scholars and accepted by liberals, cultists, modernists and now even by the popular evangelicals and fundamentalists, that Matt 17:21 is not supposed to be in my Bible. Should you take your pen knife and cut it out? Would you? You would have to also cut Matt 18:11; 23:14; Mark 7:16; 9:44, and 46; 11:26; 15:28. So too Luke 17:36; 23:17 and John 5:4. You would have to trash Acts 8:37; 15:34; 24:7; 28:29; Rom 16:24; and of course I John 5:7. You would also have to rip out most of Matt 5:44 and Luke 9:56 and in Col 1:14 cut out the phrase "Through His Blood." Why have leading fundamentalists and their Bible colleges, like Bob Jones University, accepted this anarchy and taken up their pen knives to cut verses out of the their Bible? What forces are in place that would cause these leading fundamentalists to follow after the liberals and cultists to cut out and discard Scripture verses that honest believers copied and held as sacred and inspired by God for the previous 1900 years? They have followed after modernists and liberals with a flawed method of textual criticism. The tracking of this audacity back to it's diabolic source is strikingly clear.

---

44 This section is the author's December 2007 written project submitted to Dr. Phil Stringer in partial fulfillment of the requirements of the course BI-300 "Inspiration of Scripture I" of Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, Florida. That written report is herein presented in its entirety.

At first glance it is often unbelievable that this list of deleted verses got here without an outcry from Christianity. The lukewarmness that would cause such apathy toward the very words of God spewed into the world through the veins of Westcott and Hort (W&H). Dr. Sam Gipp describes these two men well when he writes:

Brook Foss Westcott (1825-1903) and Fenton John Anthony Hort (1828-1892) were two non-Christian<sup>45</sup> Anglican ministers. Fully steeped in the Alexandrian philosophy that 'there is no perfect Bible', they had a vicious distaste for the King James Bible and its Antiochian Greek text, the Textus Receptus.<sup>46</sup>

W&H's misplaced loyalty to a family of corrupted texts was passed on to Nestle-Aland, who published several editions of "The Greek New Testament" The scholarly Nestle-Aland, and the textual criticism behind their work became trusted by the leading evangelicals and even some fundamentalists of Christianity. All this trust was given with little examination of what these textual critics believed about verbal inspiration. One can easily examine the the work of these textual critics and determine that their position on the Bible doctrine of verbal, plenary, inerrant, infallible, inspiration was sorely lacking and theologically dangerous. Their work has so much errant presupposition that fundamentalist should swiftly abandon their methods and their results. Their lax and unBiblical method of textual criticism is thus exposed as we examine their reasons for eliminating these 20 verses from God's Holy Word.

## **Defense of Twenty Section 2 The Bible Doctrine That Textual Critics Abandoned**

New Testament textual criticism is most simply defined as 'recovery of the text of the New Testament.' Dr. Scrivener justifies it's

45 The infidelity of Westcott and Hort is well documented in Dr. Gipp's work entitled "An Understandable History of the Bible", 1987, Bible Believer's Press, P.O. Box 1249, Pottstown, PA. 19464

46 Gipp, Dr. Samuel C. Th.D. "The Answer Book" Question Number 44, Internett <http://www.chick.com/reading/books/158/158cont.asp> (Accessed 10/16/07).

necessity with the following observation:

No one who has taken the trouble to examine any two editions of the Greek New Testament needs be told that this supposed complete resemblance in various copies of the holy books is not founded on fact. Even several impressions derived from the same standard edition, and professing to exhibit a text positively the same, differ from their archetype and from each other, in errors of the press which no amount of care or diligence has yet been able to get rid of. If we extend our research to the manuscript copies of Scripture or of its versions which abound in every great library in Christendom, we see in the very best of them variations which we must at once impute to the fault of the scribe, together with many others of a graver and more perplexing nature, regarding which we can form no probable judgment without calling to our aid the resources of critical learning. The more numerous and venerable the documents within our reach, the more extensive is the view we obtain of the variation (or VARIOUS READINGS as they are called) that prevail in manuscripts. If the number of these variations was rightly computed at thirty thousand in Mill's time, a century and a half ago, they must at present amount to at least fourfold that quantity.<sup>47</sup>

The frustration of dealing with today's textual criticism is that the battles for truth were fought so eloquently in the last two centuries that the straight and narrow path should be more fully occupied than it is today. Indeed the wide gate and the broad path following after W&H's folly has invaded every avenue of evangelical circles. Today, men mindlessly reject the Received Text (TR) and pursue textual criticism with 'older is better' blinders on. Michael W. Holms, a well degreed Professor of Biblical studies at Bethel College in Saint Paul Minnesota, nod's at Erasmus of Rotterdam's excellent analytic tools for textual

---

47 Scrivener, Frederick Henry "Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament Vol 1", Oxford, London, George Bell & Sons, Your Street Covent Garden and New York , 1894, 4th Edition edited by Rev. Edward Millar, B2

criticism, but then dismisses Erasmus' effort with this slanderous accusation: “Consequently his (Erasmus) text ended up representing in printed form **a late corrupt form of the Byzantine text-type.**”<sup>48</sup> He goes on to point out that this 'late corrupt form' called the 'Textus Receptus' ... “was the basis of all the major European Protestant translations prior to 1881, including especially the King James of 1611, and **unwarrantedly** dominated the scholarly scene for over three hundred years.”<sup>49</sup> Thus Holms, required reading at our evangelical seminaries, calls W&H's extreme bias toward corrupted Aleph and B<sup>50</sup> manuscripts, scholarly, while he calls those who would use the traditional text as having a 'superstitious reverence accorded to the TR.’<sup>51</sup>

The error that Holms, Black and Dockery are influentially passing on, that the TR is recent and corrupted while the W&H is the pure text based on older and better manuscripts, was birthed in the extreme textualism of Lachmann and Buttmann in 1842! Lachman's “first principle, at which he had hinted in a small edition eleven years before, was to discard the readings of the 'Received Text,' as being in his opinion only about two centuries old; whereas they conflicted with what he conceived to be better authority.”<sup>52</sup> On this false premise, regurgitated by Michael Holms 149 years later, Lachmann errantly discarded the 'recent' TR and would only use “the guidance of the Alexandrian (A), the Vatican (B), the Parisian ( C ), and four fragments, (P, Q, T, Z)

---

48 Black, David Alan, & Dockery, David S., “*New Testament Criticism and Interpretation*” Zibdervan Publishing Housem, 1991, 109 Textual Criticism essay by Michael Holms, (This compromising book on NT criticism was required reading at Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary, Landsdale Pa, after Dr. Jordon's control was overthrown by an influx of Bob Jones graduates.)

49 *ibid.*, 109

50 Aleph (Ⲁ) and B manuscripts are the Greek Uncial manuscripts (mss) called Sinaicus and Vaticanus discovered and purchased by Constantine Tischendorf . In 1844 in the Convent of St. Catherine, on Mount Sinai, Tischendorf found monks lighting their stove with a discarded Greek uncial manuscript now nomenclatured Ⲁ .

51 *ibid.*, 109

52 Miller, Edward, “A Guide to Textual Criticism of the New Testament”, Dean Burgon Society Press, Collingswood NJ, 1886, page20 Chapter III “History of Textual Criticism.”

besides an occasional use of the Cambridge manuscript (D):-the old Italian manuscript in Latin :- and the quotation of St. Irenaeus, St. Cyprian, Origen, Lucifer, and Hilary.”<sup>53</sup> Lachmann, however, had only one manuscript, Vatican B, that reached back to the fourth century. When Tischendorf discovered the Sinaiticus manuscript ( Ⲭ Hebrew alph) four years later it was found to corroborate the massive deviations of the Vatican B. All the excitement of having two collaborating manuscripts from the fourth century completely overthrew all the proper rules of textual criticism. From that time on the broad gate and wide path which discarded the TR as 'recent and corrupted' and blindly accepted that 'older is better' was paved and well trodden.

Little research is needed to discover the truth of the matter. There is a straight and narrow path that leads to the discovery that the TR is not recent nor corrupted. The clear and proven contention is that the Sinaiticus Ⲭ, and the Vatican B, are the corrupted text. Dean Burgon (1813-1888 AD) demonstrates over and over that the TR was not edited together in the 1500's as Lachmann, Tischendorf, Westcott and Hort continually contend. He states:

The strength of the position of the Traditional Text lies in its being logically deducible and to be deduced from all the varied evidence which the case supplies, when it has been sifted, proved, passed, weighed, compared, compounded, and contrasted with dissentient testimony. The contrast is indeed great in almost all instances upon which controversy has gathered. On one side the vast mass of authorities is assembled: on the other stands a small group. Not inconsiderable is the advantage possessed by that group, as regards numerous students who do not look beneath the surface, in the general witness in their favour borne by the two oldest MSS. of the Gospels in existence. That advantage however shrinks into nothing under the light of rigid examination. The claim for the Text in them made at the Semiarian period was rejected when Semiarianism in all its phases fell into permanent disfavour. And the argument

---

53 Ibid., 21

advanced by Dr. Hort that the Traditional Text was a new Text formed by successive recensions has been refuted upon examination of the verdict of the Fathers in the first four centuries, and of the early Syriac and Latin Versions. Besides all this, those two manuscripts have been traced to a local source in the library of Caesarea. And on the other hand ... the Traditional Text ... has been discovered in the manuscripts of papyrus which existed all over the Roman Empire, unless it was in Asia, and were to some degree in use even as late as the ninth century before and during the employment of vellum in the Caesarean school, and in localities where it was used in imitation of the mode of writing books which was brought well-nigh to perfection in that city.<sup>54</sup>

The rash assumption that an older manuscript like the Sinaicus **ℵ**, and the Vatican B are free from corruption is likewise wholly unfounded and more so illogical. How long does it take to corrupt a manuscript? Especially with the corruptions prevalent throughout the Sinaicus **ℵ**, and the Vatican B, wherein they continually drop the title 'Lord' and the position description 'Christ' from the name of the 'Lord Jesus Christ.' Dropping out the stuff you don't like is not new. The early church leaders warned about these Bible corrupters.

Eusebius cites the indignation of Dionysius, bishop in Corinth (c. AD 170), for the heretics; tampering with his personal correspondence as well as the Scriptures: “As the brethren desired me to write epistles, I wrote them, and these the apostles of the devil have illed with tares, exchanging some things, and adding others, for whom there is word reserved. It is not, therefore a matter of wonder, if some have also attempted to adulterate the sacred writings

---

54 Burgon, John William, “The Causes of the Corruption of the Traditional Text of the Holy Gospels” Burgon, John William (1813-1888), Miller, Edward (1825-1901) (Editor), Publisher: Grand Rapids, MI: Christian Classics Ethereal Library, Publication History: Cambridge: Deighton, Bell and Co. 1896, Rights: Public Domain, Date Created: 2006-05-13 (Accessed at <http://www.ccel.org> 11/07/07).

of the Lord, since they have attempted the same in other works that are not to be compared with these.<sup>55</sup>

Ireneaus, a disciple of Polycarp, said of Marcion: “he (Marcion) mutilates the Gospel which is according to Luke, removing all that is written respecting the generation of the Lord, and setting aside a great deal of the teaching of the Lord, in which the Lord is recorded as most clearly confessing that the Maker of this universe is His Father ... In like manner, too, he dismembered the epistles of Paul, removing all that is said by the apostle respecting that God who made the world, to the effect that He is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, and also, those passages from the prophetic writings which the apostle quotes, in order to teach us that they announced beforehand the coming of the Lord.”<sup>56</sup>

Anyone who takes a text from Alexandria Egypt as pure, and the text that has stood solid for 1900 years as corrupt is camping with mislead fools. Indeed the Alexandrian family of texts, that is unduly weighted as pure by W&H of old, and Nestle Aland of late, is the corrupted text and these men have called good - evil, and evil - good. This is the brazen error of modern textual criticism and there is no excuse for it's abiding with thinking, researching Christians, especially not with fundamentalists, more so still, not with Baptist's of any stripe.

Before taking up a new Bible translation that has torn out and added words to God's Words one should investigate where it's authors stand on the textual criticism found in W&H's Greek NT which is mimicked in Nestles Aland's Greek NT. For 1,979<sup>57</sup> years now Baptist

---

55 Eusebiu Pamphilus, “*The Ecclesiastical Histor of Euseius Pamphilus*”, pp160 as quoted in Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, FL, BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture I, Syllabus, 60

56 Ibid., 60

57 For demonstration that Baptist are not a denomination and have been in existence for 1,979 years since Christ's resurrection see Baptist perpetuity in Ron Mason's “The Church that Jesus Built” also J.M. Carroll's “The Trail of Blood”, John T. Christian's “A History of the Baptists Volume I”, and/or Phil Stringer's, “The Faithful Baptist Witness.”

have taken a solid position on verbal, plenary inspiration which would prevent the demise of these 20 verses. Such a position is well worded by J.B. Tidwell, a stalwart of Southern Baptists:

These writers certainly claimed that what they say is of God. To them the inspiration is not just plenary but verbal. They were not left to choose their words promiscuously. Their individuality was preserved, but the words used were given them of God. Not just the thought came from God, but every word with every inflection. Every verse and line, and even upon the tense of the verb, every number of the noun, and every little particle they regarded as coming from God and demanded in the pain of grave disaster that we should preserve it in its entirety.<sup>58</sup>

Armed with their faulty textual criticism methodology well intended scholars have reeked havoc with the Greek text. Their presumptuous error can be noted by looking at the manuscript evidences for the retention of these 20 verses, and contrasting it with the slim and presumed corrupted evidences for their removal. The unfortunate truth is that all modern English translations, and most foreign language translations (those sponsored by the Bible Societies) are based on the defective methodology, and the defective Greek contained in the Nestle Aland critical text.

### **Defense of Twenty Section 3 The Twenty Verses Textual Critics Ripped Out**

In most of these instances for these 20 verses, the whole verse has been ripped out of each version herein illustrated. For some of the verses they have been ripped up, rather than ripped out. Below is a table of how each verse reads in the Holy Bible, then in the W&H Greek NT, both the New International Version (NIV) and the American

---

58 Tidwell J.B., Chairman, Bible Department, Baylor University, (1910-1946), “Thinking Straight About the Bible, or Is the Bible the Word of God” (1935), from Southern Baptists Site <http://www.sbc.net/aboutus/heritage/tidwell.asp> (Accessed 11/01/07).

Standard Version (ASV), and then the New American Standard Version (NASV).

Table of Omissions of W&H, NIV/ASV and NASV

	Holy Bible Common Text	W&H	NIV / ASV	NASV
1	Mt 17:21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.	Mt 17:21	Mt 17:21	Mt 17:21 [But this kind does not go out except by prayer and fasting] Note “Most ancient mss. omit this verse”
2	Mt 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.	Mt 18:11	Mt 18:11	Mt 18:11 [For the Son of Man has come to save that which was lost.] Note “Most ancient mss. omit this verse”
3	Mt 23:14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows’ houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.	Mt 23:14	Mt 23:14	Mt 23:14 [Woe to you, scribes, and Pharisees, hypocrites, because you devour widows houses, even while for a pretence you make long prayers: therefore you shall receive greater condemnation.] Note “This verse not found in the earliest mss.”

	Holy Bible Common Text	W&H	NIV / ASV	NASV
4	Mr 7:16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.	Mr 7:16	Mr 7:16	Mr 7:16 (See footnote.)
5	Mr 9:44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.	Mr 9:44	Mr 9:44	Mr 9:44 (See footnote.)
6	Mr 9:46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.	Mr 9:46	Mr 9:46	Mr 9:46 (See footnote.)
7	Mr 11:26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.	Mr 11:26	Mr 11:26	Mr 11:26 (See footnote.)
8	Mr 15:28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.	Mr 15:28	Mr 15:28	Mr 15:28 (See footnote.)
9	Lu 17:36 Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.	Lu 17:36	Lu 17:36	Lu 17:36 (See footnote.) (NOTE: This whole verse also errantly omitted from online Bible copy of TR)
10	Lu 23:17 (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)	Lu 23:17	Lu 23:17	Lu 23:17 (See footnote.)
11	Joh 5:4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease	Joh 5:4	Joh 5:4	Joh 5:4 (See footnote.)

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	Holy Bible Common Text	W&H	NIV / ASV	NASV
	he had.			
12	Ac 8:37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.	Ac 8:37	Ac 8:37	Ac 8:37 (See footnote.)
13	Ac 15:34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.	Ac 15:34	Ac 15:34	Ac 15:34 (See footnote.)
14	Ac 24:7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands,	Ac 24:7	Ac 24:7	Ac 24:7 (See footnote.)
15	Ac 28:29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.	Ac 28:29	Ac 28:29	Ac 28:29 (See footnote.)
16	Ro 16:24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.	Ro 16:24	Ro 16:24	Ro 16:24 (See footnote.)

	Holy Bible Common Text	W&H Greek NT	NIV & ASV	NASV
17	1Jo 5:7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. 1Jo 5:8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.	1Jo 5:7 οτι τρεις εισιν οι μαρτυρουντες εν το ουρανο ο πατηρ ο λογος και το αγιον πνευμα και ουτοι οι τρεις εν εισιν 1Jo 5:8 και τρεις εισιν οι μαρτυρουντες εν τη γη το πνευμα και το υδωρ και το αιμα και οι τρεις εις το εν εισιν	1Jo 5:7 For there are three that testify: I Jo 5:8 The Spirit, the water and the blood; and the three are in agreement.	I Jo 5:7 And it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is the truth. I Jo 5:8 For there are three that bear witness, the Spirit and the water and the blood; and the three are in agreement.
18	Col 1:14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:	Χολ 1:14 εν ω εχομεν την απολυτρωσιν [δια του αιματος αυτου] την αφεσιν των αμαρτιων	Col 1:14 in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins:	Col 1:14 in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins.
19	Mt 5:44 But I say unto you, Love your	Μτ 5:44 εγω δε	Mt 5:44 But I tell you: Love your	Mt 5:44 But I say to you, love your

	Holy Bible Common Text	W&H Greek NT	NIV & ASV	NASV
	enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;	λεγω υμιν αγαπατε τους εχθρους υμων- <del>ευλογειτε τους</del> <del>καταρωμενους</del> <del>υμας καλως</del> <del>ποιειτε τους</del> <del>μισουντας υμας</del> και προσευχεσθε υπερ των <del>επηρεαζοντων</del> <del>υμας και</del> διωκοντων υμας	enemies and pray for those who persecute you,	enemies and pray for those who persecute you
20	Lu 9:56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.	Λυ 9:56-ο γαρ υιος του ανθρωπου ουκ ηλθεν θυγα- ανθρωπων απολεσαι αλλα σωσαι και επορευθησαν εις ετεραν κωμην	Lu 9:56 and they went to another village	Lu 9:56 and they went to another village

It is obvious in the table above that 16 of the verses have been completely eliminated by the shoddy and bias textual criticism of Westcott and Hort. Four of the verses have been butchered and gutted by their penknife. These two were scribes like Jehudi<sup>59</sup> was scribe for Jehoiakim, very quick with a penknife and fire. Eager to rip out and destroy God's Words. They are esteemed and verbally mimicked by Nestles and Aland who gave us the corrupted Greek text that is used in ALL modern English translations. It is diabolical that every Bible Society has welcomed this corrupted Greek text for every Bible translation effort that they undertake. At first glance it looks like a tremendous Satanic victory party for the corruption of God's Words. Nestle and Alan compel people of all stripes to pass through the wide

<sup>59</sup> Jer 36:23 And it came to pass, that when Jehudi had read three or four leaves, he cut it with the penknife, and cast it into the fire that was on the hearth, until all the roll was consumed in the fire that was on the hearth.

gate and traverse the broad path to holding up a gutted Bible and saying “The bibles say, ... perhaps, ... we think ... which is better interpreted.” There is, however, a narrow gate and straight path wherein a few still stand and say “Thus saith the Lord!” Don't leave that path, and if you have 'labor to enter into that gate' and use that phrase.

Nestle and Aland used an apparatus to justify their elimination and gutting of these verses from your Bible. They thereby attempt to legitimize the faulty assumptions made by Lachman and swallowed by Westcott and Hort. From an uneasy stance of trusting their manuscript work it is still clear they retained the bias toward the corrupted texts of Origin from Alexandria Egypt. The table below shows each verse's manuscript evidence for retention and deletion. This data is taken directly from The Greek New Testament Nestle-Aland 4<sup>th</sup> revised edition.<sup>60</sup> If it were to be weighed without knowledge of the corruption in the Alexandrian line of texts nor the bias against the Byzantine family of texts, it would still be obvious that they had no business nor justification for ripping God's Words from the Holy Bible. Take a moment to understand the various designations of manuscript evidences before perusing the table. The block quote of “NOTES” below is taken from Aland's “The Greek New Testament.”

NOTES on the designations of the manuscript evidences referenced:<sup>61</sup>

- 1) Papyri - The 97 fragile papyri sheets that they accessed are designated as P<sup>1,2,3,... 97</sup> Here they call upon evidence from six of these: P<sup>75</sup> containing just the gospels and dated early III century, P<sup>66</sup> containing just the gospels and dated about 200, P<sup>45</sup> containing just the Gospels and Acts and dated III century, P<sup>74</sup> containing just the Acts and General Epistles and dated VII century, P<sup>46</sup> containing just the Pauline Epistles and dated about 200 AD, P<sup>61</sup> containing just the Pauline Epistles and dated about 700 AD.

---

60 Aland, Kurt, Aland, Barbara “The Greek New Testament” Fourth Revised Edition, United Bible Society, 1966, 1968, 1975, 1983, 1993, 1994, 1998

61 Ibid. Aland, 1\*-37\*

2) Unicals - The 300 Unical manuscripts are designated by numbers 01 through 0300 with the leading zero, or with the capital letter of the old designation. The Greek capital letters of Δ (delta), Θ (theta), Ξ (chi), Σ (sigma), Ψ (phi) are also used, and the Hebrew letter א (aleph) is used to designate Unical 01, the corrupted Sinaiticus rescued from the trash can by Tischendorf in 1844. The letter B (03) designates the infamous but corrupted Vaticanus unical manuscript.

3) Minuscules - The over 2,800 minuscules manuscripts are designated 1-2818 without the leading zero. Nestle and Aland separated out two families of designated f1, f13, in these instances I included the family lists. Nestle and Aland also designated the vast majority of minuscules as category III, i.e. having a “considerable Byzantine influence.”<sup>62</sup> These they designated as “Byz” and considered them corrupted by that influence.<sup>63</sup>

4) Lectionaries – The over 2,000 lectionaries available were pared down to 70 'representative' ones by Nestle and Aland. This paring down, again showed the bias against the Byzantine influence mentioned for the minuscules.<sup>64</sup>

5) Early Versions – The early versions are important witnesses for the Greek texts and are designated as follows:

- Latin Itala, designated 'it'. The Old Latin version used and proliferated by the Waldenses.<sup>65</sup> with 63 of the over 80

---

62 Ibid. Aland, 5\*

63 They followed the unsupported reasoning of Lachmann and then W&H that there was a man made 2nd and 3rd century conspiracy to unify the Scriptures and exclude the deviants that they favored. We would contend that no such man made conspiracy is evidenced and any unification was Supernatural not man made.

64 Ibid. Aland, 20\*-21\*

65 Wilkinson, Benjamin G., “*Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*”, 1930, (Wilkinson was SDA who wrote an excellent popular history of the textual lines.) as quoted in BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture Syllabus, 81-82 “Since Italy, France, and Great Britain were once provinces of the Roman Empire, the first translations of the

- manuscripts included by Nestle and Aland.
- Latin Vulgate designated 'vg'. The Catholic revised version of Jeromes (born 340 A.D.) Latin Bible. Jeromes Vulgate was first commissioned by Pope Damasus I (366-389 A.D.) as the new official Catholic Latin translation to replace the Itala and several other Latin translations then in existence.<sup>66</sup> It is tainted with corruptions and Catholic revisions and Nestle and Aland referenced 3 of the fifth century versions.
  - Syriac designated as 'syr'. Eight versions of the Syria language versions were referenced. The s and c of the 3rd/4<sup>th</sup> cent., the p and ph of the 5<sup>th</sup> cent. the h, hmg and hgr, of the 6<sup>th</sup> cent. and the palestinian, pal, of the 6<sup>th</sup> cent.
  - Copic designated as 'cop'. Eight versions of the Copic language versions of the 3<sup>rd</sup> cent. were referenced. These are the sa, bo, pho, meg, mf, fay, ach, ach2 manuscripts.
  - Armenian designated 'arm' from the 5<sup>th</sup> cent.
  - Georgian designated 'geo' from the 5<sup>th</sup> cent. Two revisions are referenced as 1 and 2. The A and B manuscripts are cited as two lines of the latter when they differ.
  - Ethiopic designated 'eth' from about 500 A.D. There are 4 versions of the Ethiopic language translation referenced and listed as ro, pp, TH, and ms. The latter having only Matt 1-10.
  - Slavonic designated 'slav' from the 9<sup>th</sup> cent.
- 6) Greek Church Fathers (so called) – There were 116 Greek Church Leaders referenced and these are designated herein by name in alphabetical order. Parentheses, ( ) indicate a deviation

---

Bible by the early Christians in these parts were made into Latin. The early Latin translations were very dear to the hearts of those primitive churches, and as Rome did not send any missionaries toward the West before A.D. 350, the early Latin Bibles were well-established long before those churches came into conflict with Rome. Not only were such translations in existence and well-established long before the Vulgate was adopted by the Papacy, but the people for centuries refused to supplant their Old Latin Bibles with the Vulgate. God in His wisdom invested these Latin versions by His Providence with a charm that outweighed the learned artificiality of Jerome's Vulgate. For nine hundred years, we are told, the Old Latin held its own after the Vulgate appeared. The critical version of Jerome never displaced it, and only replaced it when the Latin ceased to be a living language.”

66 Stringer, Phil, Dr. “BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture I, Syllabus”, Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, FL 33844, 81

in minor detail. Superscripts indicate some statistic, language deviation or variant not in their quotation. When both present the Greek Leaders are separated from the Latin with a semicolon.

- 7) Latin Greek Fathers – There were sixty-one Latin Church Leaders referenced and these are designated herein by name in alphabetical order. Parentheses, ( ) indicate a deviation in minor detail. Superscripts indicate some statistic, language deviation or variant not in their quotation.

The table below cites Aland's "The Greek New Testament" provided textual evidence for the twenty deleted verses. It is powerful evidence for full retention of the twenty verses, and powerful indication of the prevailing bias toward the Sinaiticus, Alexandrinus and Vaticanus, manuscripts.

Table of retention evidence for twenty modernist's deleted Bible verses.

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
1	Mt 17:21	<p>C D E F H N Σ L W Δ f<sup>1</sup>(1 118 131 209 1582 ++)</p> <p>f<sup>13</sup>(13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++)</p> <p>28 157 180 205 1505 l 1074 565 597 700</p> <p>892<sup>c</sup> 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 Byz (indicating the majority of 5000 Byzantine Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F H N Σ above.)</p> <p><i>Lect (the majority of them) (L84 L514)</i> it<sup>a</sup>, aur, b, c, d, f, ff2, g1, l, n, q, r1 vg (syr<sup>p</sup>, h ) cop (meg), bopt arm eth<sup>pp</sup>, TH geo<sup>B</sup> slav Origen Asterius Basil Chrysostom; Hilary Ambrose Jerome Augustine</p>	<p>⌘* B Θ 33 579 892* / 253 it<sup>e</sup>, ff1 syr<sup>c</sup>, s, pal cop<sup>sa</sup>, bopt eth<sup>ms</sup> geo<sup>1</sup>, A</p>	<p>[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.</p>
2	Mt 18:11	<p>D E F G H N Σ L<sup>c</sup> W Δ Θ<sup>c</sup></p> <p>078<sup>vid</sup> 1<sup>c</sup> 28 180 205 565 579 597 700 892<sup>c</sup> 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 Byz (indicating the majority of 5000 Byzantine Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F H N Σ above.)</p> <p><i>Lect<sup>AD</sup></i> it<sup>(a)</sup>, aur, (b), c, d, (f), ff2, g1, (l, n), q, r1 vg syr<sup>c</sup>, P arm eth geo slav Chrysostom; Hilary Chromatius</p>	<p>⌘* B L* Θ* f<sup>13</sup>(13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++)</p> <p>1* 33 892* it<sup>e</sup>, ff1 syr s, pal cop<sup>sa</sup>, meg, bopt Origen<sup>vid</sup> Eusebian Canons; Juvencus Jerome</p>	<p>[B] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be ALMOST CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.</p>
3	Mt 23:14	<p>E F G H O Σ W Δ 0102 0107 0233 f<sup>13</sup>(13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983</p>	<p>⌘ B D L Θ f<sup>1</sup>(1 118 131 209 1582 ++)</p> <p>33 205 892* it<sup>a</sup>, aur, d, e, ff1, g1 vg syr s,</p>	<p>[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be</p>

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		1689 1709 ++) 28 157 180 565 579 597 700 892 <sup>c</sup> 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of 5000 Byzantine Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H O Σ above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them) 1547 (1673<sup>1/2</sup>) 1<sup>AD</sup> 1/2</i> <i>it</i> <sup>b, c, f, ff2, h, l, r1</sup> <i>vg</i> <i>cl</i> <i>syr</i> <sup>c, h, p, palmss</sup> ) <i>cop</i> <i>bopt</i> , <i>bomss</i> <i>eth</i> <i>slav</i> Chrysostom; Hilary	(palms) <i>cop</i> <sup>sa, meg, bopt</sup> <i>arm</i> <i>geo</i> Origen <sup>gr, lat</sup> Eusebian Canons Cyril; Jerome	CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
4	Mr 7:16	A D E F G H Σ L W Δ <sup>c</sup> Θ <i>f</i> <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) <i>f</i> <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 33 157 180 205 565 579 700 892 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of 5000 Byzantine Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H Σ above.) <i>Lect</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L</i> <sup>AD</sup> <i>L68</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L76</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L184</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L673</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L813</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>L1223</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>it</i> <sup>a, aur, b, c, d, f,</sup> <i>ff2, i, l, n, q, r1</i> <i>vg</i> <i>syr</i> <sup>s, p,</sup> <i>h, pal</i> <i>cop</i> <i>samss, bopt</i> <i>arm</i> <i>eth</i> <i>geo</i> <sup>2</sup> <i>slav</i>	⌖ B L Δ* 0274 28 1342 2427 <i>Lect</i> <sup>1/2</sup> <i>cop</i> <sup>samss, bopt</sup> <i>geo</i> <sup>1</sup>	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
5	Mr 9:44	A D E F G H N Σ Θ <i>f</i> <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 157 180 579 597 700 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292	⌖ B C L W Δ Ψ 0274 <i>f</i> <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) 28 205 565 892 2427 <i>it</i> <sup>k</sup> <i>syr</i> <i>s,</i> <i>pal</i> <i>cop</i> <sup>sa, bo, fay</sup> <i>arm</i> <i>geo</i>	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN.

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		1342 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H N Σ above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> it <sup>a</sup> , aur, b, c, d, f, ff2, i, l, q, r1 vg syr <sup>p</sup> , h (eth) slav Irenaeus <sup>lat</sup> ; Chromatius Augustine		Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
6	Mr 9:46	A D E F G H N Σ Θ f <sup>l3</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 157 180 579 597 700 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H N Σ above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> it <sup>a</sup> , aur, b, c, d, f, ff2, i, l, q, r1 vg syr <sup>p</sup> , h, pal (eth) geo slav Augustine	Ⲭ B C L W Δ Ψ 0274 f <sup>l</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) 28 205 565 892 2427 it <sup>k</sup> syr <sup>s</sup> cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo, fay arm	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
7	Mr 11:26	A C D E F G H N Σ Θ f <sup>l</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) f <sup>l3</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 33 157 180 579 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H N Σ above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> it <sup>a</sup> , aur, b, c, d, f, ff2, i, l, q, r1 vg syr <sup>p</sup> , h cop <sup>bopt</sup> eth slav Cyprian	Ⲭ B L W Δ Ψ 157 205 565 597 700 892 1342 2427 it <sup>k</sup> , l syr <sup>sl</sup> cop <sup>sa</sup> , bopt arm geo	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		Speculum		
8	Mr 15:28	E F G H Δ Θ 083 0250 f <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 33 180 205 565 579 700 892 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 Byz (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H above.) L L84 <sup>1/2</sup> L211 <sup>1/2</sup> L292 <sup>2/3</sup> L384 L524 <sup>1/2</sup> L <sup>AD</sup> it <sup>aur, c, ff2, l, n, r1</sup> vg cop <sup>bopt</sup> syr <sup>p, h, pal</sup> arm eth geo slav Diatessaron <sup>arm</sup> Origen <sup>vid</sup> Eusebius; Jerome	⌲ AB C D Ψ 157 2427 <i>Lect</i> (the majority of them) it <sup>d, k</sup> syr <sup>s</sup> cop <sup>sa, bopt</sup>	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
9	Lu 17:36	D f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 180 579 700 1006 1071 1243 <i>Lect</i> (64 of them including L68 L76 L673 L813 L1223 L <sup>AD</sup> ) it <sup>a, aur, b, c, d, e, f, ff2, i, l, q, r1</sup> vg syr <sup>c, s, p, h</sup> arm eth <sup>TH</sup> slav Ambrose	Ⲣ <sup>75</sup> ⌲ AB E G H N Q L W Δ Θ Ψ f <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) 28 33 157 205 565 597 892 1010 1241 1292 1342 1424 1505 Byz (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E G H N Q above.) L184 L292 L514 L950 L1552 vg <sup>ms</sup> cop <sup>sa, bo</sup> eth <sup>PP</sup> geo Basil; Jerome Maximus	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
10	Lu 23:17	⌲ D E F G H N W Δ Θ Ψ 083 0250 f <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 157 180 205 565 579 597 700	Ⲣ <sup>75</sup> A B L T 070 892 1241 it <sup>a</sup> vg <sup>ms</sup> cop <sup>sa, bopt</sup>	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		892 1006 1010 1071 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H N above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> it <sup>aur, b, c, d, e, f, ff2, l, q, r1</sup> vg syr <sup>c, p, s, h</sup> cop <sup>bomss</sup> arm eth geo slav Eusebian Canons; Augustine		verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
11	Joh 5:4	A C E F G H L Δ Θ Ψ 047 078 0233 f <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 180 205 565 579 597 700 892 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E F G H above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> it <sup>a, aur, b, c, e, ff2, j, r1</sup> vg <sup>cl</sup> syr <sup>h, p, pal</sup> cop <sup>bopt</sup> eth slav Didymus <sup>dab</sup> Chrysostom Cyril <sup>lem</sup> ; Tertullian Hilary Ambrose	p <sup>66, 75</sup> ⌘ A B C * D T W <sup>supp</sup> 0141 33 157 it <sup>d, f, l,</sup> q vg <sup>ww, st</sup> syr <sup>c</sup> cop <sup>sa, pbo,</sup> bopt, ach2 arm geo Amphilochius	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
12	Ac 8:37	36 307 453 610 945 1678 1739 1891 L1178 L <sup>AD</sup> it <sup>ar,</sup> c, dem, gig, i, p, pb, ro, t, w vg <sup>cl</sup> syr <sup>h</sup> cop <sup>meg</sup> arm eth <sup>TH</sup> geo slav Irenaeus; Cyprian Ambrosiaster Pacian Chromatius Augustine Speculum	p <sup>45, 74</sup> ⌘ A B C L P Ψ 33 <sup>vid</sup> 81 181 614 1175 1409 2344 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including L P above.) <i>Lect (the majority of them)</i> vg <sup>ww, st</sup> syr <sup>p</sup> cop <sup>sa, bo</sup> eth <sup>pp</sup> Chrysostom; Ambrose	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
13	Ac 15:34	C D 33 36 181 307 453 610 945 1175 1409 1678 1739 1891 2344 <i>L1178</i> it <sup>c</sup> , d, ar, gig, l, ph, ro, w <sub>vg</sub> mss, cl syr <sup>h</sup> cop <sup>sa</sup> , bomss arm eth geo slav Cassiodorus	<b>p<sup>74</sup> ✕</b> A B E Ψ 81 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including L P above.) it <sup>dem</sup> , e, p <sub>vg</sub> <sup>ww</sup> , st syr <sup>p</sup> cop <sup>bo</sup> Chysostom	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
14	Ac 24:7	E Ψ 33 36 181 307 453 610 614 945 1409 1678 1739 1891 2344 2464 <i>Byz</i> Pt (indicating part of the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence!) it <sup>ar</sup> , c, dem, e, gig, p2, pb, ro, w vg <sup>cl</sup> syr <sup>p</sup> , h arm eth slav Chrysostom mss <sup>acc</sup> , to Bede	<b>p<sup>74</sup> ✕</b> A B 81 1175 <i>Byz</i> Pt (indicating part of the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including L P above.) <i>L1178</i> it <sup>p*</sup> , s <sub>vg</sub> <sup>ww</sup> , st cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo geo	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
15	Ac 28:29	36 307 453 610 614 945 1409 1678 1891 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including L P above.) <i>Lect</i> (the majority of them) it <sup>ar</sup> , c, gig, p, ph, w vg <sup>cl</sup> syr <sup>h</sup> arm <sup>ms</sup> eth <sup>TH</sup> slav Chrysostom; Cassiodorus <sup>vid</sup>	<b>p<sup>74</sup> ✕</b> A B E Ψ 048 33 81 181 1175 1739 2344 2464 <i>L60</i> it <sup>dem</sup> , c, ro, s <sub>vg</sub> <sup>ww</sup> , st syr <sup>p</sup> cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo arm eth <sup>pp</sup> geo	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
16	Ro 16:24	D F G P Ψ 6 33 104 256 263 365 424 436 459 1175 1241 1319 1573 1852 1881 1912 2200 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including L P above.) <i>Lect</i> (about all 69 of them)	<b>p<sup>46, 61</sup> ✕</b> A B C 0150 81 1739 1962 2127 2464 it <sup>b</sup> vg <sup>ww</sup> , st cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo Origen <sup>lat</sup>	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		it <sup>ar</sup> , d, f, g, mon, o vg <sup>cl</sup> , ms syr <sup>h</sup> , p cop <sup>boms</sup> arm eth geo slav Theodoret; Pelagius Ambrosiaster		the Scriptures do not concur.
17	1John 5:7-8	61 629 88 <sup>v.r.</sup> 221 <sup>v.r.</sup> 429 <sup>v.r.</sup> 629 636 <sup>v.r.</sup> 918 2318 <i>L</i> <sup>AD</sup> vg <sup>cl</sup> arm mss it <sup>l</sup> , q vg <sup>mss</sup> (Cyprian) (Ps-Cyprian) (Priscillin) Apeculum Varimadum Ps-Vifilius Fulgentius	⌘ B 048 <sup>vid</sup> 33 81 322 333 436 945 1067 1175 1241 1243 1292 1409 1505 1611 1735 1739 1846 1881 2138 2298 2344 2464 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including K P L above) it <sup>ar</sup> vg <sup>ww</sup> , st syr p, h cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo arm <sup>mss</sup> , eth geo slav Clement <sup>lat</sup> (Origen <sup>lat</sup> ) (Cyril) Ps-Dionysius <sup>vid</sup> (John-Damascus); Rebaptism Ambrose Augustine Quodvultdeus Facundus	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Note that the assertion that this reference is 'recent' or from Erasmus' effort is completely unfounded and false.
18	Col 1:14	424 1912 2200 2464 <i>L147</i> <i>L590 L592 L593 L1159</i> vg <sup>cl</sup> syr <sup>h</sup> arm slav Gregory- Nyssa; Victoinus-Rome Sassiodrus	⌘ A B C D <sup>l</sup> F G Ψ 075 0150 6 33 81 104 256 263 365 436 459 1175 1241 1319 1573 1739 1852 1881 1962 2127 <i>Byz</i> (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including K L P above.) <i>Lect(64 of them)</i> it <sup>ar</sup> , b, d, f, g, mon, o vg <sup>ww</sup> , st syr p, pal cop <sup>sa</sup> , bo eth geo Athanasius Didymus <sup>dub</sup> Chrysostom Theodore <sup>lat</sup> Cyril; Ambrosiaster Ambrose Pelagius Augustine	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
19	Matt 5:44a	D E L W Δ Θ Σ f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788	⌘ B f <sup>l</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) 205 it <sup>k</sup> syr <sup>c, s</sup> cop <sup>sa</sup> ,	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 33 157 180 565 579 597 700 892 1006 1010 1071 1241 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 Byz (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E Σ above.) <i>Lect</i> (the majority of them) L866 L1016 it <sup>a</sup> , aur, b, c, d, f, ff1, g1, h, l <sup>vg arm<sup>mss</sup> syr<sup>h</sup>, p,</sup> pal <sup>cop</sup> bopt <sup>geo</sup> 1, 2 slav eth <sup>pp</sup> , TH slav Athenagoras Clement Eusebius Arsenius Chrysostom Theodoret; Ambrose Chromatius Jerome Augustine Tertullian Lucifer Speculum	bopt Theophilus Irenaeus <sup>lat</sup> , vid Origen Adamantius; yprian Faustus-Milevis	deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.
19 b	Matt 5:44b	D E L W Δ Θ Σ f <sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++) 28 33 180 565 579 597 700 892 1006 1010 1071 12 41 1243 1292 1342 1424 1505 Byz (indicating the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E Σ above.) <i>Lect</i> (the majority of them) l76 L241 L253 l524 L547 L563 L858 L1223 it <sup>a</sup> , aur, b, c, d, f, ff1, g1, h, l <sup>vg arm<sup>mss</sup></sup> syr <sup>h</sup> , p, pal <sup>cop</sup> bopt <sup>geo</sup> 1, 2 eth <sup>pp</sup> , TH slav Theophilus Clement Origen <sup>1/6</sup> Eusebius Basil (Gregory-Nyssa) (Nilus) Arsenius Chrysostom (Ambrose) (Chromatius)	✕ B f <sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++) 205 it <sup>k</sup> syr <sup>c</sup> , s <sup>cop</sup> sa, bopt <sup>cop</sup> tsa, bopt <sup>eth</sup> ms, pp (Athenagoras) Origen <sup>5/6</sup> (Adamantius); Tertullian Cyprian Lucier Jerome <sup>2/3</sup> Faustus-Milevis Augustine (Speculum)	[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.

# Chapter 6 – The Defense of Twenty Verses Erased

	<u>Ref</u>	<u>Retention Evidence</u>	<u>Deletion Evidence</u>	<u>Agreement</u>
		Jerome <sup>1/3</sup>		
20	Luke 9:56	<p>D K Θ f<sup>1</sup> (1 118 131 209 1582 ++)</p> <p>f<sup>13</sup> (13 69 124 174 230 346 543 579 788 826 828 983 1689 1709 ++)</p> <p>180 205 597 700 1006 1243 1292</p> <p>1505 Byz<sup>Pt</sup> (indicating part of the majority of 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E Σ above.)</p> <p>Lect<sup>pt</sup>, AD, 2/3 it<sup>a</sup>, aur, b, c, d, e, f, q, r1<sup>cl</sup>, ww<sup>vg</sup></p> <p>syr<sup>c</sup>, h, p, pal<sup>sa</sup>, bopt<sup>sa</sup></p> <p>geo eth<sup>TH</sup> slav<sup>mss</sup></p> <p>Ambrosiaster Ambrose (Epiphanius) Chrysostom</p> <p>Theodoret<sup>vid</sup></p>	<p>p<sup>45, 75</sup> Ⲡ A B C E G H L W</p> <p>Δ Ξ Ψ 28 33 157 565 892 1010 1071 1241 1342 1424</p> <p>Byz<sup>Pt</sup> (indicating part of the majority of the 2818 Greek manuscript evidence! Including E G H above.)</p> <p>Lect<sup>pt</sup>, AD, 1/3 it<sup>1</sup> vg<sup>st</sup> syr<sup>s</sup></p> <p>cop<sup>sa</sup>, bopt<sup>sa</sup> eth<sup>pp</sup> slav<sup>mss</sup></p>	<p>[A] Nestle Aland team concurs the deletion to be CERTAIN. Bible believers holding to verbal inspiration of the Scriptures do not concur.</p>

There are 1,486 references for the retention of these 20 verses and 687 references for their deletion. This overwhelming numerical imbalance is evident despite the Nestle and Aland twisted bias about the 'considerable Byzantine influence' covered in the notes above. Easily over twice as many manuscripts attesting that these 20 verses should be completely in our Holy Bible, although they are not in Westcott and Hort's bible, not in Nestle and Aland's bible, and, consequently not in the NIV, ASV, NASV nor other modernist, cultist and Catholic bibles. Shame on them for believing these 'textual critics' with corrupted bibles. Shame on evangelicals for following after their misleading. And shame shame on the fundamentalists who left the straight and narrow path for this broad path of diabolical deception.

*Behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me,... For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if*

*any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.*

Revelation 22:12, 18-21

*Behold, the Lord GOD will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.*

Isaiah 40:10

*Behold, the LORD hath proclaimed unto the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.*

Isaiah 62:11

Note: The Defense of Twenty Bibliography is incorporated into the Bibliology Bibliography.

## Chapter 7 Defense of First John Five Seven

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Psalm 12:6*

It is proven by scholars and accepted by liberals and cultists, modernists and evangelicals that I John 5:7 is not supposed to be in my Bible. Should I take my pen knife and cut it out? Would I? Would you?

This verse is a litmus test to tell if a Bible version has been tampered with by the modern hyper-deletion Bible critic. They are modern and modernists because they have only recently secured the lucrative copyrights for translating bibles that do not follow the traditional texts, and they cannot secure such a copyright if they do follow the traditional text. They are hyper-deletionists because they have also ripped out many more Scripture verses.

Indeed they claim that unidentified '(so called) Church Fathers' or sloppy scribes added verses to the Bible and thereby they must rip out Matt 17:21, 18:11; 23:14; Mark 7:16; 9:44, and 46; 11:26; 15:28; Luke 17:36; 23:17; John 5:4; Acts 8:37; 15:34; 24:7; 28:29; Rom 16:24; and of course 1John 5:7; they also rip out most of Matt 5:44 and Luke 9:56 and in Col 1:14 cut out the phrase "Through His Blood". Their trend to rip out verses because they were not in the Alexandrian manuscripts tampered with by the philosopher Origen Adamantius of Alexandria Egypt (185—254 AD) makes the term hyper-deletionists applicable.

They are Bible critics because they defy the infallible, inerrant, plenary, verbal inspiration of Scripture so aptly defined and defended by Gausson's tremendous work "*Theopneustia*" of 1840 which thoroughly documented such inspiration, and they instead follow along after Brook Foss Westcott (1825-1903) and Fenton John Anthony Hort (1828-1892) and their hay day of Bible criticism, and hyper-deletionism.

### I John 5:7 Is In My Holy Bible

If 1 John 5:7 is not in the Holy Bible then the textual critic of our day may have something to stand on as they rip-tear verses out of the Holy Bible. But it is there. If there is no Greek manuscript containing 1

John 5:7, as the critics and professors are teaching their young students, then there is cause to examine it for removal. But there are many Greek manuscripts with 1 John 5:7 fully intact.

The ignorance of many about the existence of this verse in the Greek Received Text and its consequential omission from the critical Greek texts stems from Erasmus' first edition of 1516. The Modernist Professors love to quote Erasmus' 1<sup>st</sup> response to Edward Lee's charge that *"he had omitted the testimony of the heavenly Witnesses in 1 John V.7."* Erasmus' replied that *"he could not find the passage in his Greek manuscripts, and that even some Latin copies did not give it."* Of course the professors and critics are still quite guilty of lying as they swelled this initial response into a claim that the passage appears in no Greek text. They make this false claim ignoring that in 1522 for Erasmus' third edition the Codex Montfortianus, now at Dublin, was brought forward, and in consequence the passage was determined to be part of the Received Text and was printed. However, none of the corrections made to the Erasmus' 1<sup>st</sup> edition of the Received Text will move the modernist critic away from their lie.

Erasmus' first edition was made in great haste when he heard from Froben, the printer of Basle. Erasmus used what copies he could procure, for this first addition, but in a few cases where he either found or supposed his minimal on hand Greek authorities to be deficient, he translated from the Vulgate into Greek. Modernist critics love to recall this dilemma and site it as their justification for leaving out the "heavenly Witnesses" and to rumor that the TR is based on the Latin Vulgate and not on Greek manuscripts. The infant assembly of the Greek Received Text includes remarkable employment of multiple Greek manuscripts and remarkable believing (born again, converted, regenerated believing) Greek scholars, both are unparalleled in modern times. This article shall demonstrate the completeness of their work as they included the passage *"For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one."*

If this passage was to be in the Holy Bible it would look and read in English as does in the King James Bible in the table below. If the 'heavenly Witness' passage was an insertion that did not stream from the Apostles pen dipped in the ink of inspiration, the ASV English rendition

in the table below would be adequate. However, before striking words from the divinely inspired and divinely preserved Holy Bible, even the novice at textual criticism would want to explore which Church Leader had the audacity to add words to the Apostle John's writing. One would want some kind of evidence about where the addition came from before one would strike text from the Apostle John's First Epistle. The modernist critic with no doctrine of verbal plenary inspiration cuts out verses first, then asks no questions later. In fact they get hostile and indignant when a Bible Believer does ask the embarrassing questions.

Dr. Gaussen, in *Theopneustia* (1840) (p.192) argues that retaining First John five verse seven is most justified by 1) the testimony of the manuscripts (more than a hundred and forty against three), 2) the universal silence of the Greek fathers (via historical testimonies)<sup>67</sup>, and 3) the grammatical considerations. On the latter of these three he confines himself to two remarks by Bishop Middleton:

1. Why is the word *three*, *the three*, in the masculine in the Greek (τρῆς οἱ μαρτυροῦντες, καὶ οἱς τρῆς), while the words spirit, water, and blood, to which it relates, are all neuter (for it would have been necessary to say τρία τὰ μαρτυροῦντα)? This irregularity, which is fully justified by what is called in grammar the principle of attraction, if the passage remains entire, becomes inexplicable when you would deprive it of the contested words.<sup>68</sup>

For those without the Greek background Grammar's *Law of Attraction* can be understood in English with our verb-subject agreement, i.e. Bob does not “throws” the ball to Jill, but the whole team “throws” the ball to Jill just fine. In English we have rules about singular subjects and plural verbs. Well in Greek subjects are masculine,

---

<sup>67</sup> Such as: “That of several Latin fathers of the 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th centuries; that of the Latin Vulgate, more ancient than the most ancient manuscripts of our libraries (supposed to date from the 5th or the close of the 4th century): and, above all, that of the Confession of Faith publicly presented in 484, by four hundred bishops of Africa, to the king of the Vandals, who, as an Arian, persecuted them, and called on them to give an account of their doctrines. - (See the Dissertations of Mill, Griesbach, Bengel, Wetstein, and Lee.)”

<sup>68</sup> Gaussen, *Theopneustia*, 192.

feminine, or neuter and articles, adjectives, and nouns must match in gender. So in English, look what the Egyptian editors ripped out of their Bible:

For there are three that bear record [struck from the  
Egyptian Greek Texts]  
~~in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy  
Ghost: and these three are one. And there are three  
that bear witness in earth,~~ [restart of the Egyptian Greek texts]  
the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and  
these three agree in one.

What Middleton is saying is that the word “*three*” in the portion of verse seven that the Egyptians tried to retain, does not gender-match the nouns that they dragged in from the closing portion of verse eight that they tried to retain. A proper grammar and gender-match only happens when the twenty-five Greek words (twenty-four KJB English words) that they deleted are properly reinserted into the gaping hole that they made. The lesson seems simple enough: Don't trust Egyptian editors working on a Holy Bible written by Jews. Unfortunately not a single modernized copyright English bible translator learned that simple lesson.

Remember Dr. Guassen and Bishop Middleton are writing this out when Westcott and Hort were just teenagers. Dr. Gaussen continues with Bishop Middleton's grammar defense:

2. Wherefore, above all, this word, *that one* (τὸ ἓν, the [p.193] ONE), if some certain ONE have not been spoken of in the preceding words? That expressions (τὸ ἓν), in first case, would be without example. ...<sup>69</sup>

Again, what Middleton is saying is that in good Greek grammar verse eight closes with “and these three agree in *that one*,” and that it would not close with that definite article unless previously the “these three are one” had been properly included in the last sentence. It is noted

---

69 Ibid., 192-193.

here that in the 1830s both Dr. Gaussen and Bishop Middleton were warring against infidels who defied the doctrine of inspiration and wanted to rip words out of the Holy Bible. The infidels efforts met success in the last half of that century when Westcott and Hort successfully stripped 1John 5:7 and twenty other verses from their Greek manuscript. That corrupted Greek manuscript was then used in every modernist, copyright English translation. Those have invaded all of “Christendom.” Shame on us.

Dr. Gaussen continues to highlight Middleton's efforts as follows:

To this Bishop Middleton devotes eighteen pages in his beautiful work on the Doctrine of the Greek Article (in 8vo, Cambridge, 1828, pp. 606 to 624). “I cannot conceive,” says he in conclusion, “how this word, *that* ONE (το ἓν) can be reconciled with the taking away of the preceding words. I am aware that the greater number of the learned are favourable to these retrenchments but, taking all things into view, I am led to suspect that, notwithstanding the immense labours bestowed on this celebrated passage, something more yet remains to be done in order to clear away the mystery in which it is still involved.” The learned Bengel, for still further reasons, said that the two verses of this passage remain united *adamantinā adhaerentiā*.

Scholz has, like Griesbach, taken away the three heavenly witnesses.<sup>70</sup>

How is it that Christians have rolled over and turned in their King James Bibles to accept these corrupted versions as their source of truth, faith and practice? It is nothing less than diabolical.

Below are the verses in question as they appear in the King James Bible, based on the Received Text, and the American Standard Version based on the Recklessly Critical Greek Text.

---

70 Ibid., 193.

Ref	King James Verse	1901 American Standard Version
1 John 5:6	6 ¶ This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.	6 ¶ This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not with the water only, but with the water and with the blood. 7 And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is the truth.
1 John 5:7	7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.	<del>7/- For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.</del>
1 John 5:8	8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.	8 For there are three who bear witness, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and the three agree in one.
1 John 5:9	9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son.	9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for the witness of God is this, that he hath borne witness concerning his Son.

You do not have to know Greek to see what was done to this passage by the textual critics who are quick to cut and slow to research, quick to mimic Bishop Westcott and Professor Hort, and slow to think independently, quick to attack and deny the eclectic work on the Received Text of Orthodox Christianity and slow to oppose the intellectual but unregenerate majority of critics.

Table of TR, Nestle-Aland, and W&H Greek Texts

Ref	Greek Received Text 1550 Stephenus 1894 Scrivener	Nestle-Aland Critical Greek Text 4 <sup>th</sup> Edition 1998	Westcott and Hort 1881 Critical Greek Text
1 John 5:6	6 ουτό εστιν ο ελψων δι υδατό και αιματό ιησου ο χριστό ουκ εν τω υδατι μονον αλλ εν τω υδατι και τω αιματι και το πνευμα εστιν το μαρτυρουν οτι το πνευμα εστιν η αληθεια	6 ουτό εστιν ο ελψων δι υδατό και αιματό ιησου <del>—ο</del> χριστό ουκ εν τω υδατι μονον αλλ εν τω υδατι και τω αιματι και το πνευμα εστιν το μαρτυρουν οτι το πνευμα εστιν η αληθεια	6 ουτό εστιν ο ελψων δι υδατό και αιματό ιησου χριστό ουκ εν τω υδατι μονον αλλ εν τω υδατι και <b>εν</b> τω αιματι και το πνευμα εστιν το μαρτυρουν οτι το πνευμα εστιν η αληθεια
1 John 5:7	7 οτι τρεί εισιν οι μαρτυρουντέ εν τω ουρανω ο πατηρ ο λογό και το αγιον πνευμα και ουτοι οι τρεί εν εισιν	7 οτι τρεί εισιν οι μαρτυρουντέ <del>εν τω</del> <del>ουρανω ο πατηρ ο</del> <del>λογό και το αγιον</del> <del>πνευμα και ουτοι οτ</del> <del>τρεί εν εισιν</del>	7 οτι τρεί εισιν οι μαρτυρουντέ
1 John 5:8	8 και τρεί εισιν οι μαρτυρουντέ εν τη γη το πνευμα και το υδωρ και το αιμα και οι τρεί εί το εν εισιν	8 <del>και τρεί εισιν οι</del> <del>μαρτυρουντέ εν τη γη</del> το πνευμα και το υδωρ και το αιμα και οι τρεί εί το εν εισιν	8 το πνευμα και το υδωρ και το αιμα και οι τρεί εί το εν εισιν
1 John 5:9	9 ει την μαρτυριαν των ανθρωπων λαμβανομεν η μαρτυρια του ψευ μειζων εστιν οτι αυτη εστιν η μαρτυρια του ψευ ην μεμαρτυρηκεν περι του υιου αυτου	9 ει την μαρτυριαν των ανθρωπων λαμβανομεν η μαρτυρια του ψευ μειζων εστιν οτι αυτη εστιν η μαρτυρια του ψευ <del>ην</del> <b>οτι</b> μεμαρτυρηκεν περι του υιου αυτου	9 ει την μαρτυριαν των ανθρωπων λαμβανομεν η μαρτυρια του ψευ μειζων εστιν οτι αυτη εστιν η μαρτυρια του ψευ οτι μεμαρτυρηκεν περι του υιου αυτου

## The Evidence That The Apostle John Penned The 'Heavenly Witness'

What manuscript evidences show that 1 John 5:7, the 'heavenly Witness', should be included in the Holy Bible?

The Received Text is given good witness to include the 'heavenly Witness' by these Greek manuscripts:

1	221v.r.	Greek Unical of Epistles of IV century located in Vienna as a variant reading (i.e. minor word order differences)
2	2318	Greek Minuscles Manuscript
3	61	Greek Minuscles Manuscript
4	088v.r.	Greek Unical of Epistles of V/VI century located in St. Petersburg as a variant reading
5	429v.r.	Greek Minuscles Manuscript as a variant reading
6	629	Greek Minuscles Manuscript
7	636v.r.	Greek Minuscles Manuscript as a variant reading
8	918	Greek Minuscles Manuscript
9	I <sup>AD</sup>	Lectionary text of the Greek Church(Apostoliki Diakonia Edition, Athens

The Received Text is given good witness to include the 'heavenly Witness' by these Latin versions. The early Latin versions are important witnesses for the Greek test of the New Testament because they derive from a relatively early stage of the tradition. They witness to the early form of the text as it was used at the time and place of their origin and development. These Latin manuscripts testify to the form and presence of the 'heavenly Witness' passage in the earliest Greek manuscripts. Clearly the translated passage listed below indicate that the 'heavenly Witness' passage was penned by the Apostle John and is in the Holy Bible. It is found in:

1	vg <sup>cl</sup>	Clementine Vulgate (exact rendering)
2	vg <sup>mss</sup>	Majority of Vulgate mss of IV/V century as a variant latin reading
3	it <sup>l</sup>	Itala Latin mss in Leon of VII/VIII century as a variant Latin reading
4	it <sup>q</sup>	Itala Latin mss in Munich of VI/VII century as a variant Latin reading

The Received Text is given good witness to include the 'heavenly Witness' by these other early versions. The early versions are important witnesses for the Greek test of the New Testament because they derive from a relatively early stage of the tradition. They witness to the early form of the text as it was used at the time and place of their origin and development. These testify to the form and presence of the 'heavenly Witness' passage in the earliest Greek manuscripts. Clearly the exactly translated passage listed below indicate that the 'heavenly

Witness' passage was penned by the Apostle John and is in the Holy Bible. It is found in:

1	arm <sup>mss</sup>	Armenian manuscripts from the V century
---	--------------------	---

The Received Text is given good witness to include the 'heavenly Witness' by citations of (so called) Church Fathers. For a Scripture citation to be authoritative it must be capable of verification, ( i.e. the NT text or the manuscript cited by the author must be directly identifiable and not be a paraphrase or variation) and the citation must relate clearly to the specific passage. Clearly the citations listed below indicate that the 'heavenly Witness' passage was penned by the Apostle John and is in the Holy Bible.

1	Cyprian	A Latin Church Father and early author of 258 AD
2	PS-Cyprian	A Latin Church Father and early author of IV century
3	Priscillian	A Latin Church Father and early author of 385 AD
4	Speculum	A Latin Church Father and early author of about 420 AD
5	Varimadum	A Latin Church Father and early author of 445/480 AD
6	Ps-Vigilus	A Latin Church Father and early author just after 484 AD
7	Fulgentius	A Latin Church Father and early author of 533 AD

The 'heavenly witness' of 1 John 5:7 is documented as authentic in these manuscripts: 221v.r., 2318, 61, 088v.r., 429v.r., 629, 636v.r., 918, l<sup>AD</sup>, vg<sup>cl</sup>, vg<sup>mss</sup>, it<sup>l</sup>, it<sup>q</sup>, arm<sup>mss</sup>, Cyprian, PS-Cyprian, Priscillian, Speculum, Varimadum, Ps-Vigilus, Fulgentius. (As taken directly from NestleAland's "Greek New Testament" Fourth Revised Edition)

Given that 1 John 5:7 is included in all these works, the supposition that some 'Church Father' added it is completely unfounded; the identity, time zone, and existence of such a 'Church Father' is impossible; and the overwhelming conclusion is that the 'heavenly Witness' dripped from the pen of the Apostle John and is indeed part of the infallible, inerrant, plenary, verbally inspired Holy Scriptures. Any Bible Believer understanding Rev 22 will be remorse to rip it out based on the inane suspicions of Westcott and Hort, their Alexandrian evidence, and their copyright seeking followers.

An antagonist to textual criticism and unbeliever wrote to me recently stating:

Justify, say, the inclusion of 1 John 5:7-8, which are not found in ANY Greek manuscript before the tenth century.

Justify the last six versions of the Apocalypse, containing readings not found in ANY Greek manuscript.

Justify an edition which its own editor said was not edited!

Justify all of these WITHOUT REFERENCE TO FAITH. Do it on purely logical grounds. If you can do that, then I will examine your evidence further.

A list of individual readings proves nothing. This mistake is one made by textual critics of all sorts. They mistake readings for history of the text. But you must start at a more basic level:

Explaining how a text created by such false means as the TR can be original.

Again, we are speaking specifically of the Textus Receptus, not the Byzantine Text. The Byzantine text (Hodges and Farstad, Pierpont and Robinson) is completely different. But \*don't\* call the Byzantine Text the Textus Receptus.

My reasoning is the same as that of a scientist presented with a perpetual motion machine: It's \*not\* possible, and unless you can offer a reason why it's possible, handing me a gadget (in this case, a list of readings) means nothing. I may not be smart enough to figure out the gadget. But unless you can explain how it does the impossible, the logical assumption is that it's a trick.

The danger we are in in these modern times is that of letting unbelievers handle the word. My antagonist here does not know Christ nor understand the supernatural inspiration and preservation of Scriptures. This is the thinking of a professed unbeliever. Unregenerated professed believers think the same. In fact one taught this man these lies and half truths and he regurgitates them in defiance of Bible Truth. The Lord Jesus Christ is the Truth. Know Christ, Know

Truth! No Christ, no truth!

Any believer knows that the Words of God were guarded by God, and when orthodox believers copied His Scriptures into the 10<sup>th</sup> century they did not add to His words nor make it up as they went along. If there is any 10<sup>th</sup> century Byzantine text containing verses, phrases or names of Christ not found in Sinaiticus, Alexandrinus or Vaticanus, a textual critic better justify very well his cutting them out. The Scriptures were copied by Holy men of God who believed in the inspiration, preservation, inerrancy and infallibility of the Words they were copying. Every copy needs to be weighed in. Weighed in with more than a 'majority rule' mentality as done with the majority text, and weighed in with more than the 'older is all powerful' mentality of the critical text extremest.

*Behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me,... For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.*

Revelation 22:12, 18-21

*Behold, the Lord GOD will come with strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.*

Isaiah 40:10

*Behold, the LORD hath proclaimed unto the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.*

Isaiah 62:11



## Chapter 8 Verbal Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

Departure from the age old doctrine of inspiration by dictation, and holding instead a doctrine of inspiration by superintendence resulted in a lackadaisical paraphrase translation technique.<sup>71</sup> Ecumenical modernist translators ignore the truth of Psalm 12:6.

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Psalm 12:6*

Departing from the age old doctrine of verbal inspiration resulted in the massive elimination of Bible words for the 1001 modernist paraphrase English versions. If you reject verbal plenary inspiration of Scripture you may freely use any of the 1001 modern English paraphrased versions of the Bible, but if you hold to verbal plenary inspiration of Scripture you will not be comfortable nor accepted in the camp of those who critique, change, and copyright God's Holy Word. Modernist versions of the Bible use a paraphrase method that they call dynamic equivalence instead of actual verbal translation. It is their paraphrase technique, as well as the level of their departure from the original manuscripts that allows them to get a lucrative copyright on their translation work.

The motive behind all the modern English Bible translations is not the accuracy of their translation work, but coming up with enough 'significant deviations' to obtain the copyright and turn a good profit. They are successfully doing the latter and many Christians are being deceived by their marketing methods. Even fundamentalists are jumping on their Bible of the month club band wagon.

Baptist bus children were once taught the song “The Devil is a sly old fox.” It should now be mandatory in our Baptist Seminaries where this departure from verbal inspiration is cloaked in scholarly dialog about textual criticism and claims of dynamic equivalence.

---

71 This section is a December 2007 written project submitted to Dr. Phil Stringer in partial fulfillment of the requirements of the course BI-300 “Inspiration of Scripture I” of Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, Florida. That project is herein presented in its entirety.

Seminary halls ring with lofty but hollow ambitions about recovering the very words of Jesus, all the while they cast off verse after verse, change word after word, and add phrase after phrase to the very words of Scripture. Where did this deception start, and how far will it go? It started with a departure from the doctrine of verbal inspiration, and it has crept as leaven into every fundamentalist Bible college and seminary.

Dr. Gaussian expertly makes verbal plenary inspiration of Scripture analogous to the Holy Spirit of God using men as instruments to orchestrate the perfected concert of God as follows:

As a skillful musician, when he would execute a long score by himself, takes up by turns the funereal flute, the shepherd's pipe, the merry fife, or the trumpet that summons to battle; so did Almighty God, when he would make us hear his eternal word, choose out from of old the instruments which it seemed fit to him to inspire with the breath of his spirit. "He chose them before the foundation of the world, and separated them from their mother's womb." Has the reader ever paid a visit to the astonishing organist, who so charmingly elicits the tourist's tears in the Cathedral at Freiburg, as he touches one after another his wondrous keys, and greets your ear by turns with the march of warriors on the riverside, the voice of prayer sent up from the lake during the fury of the storm, or of thanksgiving when it is hushed to rest? All your senses are electrified, for you seem to have seen all, and to have heard all. Well, then, it was thus that the Lord God, mighty in harmony, applied, as it were, the finger of his Spirit to the stops which he had chosen for the hour of his purpose, and for the unity of his celestial hymn. He had from eternity before him all the human stops which he required; his Creator's eye embraces at a glance this range of keys stretching over threescore centuries; and when he would make known to our fallen world the everlasting counsel of his redemption, and the coming of the Son of God, he put his left hand on Enoch, the seventh man from Adam, and his right on John, the

humble and sublime prisoner of Patmos. The celestial anthem, seven hundred years before the flood, began with these words, “Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousand of his saints, to execute judgment upon all;” but already, in the mind of God, and in the eternal harmony of his work, the voice of John had answered to that of Enoch, and closed the hymn, three thousand years after him, with these words, “Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him! Even so, Lord Jesus, come quickly. Amen!” And during this hymn of thirty centuries, the Spirit of God never ceased to breathe in all his messengers; the angels, an apostle tells us, desired to look into its wondrous depths. God's elect were moved, and life eternal came down into the souls of men.<sup>72</sup>

It shall be seen in this treatise that using dynamic equivalence and man made paraphrase of such an orchestration, and holy inspired anthem of God, cheapens and wholly detracts from the perfection intended by God.

### **The Gideons Bible Compromised**

A great setback in the battle for truth has been accomplished through the compromise and fall of Gideons International. A group of business men gathered in Wisconsin at the turn of the twentieth century and purposed to distribute free Bibles to the world. They miraculously did that in that century. Their stated goal then and now was “We are a body of believers dedicated to making the Word of God available to everyone and, together with the local church, reaching souls for Christ.” But the turn of this century has found the Gideons to be one of the largest purveyors of falsified printed bibles that there is.

The problem was highlighted in a recent Pastor appreciation dinner they held. Therein Psalm 118 was read from their ESV bible, “Oh give thanks to the Lord, for he is good; for his steadfast love endures forever!” Any Bible believer knows that the Holy Bible says, “O give

---

72 Gaussen, L. D.D., “Theopneustia: The Plenary Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures”, Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004. Converted to text herein chapter 4, <http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk> (Accessed Dec 2007).

thanks unto the LORD; for he is good: **because** his **mercy** endureth for ever.” The ESV blunders all the way through Psalm 136 with the same copyrighted falsification. The Hebrew Bible word for “mercy” is indisputable, and the English translation being “mercy” is indisputable, the ESV translators falsified their translation to give a different word (doubtless to help secure their copyright). When confronting pastors at this appreciation dinner, their tepid response was, “Well God's steadfast love does endure forever, so it is all true.” Nowhere in the Holy Bible does the word steadfast (Hebrew *yatsaq*, Strong#03332, Greek *bebaios*, Strong#949) ever even occur with the word “love” but they seemed perfectly accepting of this falsified bible. They have changed the words of God. They changed it to something that is presently perceived to be true, so they place in Psalm 118, and Psalm 136 their perceived Bible truth, giving what they think God should have said, and discarding what God actually said. They pretend this is a thought-for-thought translation of the Bible. Shame on the copyright mongering modernist Bible translators. Shame on the Gideons for propagating their deception.

The Gideons rationalization for distributing falsified bibles in stead of the Authorized Bible is found in a quote from their once active “About the Bible” webpage:

We are often asked if the Gideons use a specific Gideon translation. The answer is No. While we do purchase and place Bibles and New Testaments with the Gideon logo on the front, we do not publish our own version. We only use translation versions that are recognized and accepted by the general Christian church here in North America.

The most common version we distribute in English is the New American Standard Bible (NASB), but in 2011 we began distributing the New Living Translation (NLT). ...

Which version of the Bible should I read? ... There have been many translations (or versions) of the Bible over the years. Using the most trustworthy ancient manuscripts that have been preserved, modern scholars have translated God’s message to us from the original languages of Hebrew and Greek into the languages we speak today. Bookstores today stock a wide variety of Bibles ranging from the King James

Version, to the New International Version, to The Message—a version that reads very much like a novel.

Which version of the Bible is the best version? It varies from person to person. It might depend on your education level, how often you read or your familiarity with the teachings of the Bible. An important difference between many of today's Bibles is the choice between a literal, word-for-word translation, versus more of a thought-for-thought translation. Two very popular translations, the New International Version and the New Living Translation, are easy to read but are not as literal in their translation as versions like the New American Standard or the English Standard Version.

Each has its advantages, but the most important thing is that they are all God's Word. Since every person is unique in what communicates best to them, we do not have one translation we recommend for you to buy. However, if you have never read the Bible before, you are likely to find the thought-for-thought translations best for beginning your journey. When you are more familiar with the Bible and want to dig deeper, you may want to pick up another translation to compare.<sup>73</sup>

The Gideon's subtle dismissal of the Authorized Bible for a list of modernist copyright bibles is disheartening, but it marks their course for this century. They are, they say, doing what is acceptable to the general Christian church of North America, staying on the broad path, as it were. It is unfortunate that they do not take a stand for the truth in this matter.

It is intimidated in this argument that the Gideons will never come back to a word-for-word translation of the English Bible. The word-for-word English translation of the Masoratic Hebrew Text and the Greek Received text is only found in the Authorized King James Bible. All other modernist versions must demonstrate "major deviations" from

---

73 From a deactivated Gideons web page, [www.gideons.ca/AbouttheBible/AboutGideonsBibles.aspx](http://www.gideons.ca/AbouttheBible/AboutGideonsBibles.aspx) cited in [www.kjvfaith.com/gideons-vs-kjv.html](http://www.kjvfaith.com/gideons-vs-kjv.html) (Accessed November 2017).

the Public Domain Authorized Bible before they can secure their lucrative copyright. The Gideons International seems determined to try many of the copyright modernist translations for distribution, but show no inclination for coming back to their roots and distributing the public domain Authorized Bible. They are well intended but multiply the myth, “No one really knows what the Bible says.” Shame on the Gideons, Like King Saul, they started so well, and ended opposing God.

So how many sets of “major deviations” have been registered for these lucrative copyrights? The table below shows just the versions supported by BibleGateway.com

<p>Biblegateway.com 58 English Translations</p> <p>1 KJ21 21st Century King James Version (KJ21)</p> <p>2 ASV American Standard Version (ASV)</p> <p>3 AMP Amplified Bible (AMP)</p> <p>4 AMPC Amplified Bible Classic Edition (AMPC)</p> <p>5 BRG BRG Bible (BRG)</p> <p>6 CSB Christian Standard Bible (CSB)</p> <p>7 CEB Common English Bible (CEB)</p> <p>8 CJB Complete Jewish Bible (CJB)</p> <p>9 CEV Contemporary English Version (CEV)</p> <p>10 DARBY Darby Translation (DARBY)</p> <p>11 DLNT Disciples' Literal New Testament (DLNT)</p> <p>12 DRA Douay-Rheims 1899 American Edition (DRA)</p> <p>13 ERV Easy-to-Read Version (ERV)</p> <p>14 ESV English Standard Version (ESV)</p> <p>15 ESVUK English Standard Version Anglicised (ESVUK)</p> <p>16 EXB Expanded Bible (EXB)</p> <p>17 GNV 1599 Geneva Bible (GNV)</p> <p>18 GW GOD'S WORD Translation (GW)</p> <p>19 GNT Good News Translation (GNT)</p> <p>20 HCSB selected Holman Christian Standard Bible (HCSB)</p> <p>21 ICB International Children's Bible (ICB)</p> <p>22 ISV International Standard Version (ISV)</p> <p>23 PHILLIPS J.B. Phillips New Testament (PHILLIPS)</p> <p>24 JUB Jubilee Bible 2000 (JUB)</p> <p><b>25 KJV King James Version (KJV)</b></p> <p><b>26 AKJV Authorized (King James) Version (AKJV)</b></p> <p>27 LEB Lexham English Bible (LEB)</p> <p>28 TLB Living Bible (TLB)</p> <p>29 MSG The Message (MSG)</p> <p>30 MEV Modern English Version (MEV)</p> <p>31 MOUNCE Mounce Reverse-Interlinear New Testament (MOUNCE)</p> <p>32 NOG Names of God Bible (NOG)</p>	<p>46 NRSVACE New Revised Standard Version Anglicised Catholic Edition (NRSVACE)</p> <p>47 NRSVCE New Revised Standard Version Catholic Edition (NRSVCE)</p> <p>48 NTE New Testament for Everyone (NTE)</p> <p>49 OJB Orthodox Jewish Bible (OJB)</p> <p>50 TPT The Passion Translation (TPT)</p> <p>51 RSV Revised Standard Version (RSV)</p> <p>52 RSVCE Revised Standard Version Catholic Edition (RSVCE)</p> <p>53 TLV Tree of Life Version (TLV)</p> <p>54 VOICE The Voice (VOICE)</p> <p>55 WEB World English Bible (WEB)</p> <p>56 WE Worldwide English (New Testament) (WE)</p> <p>57 WYC Wycliffe Bible (WYC)</p> <p>58 YLT Young's Literal Translation (YLT)</p> <p>Biblegateway.com 19 Español (ES) Translations</p> <p>1 LBLA La Biblia de las Américas (LBLA)</p> <p>2 DHH Dios Habla Hoy (DHH)</p> <p>3 JBS Jubilee Bible 2000 (Spanish) (JBS)</p> <p>4 NBD Nueva Biblia al Día (NBD)</p> <p>5 NBLH Nueva Biblia Latinoamericana de Hoy (NBLH)</p> <p>6 NTV Nueva Traducción Viviente (NTV)</p> <p>7 NVI Nueva Versión Internacional (NVI)</p> <p>8 CST Nueva Versión Internacional (Castilian) (CST)</p> <p>9 PDT Palabra de Dios para Todos (PDT)</p> <p>10 BLP La Palabra (Español) (BLP)</p> <p>11 BLPH La Palabra (Hispanoamérica) (BLPH)</p> <p>12 RVA-2015 Reina Valera Actualizada (RVA-2015)</p> <p>13 RVC Reina Valera Contemporánea (RVC)</p> <p>14 RVR1960 Reina-Valera 1960 (RVR1960)</p> <p>15 RVR1977 Reina Valera 1977 (RVR1977)</p> <p>16 RVR1995 Reina-Valera 1995 (RVR1995)</p> <p><b>17 RVA Reina-Valera Antigua (RVA)</b></p> <p>18 SRV-BRG Spanish Blue Red and Gold LetterEdition (SRV-BRG)</p>
---	--

## Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

33 NABRE New American Bible (Revised Edition) (NABRE)	19 TLA Traducción en lenguaje actual (TLA)
34 NASB New American Standard Bible (NASB)	Biblegateway.com 5 Italiano (IT) Translations
35 NCV New Century Version (NCV)	1 BDG La Bibbia della Gioia (BDG)
36 NET New English Translation (NET Bible)	2 CEI Conferenza Episcopale Italiana (CEI)
37 NIRV New International Reader's Version (NIRV)	<b>3 LND La Nuova Diodati (LND)</b>
38 NIV New International Version (NIV)	4 NR1994 Nuova Riveduta 1994 (NR1994)
39 NIVUK New International Version - UK (NIVUK)	5 NR2006 Nuova Riveduta 2006 (NR2006)
40 NKJV New King James Version (NKJV)	From this BibleGateway.com listing only the highlighted versions (KJV, AKJV, RVA, LND) seem to be pure and uncorrupted by the modernist Bible critics who suppose that only the original autographs were inspired, and there is no inspired bible in existence today, especially, they suppose, no inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired one.
41 NLV New Life Version (NLV)	The Reina Valera Gomez (RVG) is not listed in BibleGateway, but is the very best Spanish language bible; Ref <a href="http://www.reinavalera Gomez.com">www.reinavalera Gomez.com</a> .
42 NLT New Living Translation (NLT)	
43 NMB New Matthew Bible (NMB)	
44 NRSV New Revised Standard Version (NRSV)	
45 NRSVA New Revised Standard Version Anglicised (NRSVA)	

The production and distribution of falsified and corrupted bibles is a broad gate and wide path entered by sincere Christians. How unfortunate to see the Gideons leading the way down such a path.

### Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Paraphrase Changes the Words.

*And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. Revelation 22:19*

Verbal inspiration may be touted as doctrine in many evangelical Bible colleges and seminaries, but when the modernist English translation that they claim as the most accurate gives Jesus' words as, "Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather" (Matt 24:28, NASV<sup>74</sup>), while the words recorded in Greek and English are "*For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together*" (Matt 24:28, Holy Bible). Even a Baptist bus kid can see the verbal difference. They are interpreting, not translating. They are telling what they think Jesus should have said, not telling the words that he did say. That is extremely dangerous. There are two diabolical front lines in the

74 New American Standard Version (NASV), 1973 Revision, copyright by The Lockman Foundation, 1960,1962,1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, and 19732, La Habra, Calif, with all rights reserved.

attack of God's Words. First, textual criticism casts doubt on the very words of God. Second, is this use of paraphrase to translate the already divergent text. Dr. Waite points out the latter shortcoming:

A paraphrase makes no effort to carry over or translate the words of one language into the words of another language but rather to 're-state, interpret or translate with latitude.' Since this is the object of a paraphrase there's no assurance of fidelity in carrying-over exactly what is there in one language – no more and no less – into the other language, no more and no less. Therefore, paraphrases take great liberty in doing any of these three things or all of them: ADDING words, phrases, ideas, thoughts or meanings; SUBTRACTING words, phrases, ideas, thoughts or meanings; or CHANGING words, phrases, ideas, thoughts or meanings. That is the essence of paraphrase; that is the essence of DYNAMIC EQUIVALENCE. So, it is commentary, it is interpretation, it is not translation.<sup>75</sup>

The arrogance and blatancy of this paraphrase methodology is obvious in any modern translation of the Bible. It seems to be dismissed by many evangelicals with a 'let the spirit unite us, don't let doctrine divide us' mentality. The faulty arguments that dismiss the 2000 year old doctrine of verbal plenary inspiration are spewing out of our Bible colleges and entering our pulpits at such a rate that it is justly alarming. Cross Pollen is a web site that publishes essays which are meant to 'encourage Christians to return to a cross centered faith.' Their theme is *"I desired to know nothing among you save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified. (1 Corinthians 2:2)"* An essay on this site by Root Thorn, (likely a pen name) brazenly contends against verbal plenary inspiration with this bold denial:

Plenary Verbal Inspiration is not consistent with the Bible itself in two important respects. First, the doctrine is inconsistent with the way the New Testament writers use the Old Testament. The Old Testament is extensively quoted in

---

75 Waite, Pastor D.A., Th.D., Ph.D., *"Defending the King James Bible"*, 105

the New, but rarely quote word for word. It's always the sense, and not the literal words, which is represented. Of course, the New Testament was originally in Greek, and the Old Testament was in Hebrew: but even so, the New Testament writers did not quote the Septuagint (the accepted Greek version of the Scriptures in Jesus' day)<sup>76</sup> literally; neither did they give literal translations of the Hebrew. ...

I agree that the practice of free quotation does not call into question the New Testament writers' reverence for the Old Testament. However, it does clearly demonstrate that they did not consider the inspired content of the Scriptures to be tied to the exact choice of words. Otherwise, they would have taken great pains to quote as literally as possible as is the practice of most "fundamentalist" churches of today.

Second, the doctrine of plenary verbal inspiration is inconsistent with God's stated purpose to make Himself most fully known to as wide an audience as possible, regardless of education.<sup>77</sup>

These are common errors brain washed into Bible students with diabolical precision. They are far too shallow to dislodge a 2000 year old doctrine of the faith but they are so twisted into minds as to distort all modern Christianity. Notice Thorn's errors in three categories:

1) Thorn contends that since the Apostles used free quotation of the Scriptures, our modernist translators may do so as well. This error dismisses the reality that the Apostles were not operating as Scripture translators or interpreters, they were operated upon by the Holy Spirit to WRITE the inspired Holy Scriptures! That is a big difference. Millions trust the Apostle Paul to give the exactness of God's intended

---

<sup>76</sup> It is a commonly repeated lie that the Septuagint was existent, accepted, and used by Jesus himself in the first century AD. The Jews, including Jesus, rejected any and all Greek translations of the Hebrew Scriptures, particularly anything coming from Alexandria Egypt, where the Septuagint was contrived, likely in the second century AD.

<sup>77</sup> CrossPollen, e-mail: [thornroot@juno.com](mailto:thornroot@juno.com), 2001, from [http://www.accuros.com/thornbush/pollen/plenary\\_verbal\\_inspiration.htm](http://www.accuros.com/thornbush/pollen/plenary_verbal_inspiration.htm), Last Revised: December 28, 2001

communications. Do not trust the Lockman Foundation or Zondervan Corporation to do that. Do not even trust the good Dr. Bruce Metzger<sup>78</sup> to do that in Greek. The Apostles, writing the inspired words of God could quote, misquote, or free quote any source in any way, the results would be the words that God breathed. They could quote Enoch the 7<sup>th</sup> from Adam without using any source but God himself! That is what inspiration is! Modern translators are not inspired authors of Scripture, not the Only Begotten Son and not apostles, and thus dare not quote sloppily or loosely!.

2) The Septuagint was NOT the accepted Greek version of the Scriptures in Jesus' day! A little research shows that this corrupted Greek version was not accepted by the Jews as Scripture, and Jesus was a more knowledgeable Jew than any of the rabbinical scribes; this corrupted Greek version was not produced by any Levitical Priests who were in charge of all Old Testament Scripture copies; and this corrupted Greek version of Old Testament Scriptures cannot accurately be dated before the 2<sup>nd</sup> century as many claim! The only source that dates it prior is the one which fabricated a story of its miraculous production.

The letter of Aristeas fabricates the story of seventy-two Jewish Elders who went to Alexandria around 250 BC (i.e. once upon a time in a far distant land is his flavor!) As he supposes they were separated while each translated and 'hocus pocus' they all came up with the exact same book, the Old Testament in Greek. Although this far fetched story and date is referenced by Philo and Josephus as if it were true, there is no copy of the Septuagint before 220 A.D.<sup>79</sup> It is far more likely that the Septuagint quoted the Apostles of Jesus Christ, than that the Apostles of Jesus Christ quoted the Septuagint. Don't accuse the Lord Jesus Christ of reading it, quoting it, or acknowledging it. He did not. This argument, as true for all of these arguments, has been perfectly defeated in yesteryear. To quote Dr. L. Gaussen's 1850 AD book *"Theopneustia: The Plenary Inspiration of the Holy Scriptures"* on this subject:

The learned Horne, in his "Introduction to the Critical Study of the Bible" (vol. i. p. 503,) has ranged under five

---

78 Dr. Metzger is a lead Greek scholar for the Nestle Aland Greek New Testament

79 Stringer, Dr. Phil, BI-300 Syllabus "Inspiration of Scriptures I", 57

distinct classes, relatively to the Septuagint version, the quotations made in the New Testament from the Old. We do not here warrant all his distinctions, nor all his figures; but our readers will comprehend the force of our argument, on our informing them that that learned author reckons eighty-eight verbal quotations that agree with the Alexandrian translations; sixty-four more that are borrowed from them, but with some variations; thirty-seven that adopt the same meaning with them without employing their words; sixteen that differ from them in order to agree more nearly with the Hebrew; and, finally, twenty that differ from both the Hebrew and the Septuagint, but in which the sacred authors have paraphrased the Old Testament, in order that the sense in which they quote it may be better understood. These numerical data will sufficiently enable the reader to form a just idea of the independence claimed by the Holy Ghost with regard to human versions, when he desired to quote, in the New Testament, that which he had previously caused to be written in the Old. Accordingly, they not only answer the objection - they convert it into a testimony.<sup>80</sup>

Root Thorn did not do his homework when he regurgitated the misinformation presented him by some modernist bible version marketer. The Septuagint foolishness, as all his other anti- inspiration foolishness, was amply refuted 150 years ago. However, these diabolical attacks do not subside, and God's truths about verbal inspiration needs to be revisited in each generation. Be careful to do your homework here, and not regurgitate Satan's paraphrase.

3) The rational that anyone of any education level and any lost condition should be able to have God revealed to him without God's specific words being used, without language study, without the Apostolic verbal inspiration, and without linguistics study, or study of any sort, is baseless and asinine. Thorn's accusation that verbal inspiration of Greek and Hebrew Scriptures would allow only learned scholars to lord over the commoners is at best unlearned. Indeed, the NASV bible that he defends lords over people with it's interpretation of

---

80 Gaussen, 167

I Peter 2:2. There they teach that you must grow into salvation. Changing the words of God is what allows them to lord over people.

Thorn's preferred translators reject verbal plenary inspiration, change, add to, and delete the words of God to support their errant belief systems. Thorn, striving to focus attention on the cross alone, foolishly and dangerously departs from the very words of Scripture which alone can accomplish that goal. Such is the product of our evangelical Bible colleges, and an open door to the diabolical deceit of paraphrasing. Dismissing the 2000 year old doctrine of verbal plenary inspiration is a very dangerous precedent.

### **Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase NAS's Dynamic Equivalence in Matthew 24**

*What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it. Deut. 12:32*

An exposure of this 'dynamic equivalence' paraphrase virus is depicted below with a brief examination of the New American Standard Version (NASV<sup>81</sup>), 1973 Revision, copyright by The Lockman Foundation, 1960,1962,1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, and 1973<sup>82</sup>, La Habra, Calif, with all rights reserved. The one chapter examination of this version will amply illustrate the paraphrase virus that infects all the modernist translations. The New International Version<sup>83</sup> (NIV) is the most liberal with paraphrase methodology and is, consequently, falling from favor in the modern market, Praise the Lord. The New King James Version<sup>84</sup> (NKJV), in its New Testament at least, is the most conservative with paraphrase methodology and is, consequently, as deceptively subtle as it's name. The NKJV was not able to secure a copyright on its New Testament translation. It did not have sufficient

---

81 The word 'version' properly implies an adaptation and variance from an earlier or original work. It is properly used for all modern versions, but not applicable for the King James Bible Translation because that is the earlier and non copyright work from which all others must deviate from to obtain their copyright. In the old usage only did version mean translation to a different language.

82 The 1977 and 1995 copyright revisions were also used in softcopy without noted variance from the 1973 copyright version. .

83 The New International Version, 1978, by New York International Bible Society.

84 The New King James Version, 1982, by Thomas Nelson, Inc.

deviations from the KJB. They only secured their copyright after they completely bastardized their Old Testament translation, starting with a non Masoratic Hebrew text. All versions that obtained a copyright incorporated a paraphrase methodology in order to have 'significant deviation' from the original, from 'the earlier work' (i.e. the public domain King James Bible English translation), and from any other earlier work. The NASV will suffice for this exposure.

In the comparison table of Matthew 24, included in its entirety at the end of this chapter, the King James is contrasted with the NASV. For completeness the TR<sup>85</sup> and the WH<sup>86</sup> are shown in Greek to show that these translation infractions are not founded in their corrupted Greek text usage. Examining a few key scriptures of Matthew 24 will serve to emphasize the dangers of their paraphrase.

*Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you,  
neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep  
the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you.*  
Deuteronomy 4:2

### ***Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Subjective Word Substitutions***

First, examine the twenty-eighth verse of Matthew 24 carefully:

Holy Bible KJB	NASV	TR	WH & Nestles	Differences
28 For wheresoever the carcase is, there the eagles be gathered together.	28 "Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.	28 οπου γαρ εαν η το πτωμα εκει συναχθησονται οι αιετοι	28 οπου <del>γαρ</del> εαν η το πτωμα εκει συναχθησονται οι αιετοι	Deletion of 'for', via WH deletion. Change to 'corpse' for 'carcase' via interpretation. Change to 'vultures' for

85 Greek Bible, 1550- Textus Receptus, Online Bible Foundation, 12 Birkfield Place, Carluke, Lanarkshire, Scotland, M184PZ, 15-2006

86 Greek Bible, 1881 Wescott Hort Greek Text, Online Bible Foundation, 12 Birkfield Place, Carluke, Lanarkshire, Scotland, M184PZ, 15-2006

				'eagles' via interpretation.
--	--	--	--	------------------------------

By definition a carcass is not necessarily a corpse. If one runs over a carcass on the road, they are probably in rural upstate New York. If one runs over a corpse on the road, they are probably in urban New York and they better notify somebody. Jesus said there would be horses at these battles<sup>87</sup> and he properly allowed their dead carcasses in this verse. The Lockman foundation has no right to substitute what they think Jesus should have said here. There is also a difference between a vulture and an eagle. In their opinion Jesus meant vulture here, but when they translate the identical word in Rev 4:7 and 12:14 they saw fit to use the eagle. They are so eager to give their shallow interpretation they change the words of God.

*What thing soever I command you, observe to do it:  
thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.*

Deuteronomy 12:32

### *Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Awkward Confusion of Tenses*

Examine the first verse of Matthew 24 carefully:

King James Bible	NASV	TR	W&H	NASV Deficiencies
1 ¶ And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.	1 Jesus came out from the temple and was going away when His disciples came up to point out the temple buildings to Him.	1 και εξελψων ο ιησουϋ επορευετο απο του ιερου και προσηλψον οι μαρηται αυτου επιδειξαι αυτω ταϋ	1 και εξελψων ο ιησουϋ απο του ιερου επορευετο και προσηλψον οι μαρηται αυτου επιδειξαι αυτω ταϋ	Refused to translate the first 'And.' Changed 'went out and departed' to 'came out and was going away when' The imperfect tense here generally represents continual or repeated action in the past. Where the present tense might indicate "he is departing," the

87 See Armageddon ref Rev 16:13-16,14:14-20, Isa 10:27-34, 24:21-23, 26:20-21, 34:1-8, 63:1-6, 66:15-16, Jer 25:29-33, 51:20-24, Ezek 38:1-39:16, Joel 2:1-11, 3:9-13, Ob 1:15, Zec 3:8,12:1-9, 14:1-9, Mt 24:27-28, 25:31-34, Rev 19:11-21

King James Bible	NASV	TR	W&H	NASV Deficiencies
		οικοδομασ του ιερου	οικοδομασ του ιερου	imperfect would indicate "he kept on departing", which according to previous experts is best said 'went out and departed.' Changed 'and his disciples' to 'when his disciples' via interpretation.

In the preface to the 1963 edition the Lockman Foundation included a section titled “Principles of Revision”<sup>88</sup> In it they made some defense of their twisting of the aorist Greek tense (and the present and imperfect tenses) to better follow modern English rules rather than the Greek rules. This unfortunate deviation from the clear and proper translation of Greek tense, a tense followed very carefully, even perfectly, by the King James translators, muddies up many verses in their NASV work. This verse in particular captures their blunders and awkwardness. The consistency and accuracy of the team of KJB translators pales the Lockman Foundation's attempt to improvise with tenses.

*This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein:*

Joshua 1:8

### ***Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase The Weaker 'Will' Replacing the Legal 'Shall'***

Examine the seventh and ninth verses of Matthew 24 carefully:

---

<sup>88</sup> NASV, v.

King James Bible	NASV	TR	W&H	NASV Deficiencies
7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.	7 "For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes.	7 εγερψησεται γαρ εϋνωϋ επι εϋνωϋ και βασιλεια επι βασιλειαν και εσονται λιμοι και λοιμοι και σεισμοι κατα τοπουϋ	7 εγερψησεται γαρ εϋνωϋ επι εϋνωϋ και βασιλεια επι βασιλειαν και εσονται λιμοι και <del>λοιμοι και</del> σεισμοι κατα τοπουϋ	Soft 'will' for the legal 'shall' 5x Dropped 'pestilences' completely (via W&H rendering)
9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.	9 "Then they will deliver you to tribulation, and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name.	9 τοτε παραδωσουσ ιν υμαϋ ειϋ ψλιθιν και αποκτενουσι ν υμαϋ και εσεσϋε μισουμενοι υπο παντων των εϋνων δια το ονομα μου	9 τοτε παραδωσουσ ιν υμαϋ ειϋ ψλιθιν και αποκτενουσι ν υμαϋ και εσεσϋε μισουμενοι υπο παντων των εϋνων δια το ονομα μου	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 3x Substituted 'tribulation' for 'to be afflicted' Substituted 'for My name' instead of clarifying 'for my name's sake.'

In a USAF contract law office I was required to change every 'will' in a newly written 52 page contract to a 'shall.' In the legal world, and in the English language in general, the word 'will' depends on ones willingness, while the word 'shall' makes an action required no matter ones willingness. In the process of making the Words of God readable and pleasant to simpletons, the Lockman foundation has made it very misleading to the lawyers. We should care about accuracy of language to all people, even though some of them may be lawyers.

*Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.*  
Proverbs 30:6

## *Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Inconsistency Produces Confusion*

Examine verse thirty and thirty-one carefully:

King James Bible	NASV	TR	W&H	NASV Deficiencies
30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.	30 "And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the SON OF MAN COMING ON THE CLOUDS OF THE SKY with power and great glory.	30 και τοτε φανησεται το σημειον του υιου του ανθρωπου εν τω ουρανω και τοτε κοθονται πασαι αι φυλαι τη γη και οθονται τον υιον του ανθρωπου ερχομενον επι των νεφελων του ουρανου μετα δυναμεως και δοξη πολλη	30 και τοτε φανησεται το σημειον του υιου του ανθρωπου εν <del>τω</del> ουρανω και τοτε κοθονται πασαι αι φυλαι τη γη και οθονται τον υιον του ανθρωπου ερχομενον επι των νεφελων του ουρανου μετα δυναμεως και δοξη πολλη	Removal of the legal 'shall.' 3x Changed the coming of the Son of Man from 'in the clouds' to 'on the clouds.' Also in verse 64, and Mrk 13:26. Then in 1Thes 4:17 they properly translated the exact phrase 'in the clouds.' Properly Jesus is not 'upon a cloud (singular)' until Rev 14:14-16 wherein the Greek and the context are clear. In Mark 14:26 they used 'coming with the clouds' instead of 'in the clouds'. In Rev 1:7 the Greek, the KJB and the NAS say 'coming with the clouds.' Their inconsistency is aggravating at best. Their capitalization to emphasize their source criticism pursuits is presumptuous, brash, and unnecessary.
31 And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together	31 "And He will send forth His angels with A GREAT TRUMPET and THEY WILL GATHER	31 και αποστελει τουσ αγγελουσ αυτου μετα σαλπιγος φωνησ μεγαλη και επισυναξουσ	31 και αποστελει τουσ αγγελουσ αυτου μετα σαλπιγος <del>φωνησ</del> μεγαλη και επισυναξουσ	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 2x They followed the delinquent minority Greek text and sent the angels with 'a great trumpet' rather than with a 'great sound of a trumpet.' To their shame. They substituted 'sky' for 'heaven' based on whim not contents. (Also verse 29,30, Luke 4:25,17:24, Acts 1:10, 11,

King James Bible	NASV	TR	W&H	NASV Deficiencies
his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.	TOGETHER His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.	σιν τουⲡ εκλεκτουⲡ αυτου εκ των τεσσαρων ανεμων απ ακρων ουρανων εωⲡ ακρων αυτων	σιν τουⲡ εκλεκτουⲡ αυτου εκ των τεσσαρων ανεμων απ ακρων ουρανων εωⲡ [των] ακρων αυτων	2:19, 10:11, 10:16,11:5, 10, James 5:18, Rev 6:13, 14, 11:6) God's signs and stars are higher than the 'sky' and each of these should properly be translated 'heavens' as the previous, more expert, translators translated. Their capitalization to emphasize their source criticism pursuits is presumptuous, brash, and unnecessary.

'In the clouds' paints a different picture than 'on the clouds'. As does the 'stars of the sky' and the 'stars of the heavens' have different depths. The blatant inconsistency that the Lockman Foundation uses to distinguish whether Christ is meeting us in the clouds, or merely sitting on a cloud is more than inaccurate, it is irreverent. The blatant inconsistency of their portraying Christ as the Creator of the sky vs Christ the Creator of the heavens further demonstrates their shallowness. They do not demonstrate the depth, the reverence or the theology to have a consistency in translation effort in these matters. Their pursuits seem to be for a copyright rather than for clarity, theology, and accuracy. And that leaves off His angels sent with the 'sound of a trumpet,' theirs are sent only carrying a trumpet. They get that nonsense from following the depraved minority text of Westcott and Hort. The rest they got from following their own depraved paraphrase methodology.

*For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:*  
Revelation 22:18

## Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase Conclusion

This evidence serves to illustrate the shortfalls of the modernist's

'dynamic equivalence' whereby they change, add to, and subtract from the very Words of God. Their paraphrase of God's Words earns them a lucrative copyright but compromises accuracy, communication, and the verbal plenary doctrine of inspiration. They provide interpretation and commentary, not translation of God's very Words. They depart from the Greek tense to flower up their own ideas of sequences and events. They dummy down the exactness of the old English language and thus compromise the strength of God's Words. And their inconsistency in word usage divides interconnected systematic events, which are connected via unique Greek phrases, such as 'in the clouds', 'of the heavens', and gathering of 'eagles' examined here. The work of the Lockman Foundation is certainly scholarly, but it is misstitled. They called it a translation and labeled it The Holy Bible, when it is actually their commentary and should be labeled "A Commentary, What We Think The Holy Bible Should Say." Shame on the Lockman Foundation for lining their pocket at the expense of God's Words.

This version of the Bible by the Lockman foundation should never be used but what the real Words of God are opened in parallel. Their ideas of what God should have said are sometimes insightful of human reasoning, but should never overshadow what God actually said. That categorization goes for every English version of the Bible that has shown enough "significant deviation" to obtain a copyright on their translated words.

## **Matthew 24 Comparison Table**

For completeness a comparison table showing each verse of Jesus' greatest commentary on his second coming, Matthew 24, is included below:

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
1 ¶ And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.	1 Jesus came out from the temple and was going away when His disciples came up to point out the temple buildings to Him.	1 και εξελψων ο ιησουσ επορευετο απο του ιερου και προσηλπον οι μαρηται αυτου επιδειξαι αυτω τασ οικοδομασ του ιερου	1 και εξελψων ο ιησουσ απο του ιερου επορευετο και προσηλπον οι μαρηται αυτου επιδειξαι αυτω τασ οικοδομασ του ιερου	Refused to translate the first 'And.' Changed 'went out and departed' to 'came out and was going away when' The imperfect tense here generally represents continual or repeated action in the past. Where the present tense might indicate "he is departing," the imperfect would indicate "he kept on departing", which according to previous experts is best said 'went out and departed.' Changed 'and his disciples' to 'when his disciples' via interpretation.
2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.	2 And He said to them, "Do you not see all these things? Truly I say to you, not one stone here will be left upon another, which will not be torn down."	2 ο δε ιησουσ ειπεν αυτοισ ου βλεπετε παντα ταυτα αμην λεγω υμιν ου μη αφεψη ωδε λιψοσ επι λιπον οσ ου μη καταλυσησεται	2 ο δε αποκρινεισ ειπεν αυτοισ ου βλεπετε ταυτα παντα αμην λεγω υμιν ου μη αφεψη ωδε λιψοσ επι λιπον οσ ου καταλυσησεται	Dropped the proper noun 'Jesus' via W&H deviant. Used the soft 'will' for the legal 'shall' Used a softer 'torn down' for the stronger 'καταλυσησεται' which implies overthrowing not dismantlement!

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?	3 As He was sitting on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things happen, and what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?"	3 καψημενου δε αυτου επι του ορου των ελαιων προσηλπον αυτω οι μαθηται κατ ιδιαν λεγοντες ειπε ημιν ποτε ταυτα εσται και τι το σημειον τησ σησ παρουσιασ και τησ συντελειασ του αιωνος	3 καψημενου δε αυτου επι του ορου των ελαιων προσηλπον αυτω οι μαθηται κατ ιδιαν λεγοντες ειπον ημιν ποτε ταυτα εσται και τι το σημειον τησ σησ παρουσιασ και <del>τη</del> θ συντελειασ του αιωνος	Again they present tense awkwardly where previous experts did not. They used the soft 'will' for the legal 'shall' 2x Changed 'world' to 'age.' Via their interpretation of what the disciples should have asked vs what they actually asked. They were asking about the end of the 'αιωνος' i.e. the end of forever; which is better translated the end of the 'world' no matter what 'they' think the disciples should have asked.
4 ¶ And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.	4 And Jesus answered and said to them, "See to it that no one misleads you.	4 και αποκριθεισ ο ιησους ειπεν αυτοις βλεπετε μη τις υμασ πλανηση	4 και αποκριθεισ ο ιησους ειπεν αυτοις βλεπετε μη τις υμασ πλανηση	The weaker 'mislead' for the purposeful 'deceive' via their interpretation.
5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.	5 "For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will mislead many.	5 πολλοι γαρ ελευσονται επι τω ονοματι μου λεγοντες εγω ειμι ο χριστος και πολλους πλανησουσιν	5 πολλοι γαρ ελευσονται επι τω ονοματι μου λεγοντες εγω ειμι ο χριστος και πολλους πλανησουσιν	Soft 'will' for the legal 'shall' The weaker 'mislead' for the purposeful 'deceive' via their interpretation.

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
6 And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.	6 "You will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not frightened, for those things must take place, but that is not yet the end.	6 μελλησετε δε ακουειν πολεμου και ακοαω πολεμων ορατε μη ψροεισψε δει γαρ παντα γενεσθαι αλλ ουπω εστιν το τελω	6 μελλησετε δε ακουειν πολεμου και ακοαω πολεμων ορατε μη ψροεισψε δει γαρ γενεσθαι αλλ ουπω εστιν το τελω	Changed legal 'shall' to soft 'will' Changed 'shall hear' to 'will be hearing' changing from a clear future tense, active voice, indicative mood, to an English 'future progressive' tense, which would be a Greek second aorist tense, middle deponent voice, infinitive mood. (as in Matt 20:26 'will be great') (a first year Greek student would be chastized for making such a curt change.) Changed 'troubled' to 'frightened.' Changed 'come to pass' to 'take place.'
7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places.	7 "For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes.	7 εγερνησεται γαρ εθνοσ επι εθνοσ και βασιλεια επι βασιλειαν και εσονται λιμοι και λοιμοι και σεισμοι κατα τοπου	7 εγερνησεται γαρ εθνοσ επι εθνοσ και βασιλεια επι βασιλειαν και εσονται λιμοι και <del>λοιμοι και</del> σεισμοι κατα τοπου	Soft 'will' for the legal 'shall' 5x Dropped 'pestilences' completely (via W&H rendering)
8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.	8 "But all these things are merely the beginning of birth pangs.	8 παντα δε ταυτα αρχη ωδινων	8 παντα δε ταυτα αρχη ωδινων	Added 'But', an adversative continuative conjunction left off by the more experienced translators. Added 'merely', via

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
				their interpretation. Used 'birth pangs' instead of the traditional and consistent 'sorrows' for the Greek ' αρχη '.
9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.	9 "Then they will deliver you to tribulation, and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations because of My name.	9 τότε παραδωσους ιν υμασ ειω ψλιθιν και αποκτενουσι ν υμασ και εσεσψε μισουμενοι υπο παντων των εσων δια το ονομα μου	9 τότε παραδωσους ιν υμασ ειω ψλιθιν και αποκτενουσι ν υμασ και εσεσψε μισουμενοι υπο παντων των εσων δια το ονομα μου	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 3x Substituted 'tribulation' for 'to be afflicted' Substituted 'for My name' instead of clarifying 'for my name's sake.'
10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.	10 "At that time many will fall away and will betray one another and hate one another.	10 και τότε σκανδαλισψ ησονται πολλοι και αλληλουσ παραδωσους ιν και μισησουσιν αλληλουσ	10 και τότε σκανδαλισψ ησονται πολλοι και αλληλουσ παραδωσους ιν και μισησουσιν αλληλουσ	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 3x Substituted 'fall away' instead of 'be offended'
11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.	11 "Many false prophets will arise and will mislead many.	11 και πολλοι θεοδοπροφηται εγερψησονται και πλανησουσιν πολλουσ	11 και πολλοι θεοδοπροφηται εγερψησονται και πλανησουσιν πολλουσ	Willfully deleted 'and' that is present in the Greek. Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 2x
12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many	12 "Because lawlessness is increased, most people's love will	12 και δια το πλησυνψηνα ι την ανομιαν θυγησεται η αγαπη των	12 και δια το πλησυνψηνα ι την ανομιαν θυγησεται η αγαπη των	Willfully deleted 'and' that is present in the Greek. Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
shall wax cold.	grow cold.	πολλων	πολλων	'shall' 2x Substituted 'lawlessness' for 'iniquity'
13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.	13 "But the one who endures to the end, he will be saved.	13 ο δε υπομειναϖ ειϖ τελοϖ ουτοϖ σωψησεται	13 ο δε υπομειναϖ ειϖ τελοϖ ουτοϖ σωψησεται	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 2x Worded this as if enduring produces salvation more so than the enduring indicating the saved ones.
14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.	14 "This gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in the whole world as a testimony to all the nations, and then the end will come.	14 και κηρυχψησεται τουτο το ευαγγελιον τηϖ βασιλειαϖ εν ολη τη οικουμενη ειϖ μαρτυριον πασιν τοιϖ εϖνεσιν και τοτε ηξει το τελοϖ	14 και κηρυχψησεται τουτο το ευαγγελιον τηϖ βασιλειαϖ εν ολη τη οικουμενη ειϖ μαρτυριον πασιν τοιϖ εϖνεσιν και τοτε ηξει το τελοϖ	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall'
15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)	15 "Therefore when you see the ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION which was spoken of through Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place	15 οταν ουν ιδητε το βδελυγμα τηϖ ερημωσεωϖ το ρηϖεν δια δανιηλ του προφητου εστοϖ εν τοϖω αγιω ο αναγινωσκων νοειτω	15 οταν ουν ιδητε το βδελυγμα τηϖ ερημωσεωϖ το ρηϖεν δια δανιηλ του προφητου εστοϖ εν τοϖω αγιω ο αναγινωσκων νοειτω	Substituted 'spoken of through Daniel' for 'spoken of by Daniel' tense of 'stand in the' changed to 'standing in the'

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
	(let the reader understand),			
16 Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains:	16 then those who are in Judea must flee to the mountains.	16 τοτε οι εν τη ιουδαια φυγετωσαν επι τα ορη	16 τοτε οι εν τη ιουδαια φυγετωσαν εις τα ορη	Changed 'let' to 'must' ended the sentence, vs the colon of the preferred translators.
17 Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:	17 "Whoever is on the housetop must not go down to get the things out that are in his house.	17 ο επι του δωματω μη καταβαινετω αραι τι εκ τησ οικιασ αυτου	17 ο επι του δωματω μη καταβατω αραι τα εκ τησ οικιασ αυτου	Changed 'let' to 'must' Complicated the wording for a strange tense Ended the ongoing sentence
18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.	18 "Whoever is in the field must not turn back to get his cloak.	18 και ο εν τω αγρω μη επιστρεθατω οπισω αραι τα ιματια αυτου	18 και ο εν τω αγρω μη επιστρεθατω οπισω αραι το ιματιον αυτου	Changed 'let' to 'must' Substituted 'cloak' singular for 'clothes' plural
19 And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!	19 "But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days!	19 ουαι δε ταισ εν γαστρι εχουσαισ και ταισ ψηλαζουσαισ εν εκειναισ ταισ ημεραισ	19 ουαι δε ταισ εν γαστρι εχουσαισ και ταισ ψηλαζουσαισ εν εκειναισ ταισ ημεραισ	Changed conjunction 'and' to 'but'

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:	20 "But pray that your flight will not be in the winter, or on a Sabbath.	20 προσευχεσθε δε ινα μη γενηται η φυγη υμων χειμωνος μηδε εν σαββατω	20 προσευχεσθε δε ινα μη γενηται η φυγη υμων χειμωνος μηδε <del>ε</del> σαββατω	Changed 'be not in' to 'will not be in'
21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.	21 "For then there will be a great tribulation, such as has not occurred since the beginning of the world until now, nor ever will.	21 εσται γαρ τοτε ψλιθιω μεγαλη οια ου γεγονεν απ αρχης κοσμου εως του νυν ουδ ου μη γενηται	21 εσται γαρ τοτε ψλιθιω μεγαλη οια ου γεγονεν απ αρχης κοσμου εως του νυν ουδ ου μη γενηται	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 2x Incomplete clause 'nor ever will' is confusing
22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.	22 "Unless those days had been cut short, no life would have been saved; but for the sake of the elect those days will be cut short.	22 και ει μη εκολωβωψησαν αι ημεραι εκειναι ουκ αν εσωψη πασα σαρξ δια δε τουσ εκλεκτους κολωβωψησονται αι ημεραι εκειναι	22 και ει μη εκολωβωψησαν αι ημεραι εκειναι ουκ αν εσωψη πασα σαρξ δια δε τουσ εκλεκτους κολωβωψησονται αι ημεραι εκειναι	Changed future tense 'should be shortened' to passed tense 'had been cut short' Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall'
23 Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.	23 "Then if anyone says to you, 'Behold, here is the Christ,' or 'There He is,' do not believe him.	23 τοτε εαν τιω υμιν ειπη ιδου ωδε ο χριστος η ωδε μη πιστευσητε	23 τοτε εαν τιω υμιν ειπη ιδου ωδε ο χριστος η ωδε μη πιστευσητε	Reasonable, but "believe it not" is quite different from "do not believe him."

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.	24 "For false Christs and false prophets will arise and will show great signs and wonders, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect.	24 εγερωσησονται ι γαρ θευδοχριστοι και θευδοπροφηται και δωσουσιν σημεια μεγαλα και τερατα ωστε πλανησαι ει δυνατον και τουτω εκλεκτουτω	24 εγερωσησονται ι γαρ θευδοχριστοι και θευδοπροφηται και δωσουσιν σημεια μεγαλα και τερατα ωστε πλανάσθαι ει δυνατον και τουτω εκλεκτουτω	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall' 3x
25 Behold, I have told you before.	25 "Behold, I have told you in advance.	25 ιδου προειρηκα υμιν	25 ιδου προειρηκα υμιν	Reasonable, but their awkward tense description is for copyright purpose only
26 Wherefore if they shall say unto you, 'Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.	26 "So if they say to you, 'Behold, He is in the wilderness,' do not go out, or, 'Behold, He is in the inner rooms,' do not believe them.	26 εαν ουν ειπωσιν υμιν ιδου εν τη ερημω εστιν μη εξελψητε ιδου εν τοις ταμειοις μη πιστευσητε	26 εαν ουν ειπωσιν υμιν ιδου εν τη ερημω εστιν μη εξελψητε ιδου εν τοις ταμειοις μη πιστευσητε	Reasonable, but “Wherefore” is a bigger word than “So”, “desert” than “wilderness”, and “secret” than “inner”.
27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.	27 "For just as the lightning comes from the east and flashes even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be.	27 ωσπερ γαρ η αστραπη εξερχεται απο ανατολων και φαινεται εως δυσμων ουτω εσται και η	27 ωσπερ γαρ η αστραπη εξερχεται απο ανατολων και φαινεται εως δυσμων ουτω εσται= <del>κατα</del> η	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.'

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
		παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	
28 For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.	28 "Wherever the corpse is, there the vultures will gather.	28 οπου γαρ εαν η το πτωμα εκει συναχθησονται οι αετοι	28 οπου γαρ εαν η το πτωμα εκει συναχθησονται οι αετοι	Deletion of 'for', via WH deletion. Change to 'corpse' for 'carcass' via interpretation. Change to 'vultures' for 'eagles' via interpretation.
29 Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:	29 "But immediately after the tribulation of those days THE SUN WILL BE DARKENED, AND THE MOON WILL NOT GIVE ITS LIGHT, AND THE STARS WILL FALL from the sky, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken.	29 ευψεωθ δε μετα την ψλιθιν των ημερων εκεινων ο ηλιος σκοτισθησεται και η σεληνη ου δωσει το φεγγος αυτη και οι αστερες πεσουνται απο του ουρανου και αι δυναμεις των ουρανων σαλευθησονται	29 ευψεωθ δε μετα την ψλιθιν των ημερων εκεινων ο ηλιος σκοτισθησεται και η σεληνη ου δωσει το φεγγος αυτη και οι αστερες πεσουνται απο του ουρανου και αι δυναμεις των ουρανων σαλευθησονται	Addition of contraction 'but' is unjustified. Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 4x Their capitalization to emphasize their source criticism pursuits is presumptuous, brash, and unnecessary.

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.	30 "And then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in the sky, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the SON OF MAN COMING ON THE CLOUDS OF THE SKY with power and great glory.	30 και τοτε φανησεται το σημειον του υιου του ανθρωπου εν τω ουρανω και τοτε κοθονται πασαι αι φυλαι τη γη και οθονται τον υιον του ανθρωπου ερχομενον επι των νεφελων του ουρανου μετα δυναμεωσ και δοξησ πολλησ	30 και τοτε φανησεται το σημειον του υιου του ανθρωπου εν <del>τω</del> ουρανω και τοτε κοθονται πασαι αι φυλαι τη γη και οθονται τον υιον του ανθρωπου ερχομενον επι των νεφελων του ουρανου μετα δυναμεωσ και δοξησ πολλησ	Removal of the legal 'shall.' 3x Changed the coming of the Son of Man from 'in the clouds' to 'on the clouds.' Also in verse 64, and Mrk 13:26. Then in 1Thes 4:17 they properly translated the exact phrase 'in the clouds.' Properly Jesus is not 'upon a cloud (singular)' until Rev 14:14-16 wherein the Greek and the context are clear. In Mark 14:26 they used 'coming with the clouds' instead of 'in the clouds'. In Rev 1:7 the Greek, the KJB and the NAS say 'coming with the clouds.' Their inconsistency is aggravating at best. Their capitalization to emphasize their source criticism pursuits is presumptuous, brash, and unnecessary.

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
31 And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.	31 "And He will send forth His angels with A GREAT TRUMPET and THEY WILL GATHER TOGETHER His elect from the four winds, from one end of the sky to the other.	31 και αποστελει τουσ αγγελουσ αυτου μετα σαλπιγγουσ φωνησ μεγαλησ και επισυναξουσ ιν τουσ εκλεκτουσ αυτου εκ των τεσσαρων ανεμων απ ακρων ουρανων εωσ ακρων αυτων	31 και αποστελει τουσ αγγελουσ αυτου μετα σαλπιγγουσ φωνησ μεγαλησ και επισυναξουσ ιν τουσ εκλεκτουσ αυτου εκ των τεσσαρων ανεμων απ ακρων ουρανων εωσ <b>[των]</b> ακρων αυτων	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 2x They followed the delinquent minority Greek text and sent the angels with 'a great trumpet' rather than with a 'great sound of a trumpet.' To their shame. They substituted 'sky' for 'heaven' based on whim not contents. (Also verse 29,30, Luke 4:25,17:24, Acts 1:10, 11, 2:19, 10:11, 10:16,11:5, 10, James 5:18, Rev 6:13, 14, 11:6) God's signs and stars are higher than the 'sky' and each of these should properly be translated 'heavens' as the previous, more expert, translators translated. Their capitalization to emphasize their source criticism pursuits is presumptuous, brash, and unnecessary.
32 ¶ Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is	32 "Now learn the parable from the fig tree: when its branch has already become tender and puts forth its	32 απο δε τησ συκησ μαψετε την παραβολην οταν ηδη ο κλαδοσ αυτησ γενηται απαλοσ και τα φυλλα	32 απο δε τησ συκησ μαψετε την παραβολην οταν ηδη ο κλαδοσ αυτησ γενηται απαλοσ και τα φυλλα	It is properly the parable 'of the fig tree' not the parable 'from the fig tree'! Substitute 'branch has already become tender' for 'branch is yet tender.' They are playing with the tense and inserting suspect

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
nigh:	leaves, you know that summer is near;	εκφυη γινωσκετε οτι εγγυω το ψεροω	εκφυη γινωσκετε οτι εγγυω το ψεροω	horticultural information that Jesus did not include.
33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.	33 so, you too, when you see all these things, recognize that He is near, right at the door.	33 ουτωω και υμειω οταν ιδητε παντα ταυτα γινωσκετε οτι εγγυω εστιν επι ψυραιω	33 ουτωω και υμειω οταν ιδητε παντα ταυτα γινωσκετε οτι εγγυω εστιν επι ψυραιω	Removal of the legal 'shall' and changing of the tense. Substituted 'know He is near' for 'know it is near.' The larger context is the coming of the kingdom, 'it', not the coming of the Son 'he', and for a believer 'He' is always near.
34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.	34 "Truly I say to you, this generation will not pass away until all these things take place.	34 αμην λεγω υμιν ου μη παρελψη η γενεα αυτη εωω αν παντα ταυτα γενηται	34 αμην λεγω υμιν <b>οτι</b> ου μη παρελψη η γενεα αυτη εωω [αν] παντα ταυτα γενηται	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' Substitute 'take place' for 'be fulfilled.'
35 Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.	35 "Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away.	35 ο ουρανοω και η γη παρελευσονται οι δε λογοι μου ου μη παρελψουσιν	35 ο ουρανοω και η γη παρελευσεται οι δε λογοι μου ου μη παρελψουσιν	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 2x

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
36 But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.	36 "But of that day and hour no one knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son, but the Father alone.	36 περι δε τησ ημερασ εκεινησ και τησ ωρασ ουδεις οιδεν ουδε οι αγγελοι των ουρανων ει μη ο πατηρ μου μονος	36 περι δε τησ ημερασ εκεινησ και <del>τησ</del> ωρασ ουδεις οιδεν ουδε οι αγγελοι των ουρανων <b>ουδε ο υιος</b> ει μη ο πατηρ <del>μου</del> μονος	Added 'nor the Son' and deleted 'my' from Father as per the delinquent minority Greek text.
37 But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.	37 "For the coming of the Son of Man will be just like the days of Noah.	37 ωσπερ δε αι ημεραι του νωε ουτως εσται και η παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	37 ωσπερ <del>δε</del> <b>γαρ</b> αι ημεραι του νωε ουτως εσται η παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' Lost the contraction according to the delinquent minority Greek text. Weakened contrast with 'just like.'
38 For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,	38 "For as in those days before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered the ark,	38 ωσπερ γαρ ησαν εν ταισ ημεραισ ταισ προ του κατακλυσμο υ τρωγοντεσ και πινοντεσ γαμουντεσ και εκγαμιζοντεσ αχρι ησ ημερασ εισηλψεν νωε εις την κιβωτον	38 <del>ωσπερ</del> <b>ωσπερ</b> γαρ ησαν εν ταισ ημεραισ <b>[εκειναισ]</b> ταισ προ του κατακλυσμο υ τρωγοντεσ και πινοντεσ γαμουντεσ και γαμιζοντεσ αχρι ησ ημερασ εισηλψεν νωε εις την κιβωτον	Reasonable, despite the delinquent minority Greek text modifications.

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.	39 and they did not understand until the flood came and took them all away; so will the coming of the Son of Man be.	39 και ουκ εγνωσαν εωπι ηλψεν ο κατακλυσμοπι και ηρεν απανταπι ουτωπι εσται και η παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	39 και ουκ εγνωσαν εωπι ηλψεν ο κατακλυσμοπι και ηρεν απανταπι ουτωπι εσται η παρουσια του υιου του ανθρωπου	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.'
40 Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.	40 "Then there will be two men in the field; one will be taken and one will be left.	40 τοτε δυο εσονται εν τω αγρω ο ειπι παραλαμβανεται και ο ειπι αφιεται	40 τοτε εσονται δυο εν τω αγρω <del>ει</del> πι παραλαμβανεται και <del>ει</del> πι αφιεται	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' Presumptuously added 'men.'
41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.	41 "Two women will be grinding at the mill; one will be taken and one will be left.	41 δυο αληψουσαι εν τω μυλωνι μια παραλαμβανεται και μια αφιεται	41 δυο αληψουσαι εν τω μυλω μια παραλαμβανεται και μια αφιεται	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 3x
42 Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.	42 "Therefore be on the alert, for you do not know which day your Lord is coming.	42 γρηγορειτε ουν οτι ουκ οιδατε ποια ωρα ο κυριοπι υμων ερχεται	42 γρηγορειτε ουν οτι ουκ οιδατε ποια <del>ωρα</del> <b>ημερα</b> ο κυριοπι υμων ερχεται	Wordy 'be on the alert' substituted for 'watch.' Substitute 'which day' for 'what hour' as per the delinquent minority Greek.

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
43 But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.	43 "But be sure of this, that if the head of the house had known at what time of the night the thief was coming, he would have been on the alert and would not have allowed his house to be broken into.	43 εκεινο δε γινωσκετε οτι ει ηδει ο οικοδεσποτη π ποια φυλακη ο κλεπτησ ερχεται εγρηγορησεν αν και ουκ αν ειασεν διορυγηναι την οικιαν αυτου	43 εκεινο δε γινωσκετε οτι ει ηδει ο οικοδεσποτη π ποια φυλακη ο κλεπτησ ερχεται εγρηγορησεν αν και ουκ αν ειασεν διορυχηναι την οικιαν αυτου	Reasonable, but notice the word-smithing so that a copyright might be obtained, and that “broken up” differs from “broken into”.
44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.	44 "For this reason you also must be ready; for the Son of Man is coming at an hour when you do not think He will.	44 δια τουτο και υμεισ γινεσψε ετοιμοι οτι η ωρα ου δοκειτε ο υιοσ του ανθρωπου ερχεται	44 δια τουτο και υμεισ γινεσψε ετοιμοι οτι η ου δοκειτε ωρα ο υιοσ του ανθρωπου ερχεται	Awkward and wordy, compared to excellent translation of Henry Savile of the 4 <sup>th</sup> company of the Oxford Group.
45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season?	45 "Who then is the faithful and sensible slave whom his master put in charge of his household to give them their food at the proper time?	45 τιω αρα εστιν ο πιστοσ δουλос και φρονιμοσ ον κατεστησεν ο κυριοσ αυτου επι τησ ψεραπειασ αυτου του διδοναι αυτοισ την τροφην εν	45 τιω αρα εστιν ο πιστοσ δουλос και φρονιμοσ ον κατεστησεν ο κυριοσ επι τησ οικετειασ αυτου του δουναι αυτοισ την τροφην εν καιρω	Substituted 'slave' and 'master' for 'servant' and 'lord'. That's just opinionated and wrong, and they did it 187 times! Substituted 'sensible' for 'wise.' Whereas the Bible uses 'wise' 14 times the NAS uses wise 5x, shrewd 2x, sensible 2x, prudent 5x. Very inconsistent.

# Chapter 8 – Verbal Plenary Inspiration vs Modernist Paraphrase

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
		καιρω		
46 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing.	46 "Blessed is that slave whom his master finds so doing when he comes.	46 μακαριοσ ο δουλοσ εκεινοσ ον ελψων ο κυριοσ αυτου ευρησει ποιουντα ουτωσ	46 μακαριοσ ο δουλοσ εκεινοσ ον ελψων ο κυριοσ αυτου ευρησει ουτωσ ποιουντα	Substituted 'slave' and 'master' for 'servent' and 'lord'. That's just opinionated and wrong, and they did it 187 times!
47 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods.	47 "Truly I say to you that he will put him in charge of all his possessions.	47 αμην λεγω υμιν οτι επι πασιν τοιω υπαρχουσιν αυτου καταστησει αυτον	47 αμην λεγω υμιν οτι επι πασιν τοιω υπαρχουσιν αυτου καταστησει αυτον	Reasonable, but again, substitution of “will” for a proper “shall”.
48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming;	48 "But if that evil slave says in his heart, 'My master is not coming for a long time,'	48 εαν δε ειπη ο κακοσ δουλοσ εκεινοσ εν τη καρδια αυτου χρονιζει ο κυριοσ μου ελπειν	48 εαν δε ειπη ο κακοσ δουλοσ εκεινοσ εν τη καρδια αυτου χρονιζει μου ο κυριοσ	Substituted 'slave' and 'master' for 'servent' and 'lord'. That's just opinionated and wrong, and they did it 187 times!

King James Bible	NASV <sup>2</sup>	TR <sup>10</sup>	W&H <sup>11</sup>	NASV Deficiencies
49 And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken;	49 and begins to beat his fellow slaves and eat and drink with drunkards;	49 και αρξεται τυπτειν τουσ συνδουλουσ εσπειν δε και πινειν μετα των μεψυοντων	49 και αρξεται τυπτειν τουσ συνδουλουσ αυτου εσπει δε και πινη μετα των μεψυοντων	Substituted 'slave' and 'master' for 'servant' and 'lord'. That's just opinionated and wrong, and they did it 187 times!
50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of,	50 the master of that slave will come on a day when he does not expect him and at an hour which he does not know,	50 ηξει ο κυριοσ του δουλου εκεινου εν ημερα η ου προσδοκα και εν ωρα η ου γινωσκει	50 ηξει ο κυριοσ του δουλου εκεινου εν ημερα η ου προσδοκα και εν ωρα η ου γινωσκει	Substituted 'slave' and 'master' for 'servant' and 'lord'. That's just opinionated and wrong, and they did it 187 times!
51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.	51 and will cut him in pieces and assign him a place with the hypocrites; in that place there will be weeping and gnashing of teeth.	51 και διχοτομησει αυτον και το μεροσ αυτου μετα των υποκριτων ψησει εκει εσται ο κλαυσμοσ και ο βρυγμοσ των οδοντων	51 και διχοτομησει αυτον και το μεροσ αυτου μετα των υποκριτων ψησει εκει εσται ο κλαυσμοσ και ο βρυγμοσ των οδοντων	Substituted weaker 'will' for the legal 'shall.' 2x

## Chapter 9 The Bible Cannon

*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. Hebrews 11:1-3*

The sixty-six books of the Holy Bible are the embodiment of the divine revelation of God to man, but by what measure does one determine that these books are genuine, that these books are credible, and that these books are canonical? Similarly, by what measure does one exclude “The Gospel of Thomas”<sup>89</sup> or “The Shepherd of Hermas”<sup>90</sup> from the Holy Bible. The best and most complete answer to these questions is, “We accept only what our Lord Jesus Christ accepted, period.” This answer includes no Church Councils, no (so called) Church Fathers, and no Romish doctrines. Simple as that is, in a thorough Bibliology, it should be explored briefly.

The word canon comes from Greek word κανων (kanon) used five times<sup>91</sup> in the Bible and meaning “rule.” The word derives from a straight cane or reed used for a ruler, a straight edge, or a measuring rod. Since the sixty-six books of the Holy Bible have a straight edge and measuring rod that determines their genuineness and credibility as Holy Scripture, the list of books that pass such a muster is called the canon.

Concerning the “genuineness” of a book Dr. Thiessen writes:

- 
- 89 “The Gospel According to Thomas” is an early Christian writing that attempts to provide insight into oral gospel traditions. Discovered near Nag Hammadi, Egypt, in December 1945, the Coptic-language text, may have been from Syria, where Thomasine traditions were strong. It is composed of 114 sayings attributed to Jesus. Half of these sayings resemble those found in the Gospels, and half were likely added from Gnostic tradition.
- 90 “The Shepherd of Hermes” is a Christian literary work of the mid-2<sup>nd</sup> century. It was bound as part of the New Testament in the Codex Sinaiticus, from Alexandria Egypt. It describes five visions, twelve mandates, and ten parables, as it relies on allegory and pays special attention to the Church, calling the faithful to repent of the sins that have harmed it. The book was originally written in Rome, in the Greek language, and was translated by Rome into the Latin Vulgate.
- 91 See Strong's number 2583 used in 2Cor 10:13,15,16, Gal 6:16, Phil 3:16 and translated *rule* four times, and *line* one time.

Some employ the term “authenticity,” but the present usage prefers the term “genuineness.” The two really mean the same thing. By genuineness we mean that a book is written by the person or persons whose name it bears or, if anonymous, by the person or persons to whom ancient tradition has assigned it, or if not assigned to some definite author or authors, to the time to which tradition has assigned it. A book is said to be forged or spurious if it is not written at the time to which it has been assigned. The *Clementine Homilies* are assigned to Clement of Rome, but criticism is now practically unanimous in its view that they were not written by Clement but by some Ebionitic writer or writers, perhaps from the Elkesiatic sect of Ebionitism. The *Revelation of Paul* is inscribed to “the holy Apostle Paul,” but we know that it is “spurious” or “forged.” *The Gospel of Thomas* pretends to be by the Apostle Thomas, but it is not genuine. *The Apostles' Creed* is not genuine, because it was not composed by the Apostles. *Robinson Crusoe* is genuine, since it was written by Defoe, although its story is fictitious. So *Gulliver's Travels* is genuine, being written by Dean Swift, but the accounts in it are fictitious.<sup>92</sup>

The thirty-nine books of the Old Testament are genuine because our Lord Jesus Christ accepted them as such, and because the Holy Bible itself gives witness to their genuineness. The twenty-seven books of the New Testament are genuine because our Lord Jesus Christ ordained twelve apostles to write them, and the books can be traced to one of those apostle's hands or their authority<sup>93</sup>. Likewise, the Holy Bible itself gives witness to their genuineness.

A book is *credible* when it relates matters truthfully. A credible account must be truthful and pure. It is corrupt if it is not truthful, and it is corrupted when it has been altered from the original, altered so that it says something different than the original. The thirty-nine books of the

---

92 Thiessen, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, 1949, 91.

93 The Gospel of Mark was written by Mark under the authority of the Apostle Peter and the Gospel of Luke, and book of Acts by Luke under the authority of the Apostle Paul.

Old Testament are credible because our Lord Jesus Christ accepted them as such, and because the Holy Bible itself gives witness that God himself would ensure they remained credible to all generations. The twenty-seven books of the New Testament are credible because our Lord Jesus Christ commissioned and inspired his twelve apostles to write and/or authorize them as such, and because the Holy Bible itself gives witness that God himself would ensure they remained credible to all generations.

This canonization of the sixty-six books of the Holy Bible is quite unique and needs to be explored in more detail. Baptists have accepted the Holy Bible as their sole source of all faith and practice. No Roman Church, Papal decree, Roman Council, Romish Church Father, or Church tradition is an acceptable source for that faith and practice. Consequently none of these constitute a good source for what books should be, and should not be, considered Holy Scripture. That must be determined by The Church Father, (the one and only Church father) our Lord Jesus Christ, and the only true witness of “evidence of things not seen,” the Holy Scriptures themselves. The Bible is thus *self-authenticating*, and Charles Ryrie gives an excellent witness to that truth.

*Self-authentication.* It is essential to remember that the Bible is self-authenticating since its books were breathed out by God (2 Tim. 3:16). In other words, the books were canonical the moment they were written. It was not necessary to wait until various councils could examine the books to determine if they were acceptable or not. Their canonicity was inherent within them, since they came from God. People and councils only recognized and acknowledged what is true because of the intrinsic inspiration of the books as they were written. No Bible book became canonical by action of some church council.<sup>94</sup>

While there may be some profit in studying the decisions of men about the acceptance of the canon. And certainly it is profitable to see the other evidences for holding to the canon of the sixty-six books we hold, but consider first the foundation of a canon being what God says,

---

94 Charles Ryrie, *Basic Theology*, 105.

not what man says.

### **The Baptist Canon of “All Scripture.”**

The two things that Baptist rely upon to authenticate that the sixty-six books called the Holy Bible are the Holy Scriptures, and all of the Holy Scriptures, are the “Word” and the “Word.” These are the straight edge and measuring rods used to make sure the books of the Bible measure up to a canon. The “Word” that was made flesh said, I am the way, I am the truth, and I am the life. Our Lord Jesus Christ accepted the Hebrew Scriptures with this qualification “For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.” (Matthew 5:18) We should accept no less,... and no other.

The second “Word” is the inerrant, infallible, inspired Word of God. The Holy Bible itself has distinct qualifiers of what is, and what is not, Holy Scripture. Now there is a reason why nobody has invented a self-licking ice-cream cone, and logic denies the effectiveness of circular reasoning, but the Holy Bible is inspired because it says it is inspired and profitable that way. Likewise the Holy Scripture is Holy because it self-authenticates.

#### ***The Old Testament Baptist Canon.***

The Word that became flesh, and the Word that is inspired by God canonize the thirty-nine books of the Old Testament. The Hebrew Bible that was accepted and called Holy Scripture in the time of Christ was grouped into the Law, the Prophets, and the Kethuvim (the Writings). These three groupings were called Holy Scripture while other writings, such as the Apocryphal writings of the day were not considered Holy Scriptures. After the Babylonian captivity Ezra, the “ready scribe” (Ezra 7:6) wrote Chronicles and Ezra, and assembled the books of the Old Testament. Two Jewish scholars, David Kimchi (1160-1232) and Elias Levita (1465-1549) held that the final collection of the Old Testament Canon was completed by Ezra and the members of the Great Synagogue, in the fifth century before Christ. Thiessen sites John Raven, to give three reasons why this is probable:

- (1) The Testimony of Josephus that the canon was

completed in the reign of Artaxerxes Longimanus in the lifetime of Ezra; (2) Ezra was especially concerned with the sacred books. He is called “the scribe” (Neh. 8:1, 4, 9, 13; 12:26, 36). “a ready scribe in the law of Moses” (Ezra 7:6), and “a scribe of the words of the commandments of Jehovah, and of his Statues to Israel” (Ezra 7:11); (3) the character of Ezra's time was such that the collection of the sacred books may appropriately have been made in it. After the Exile the people were founding anew the religious institutions of the nation. What could be more natural than to gather the volumes of the sacred library? John H. Raven, *Old Testament Introduction*, (New York: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1910), pp. 32f.<sup>95</sup>

Thiessen also amply uses the Word of God to prove the Word that became flesh accepted the Hebrew Holy Scriptures.

The Proof from Christ's Reception of the Old Testament. Christ received the Old Testament as relating truthfully the events and doctrines of which it treats (Matt. 5:17, 18; John 10:34-36; Luke 24:27, 44, 45). He definitely endorsed a number of the main teaching of the Old Testament as true; as, for example: The creation of the universe by God (Mark 13:19); the direct creation of man (Matt. 19:4, 5); the personality of Satan and his malignant character (John 8:44); the destruction of the world by a flood in the days of Noah (Luke 17:26, 27); the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah and the rescue of Lot (Luke 17:28-30); the revelation of God to Moses at the Bush (Mark 12:26); the Mosaic authorship of the Pentateuch; the giving of the manna in the wilderness (John 6:32); the existence of the tabernacle (Luke 6:3, 4); the experience of Jonah in the big fish (Matt. 12:39, 40); and the unity of Isaiah (Matt. 8:17; Luke 4:17, 18).... If He was God manifest in the flesh He knew what were the facts, and if He knew them, He could not accommodate Himself to any erroneous views of

---

95 Thiessen, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, 103.

His day when it comes to matters of such fundamental importance, and be honest. His testimony must, therefore, be accepted as true, or He must be rejected as a religious teacher.<sup>96</sup>

Further, Charles Ryrie gives three evidences from the Old Testament that the Word of God validates the Word of God, and then three evidences from the New Testament for the same:

### **The Evidence of the Old Testament Itself**

1. *From the Law.* There are a number of references in the Old Testament to the Law of Moses as being authoritative. Here are some of those references: Joshua 1:7-8; 23:6; 1Kings 2:3; 2Kings 14:6; 21:8; 23:25; Ezra 6:18; Nehemiah 13:1; Daniel 9:11; Malachi 4:4. Such references validate the inspired nature of Moses' writings in the first five books of the Old Testament where he recorded the Law.

2. *From the Prophets.* The prophets claimed to be speaking the Word of God, and their prophecies were recognized as authoritative. Notice three references: Joshua 2:8-9; 2Chronicles 36:22-23 compared with Ezra 1:1-4; Daniel 9:2 compared with Jeremiah 25:11-12.

3. *From Malachi 4:5.* In Malachi 4:5 there is an indication that the prophetic witness would end with Malachi and not begin again until coming of an Elijah-type prophet in the person of John the Baptist (Matt. 17:11-12)...

### **The Evidence of the New Testament.**

1. *The quotations of the Old Testament in the New.* There are some 250 quotes from the Old Testament books in the New Testament. None is from the Apocrypha. All Old Testament books are quoted except Esther, Ecclesiastes, and the Song of Solomon.

2. *Matthew 5:17.* Here the Lord said that the Law and the Prophets were authoritative because they were sure to be fulfilled. This twofold division covers all of the Old

---

96 Ibid., 98.

Testament.

3. *Luke 11:51*. Here the Lord said something definitive about the extent of the canon of the Old Testament which He accepted. In condemning the leaders of the Jewish people for killing God's messengers throughout their history, He charged them of being guilty of shedding the blood of all the righteous from Abel to Zechariah. Now the murder of Abel is recorded in Genesis 4, and the murder of Zechariah in 2 Chronicles 24 which in the arrangement of the Hebrew canon was the last book in order (as Malachi is in our arrangements). So the Lord was saying, "From the first to the last murder recorded in the Old Testament." Now, of course, there were other murders of God's messengers recorded in the Apocrypha, but the Lord does not include them. Evidently He did not consider the books of the Apocrypha to be of equal authority with the books from Genesis to 2 Chronicles.<sup>97</sup>

Thus the Holy Bible, especially the Hebrew Bible is both self-authenticating, and Christ authenticated. But it is also seen that there are some books that do not belong to the Hebrew Scripture. Consider that status for the Greek Septuagint and the Greek Apocryphal books.

The "Septuagint," a Greek rendition of the Hebrew Old Testament produced in Alexandria Egypt and thought, by some modernist scholars, to have been in existence in Christ's day, was not, and is not to this day, accepted as the Hebrew Scripture. Some modern scholars suppose in error that Christ and his disciples quoted from the Greek Septuagint, but Christ knew Hebrew well, as did all his Hebrew disciples. They accepted only the Hebrew Scripture, and it is the Hebrew language, not the Greek, that has the jot and the tittle, which Christ spoke so emphatically about. There is more evidence that the Septuagint copied the holy Apostle's Greek translations of Hebrew than there is that the Septuagint even existed in the first century. The Bible believer cannot believe "too much" Bible, and modernist scholars believe far too little of it. The Septuagint has always been considered a corrupt translation, and those who make authoritative reference to it are on dangerous ground.

---

<sup>97</sup> Charles C. Ryrie, *Basic Theology*, 106.

The Hebrew Scriptures and our Lord Jesus Christ rejected the Apocrypha books. Apocrypha means “hidden” but Webster defines it as “of doubtful authenticity,” and these books were not considered by Hebrews as part of the Holy Scriptures. Nor were they copied in the Hebrew Masoratic Text, none of them were even written in Hebrew. Our Lord Jesus Christ accepted the Hebrew Scriptures as complete, and, would he have wanted, he could have authenticated the Apocryphal books. He did not. The Roman Catholic Church called these “The Deuterocanonical Books” (from the Greek meaning “belonging to the second canon”), but the early believers called them “Pseudepigrapha” (also “pseudepigraph” or “pseudepigraphs”) or falsely-attributed works. Ergo the fifteen books: 1 Esdras, 2 Esdras, Tobit, Judith, Esther (Greek), Wisdom of Solomon, Ecclesiasticus (Sira), Baruch, Epistle of Jeremiah, Prayer of Azariah, Susanna, Bel and the Dragon, Prayer of Manasseh, 1 Maccabees, and 2 Maccabees, that are accepted as Scripture by the Roman Catholic Church, were rejected by the Hebrews, the Christ, and true Christianity.

The Apocrypha books were translated into English by the King James Translators, but they were positioned between the Old and New Testaments with the maps and genealogies. It was clearly stated at the time, that outside of the Roman Church, the Apocrypha had no Scriptural standing, they are not inspired, and they are not the Word of God.<sup>98</sup> McClure, writing his book *Translators Revived*, states of the Apocryphal books, “which in those times, were more read and accounted of than now, though by no means were they placed on a level with the canonical books of Scripture.”<sup>99</sup> He then footnotes:

The reasons assigned for not admitting the apocryphal books into the *canon*, or *list*, of inspired Scriptures are briefly the following. 1. Not one of them is in the Hebrew language, which was alone used by the inspired historians and poets of the Old Testament. 2. Not one of the writers lays any claim to inspiration. 3. These books were never acknowledged as sacred Scriptures by the Jewish Church,

---

98 The Church of England's *Thirty-Nine Articles*.

99 Alexander McClure, *Translators Revived, Biographical Notes of the KJV Bible Translators*, Maranatha Publications Worthington PA, 185.

and therefore were never sanctioned by the Lord. 4. They were not allowed a place among the sacred books, during the first four centuries of the Christian Church. 5. They contain fabulous statements, and statements which contradict not only the canonical Scriptures but themselves; as when, in the two Books of Maccabees, Antiochus Epiphanes is made to die three different deaths in as many different places. 6. It inculcates doctrines at variance with the Bible, such as prayers for the dead and sinless perfection. 7. It teaches immoral practices, such as lying, suicide, assassination and magical incantation. For these and other reasons, the Apocryphal books, which are all in Greek, except one which is extant only in Latin, are valuable only as ancient documents, illustrative of the manner, language, opinions and history of the East.<sup>100</sup>

Thus it is that the thirty-nine books of the Old Testament, and only those thirty-nine books, were accepted by the living Lord Jesus Christ as Holy Scripture. They only are the Old Testament books that are accepted by the Bible believer to this day. It would behoove a believer to learn their names by heart.

#### The Thirty-nine Books of the Old Testament.

Genesis	2Chronicles	Daniel
Exodus	Ezra	Hosea
Leviticus	Nehemiah	Joel
Numbers	Esther	Amos
Deuteronomy	Job	Obadiah
Joshua	Psalms	Jonah
Judges	Proverbs	Micah
Ruth	Ecclesiastes	Nahum
1Samuel	Song of Solomon	Habakkuk
2Samuel	Isaiah	Zephaniah
1Kings	Jeremiah	Haggai
2Kings	Lamentations	Zechariah
1Chronicles	Ezekiel	Malachi

---

<sup>100</sup> Ibid. 185-186

### *The New Testament Baptist Canon.*

The Word that became flesh and the Word that is inspired by God canonize the twenty-seven books of the New Testament. Our Lord Jesus Christ ordained twelve apostles and commissioned them write the Scriptures of the New Testament. The New Covenant's foundation was only to be laid by twelve Hebrew Apostles. They wrote twenty-four of the twenty-seven books. The Gospel According to Mark was authenticated by his constant companion, the Apostle Peter, and the Gospel According to Luke, and the Acts of the Apostles, was authenticated by Dr. Luke's constant companion, the Apostle Paul. Look what Scripture states about the apostles and the foundation:

*... And (ye) are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone;...*

Ephesians 2:19-22

*And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.*

Revelation 21:14

*I (the Apostle Paul) have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*

1Corinthians 3:10-11

Henry C. Thiessen gives four broad principles which aided in the determination of which books should be accepted as canonical.

The first was apostolicity: was the book written by an apostle, or, if not, did the author of the book sustain such a relation to an apostle as to raise his book to the level of the apostolic books? The latter question was especially used in determining the canonicity of the Gospel of Mark, the

Gospel of Luke, the Book of Acts, and the Epistle to the Hebrews. The second was contents: were the contents of a given book of such a spiritual character as to entitle it to this rank? On the basis of this test most of the apocryphal and pseudepigraphical books were eliminated and the ones which we now have retained. The third was universality: was the book universally received in the church? ... The final test was inspiration: did the book give evidence of being divinely inspired? This was the ultimate test: everything finally had to give way to it. Henry C. Thiessen, *Introduction to the New Testament*, (4th ed., Grand Rapids, Mich., Wm. B. Erdmans Publishing Co., 1948), p. 10.<sup>101</sup>

Concerning the formation of the Canon of the New Testament Thiessen cites George Salmon:

It is a remarkable fact that we have no early interference of Church authority in the making of a Canon; no Council discussed this subject; no formal decisions were made. The Canon seems to have shaped itself... Let us remember that this non-interference of authority is a valuable topic of evidence to the genuineness of our Gospels; for it thus appears that it was owing to no adventitious authority, but by their own weight, that they crushed all rivals out of existence. George Salmon, *A Historical Introduction to the Study of the Books of the New Testament* (3<sup>rd</sup> ed., London: John Murray, 1888), p. 121<sup>102</sup>

The last living apostle, the Apostle John, was given this commission by our Lord Jesus Christ, “*Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter; The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks*” (Rev 1:19-20a). The Beloved Apostle then wrote The Gospel of John, and the three Epistles of John, the things which he had seen, the seven messages to the seven churches (Rev 2-3),

---

101 Henry C. Thiessen, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, 104.

102 *ibid.*, 103

the things which are, and the Revelation of Jesus Christ, the things which shall be hereafter. He was further charged that:

*For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book (Rev 22:18-19)*

The Apostle John, then, as per his commission from Christ himself, closed the Canon of the New Testament and penned its final books. Thus it is that the twenty-seven books of the New Testament, and only those twenty-seven books, were accepted by the living Lord Jesus Christ as Holy Scripture. They only are the New Testament books that are accepted by the Bible believer to this day. It would behoove a believer to learn their names by heart.

#### The Twenty-seven Books of the New Testament.

Matthew	Ephesians	Hebrews
Mark	Philippians	James
Luke	Colossians	1 Peter
John	1 Thessalonians	2 Peter
Acts	2 Thessalonians	1 John
Romans	1 Timothy	2 John
1 Corinthians	2 Timothy	3 John
2 Corinthians	Titus	Jude
Galatians	Philemon	Revelation

### The Canon of Scripture – Parting Thoughts

For the Baptists, who hold to the inerrant, infallible, inspired Word of God as their sole authority of all faith and practice, ... and their Canon, the consideration of which books are Holy Scripture, and which books are not Holy Scripture was all settled by the Word that became flesh, our Lord Jesus Christ, the only Church Father, and the Word of

God, the Holy Scriptures themselves. With its own weight and its own self-authentication the Holy Bible testifies that it is genuine, credible, and a completed canon.

There have always been people, scholars, and councils who disagree about the canon of these sixty-six books of the Holy Bible. From the time of their inspiration a books eligibility for the canon is secured by God. But this assurance sometimes took time to be acknowledged by mere men. By the end of the second century the canon was complete. Seven books, labeled by mere men as antilegomena, were then recognized as apostolic. These books, Hebrews, 2 and 3 John, 2 Peter, Jude, James and Revelation, were in controversy by mere men for some time, but God secured them for believers since the day that they dripped from the pens of their authors. We rejoice that mere men do not secure the canon of Scripture, God does.

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works.*

2Timothy 3:16-17

*We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.*

2Peter 1:19-21

*The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times. Thou shalt keep them, O LORD, thou shalt preserve them from this generation for ever.*

Psalms 12:6-7

## Chapter 10 Christian Biblical Hermeneutics

Christian Biblical hermeneutics, the study of the principles of interpretation of Holy Scripture, has an important part in systematic theology, and that part seems to fit right into Bibliology. It “seems to fit” because other systematic theology works did not include hermeneutics at all. The Father of Systematic Theology, Charles Hodge, does not even have a Bibliology section, and included one page on interpretation in his section “The Protestant Rule of Faith.”<sup>103</sup> Dr. Chafer's systematic theology did have a five page chapter on interpretation, but it is so poorly organized and wordy that we need not say more about it here. Dr. Thiessen followed Charles Hodge, the Father of Systematic Theologies, and divided theology into four parts, Exegetical, Historical, Systematic, and Practical. He thought hermeneutics to be part of ones exegetical theology, and included none of it in his systematic theology<sup>104</sup> So to, for all previous authors of systematic theologies. We have herein contended that a systematic theology should be exegetical, historical, and practical in every sense of systematic completeness.

Hermeneutics was also not given significant emphasis in the Bible doctrine books used by Independent Baptists. Erickson, Ryrie, Bancroft, even this author's favorite professor Dr. Cambron did not cover hermeneutics, leaving it as a separate entity for ones seminary training. Here, with a corrected definition of *systematic*, hermeneutics has a perfect fit in ones Bibliology.

What is hermeneutics? By definition it is the study of the principles of interpretation of Holy Scripture. The word, *hermeneutics*, comes from the Greek Bible, “Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation<2509>, A stone” (John 1:42). The Greek Strong#2059, is ἐρμηνεύω - hermeneuo. (cf John 1:38, 42, 9:7, and Hebrews 7:2). It means “to explain in words, expound, or interpret.”

---

103 Charles Hodge, *Systematic Theology: Volume I-IV* (Charles Scribner & Company, 1871), (Hardback- Grand Rapids, Mich., Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1940), 151, 199.

104 Henry Clarence Thiessen, *Introductory Lectures in Systematic Theology*, WM. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1949, 46.

What relationship does *exegesis* have with hermeneutics? In exegesis the reader of Scripture applies the principles of hermeneutics to arrive at a correct understanding of the text. Thus, exegesis is hermeneutics in action. The word *exegesis* also comes from the Greek Bible, “And he took the blind man by the hand, and led <1806> him out of the town” (Mark 8:23) the Greek Strong#1806 ἐξαγω – exago. AV-lead out 6, bring out 5, bring forth 1, fetch out 1; used 13 times in the Bible; means “to lead out.” In English it shows up in *exposition*, *explanation*; especially: an explanation or critical interpretation of a text.

The importance of hermeneutics is realized when one hears the line, “Well that is just your interpretation of what the Bible says.” That line has been propagated and popularized by bad hermeneutics called allegorical hermeneutics. There needs to be some rule or standardized method of how Biblical interpretation is done and that standardization is called Christian Biblical Hermeneutics. That categorization is carefully selected. There is, as it were, Roman Catholic hermeneutics, Protestant hermeneutics, Talmudical hermeneutics, philosophical hermeneutics, even what could be called Friedrich Schleiermacher<sup>105</sup> hermeneutics.

Herein Christian Biblical hermeneutics starts with the premise that “All Scripture is given by inspiration” (2Tim 3:16), that Scripture is infallible, it will not fail, “For the word of the LORD is right; and all his works are done in truth” (Psalm 33:4), and that Scripture is inerrant, it is without error, “The words of the LORD are pure words: as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times” (Psalm 12:6 ). Scripture is thus revelation from God, “The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding unto the simple” (Psalm 119:130 ) and the Holy Bible is not a man made book.

Thus, Friedrich Schleiermacher's hermeneutics and all his “Higher Criticism” is herein completely dismissed. Also Philosophical hermeneutics and linguistic hermeneutics, which only supposes that “Scripture might be more than ordinary text but it is certainly no less

---

105 Friedrich Schleiermacher (1768 – 1834) rejected orthodox Christianity and is called the “Father of Modern Liberal Theology and Christianity.” He was a rationalist founder of “Higher Criticism” also known as “the historical critical method,” which views the Holy Bible as a purely man made book and strives to understand the text's primitive meaning in its original historical context.

than ordinary text,” are categorically dismissed. These do not accept Scripture as holy, inspired, or God given, and they generally attempt to understand a far broader and more philosophical implication of hermeneutics, one for all other literature. Their hallmark became Rudolf Bultmann's<sup>106</sup> existentialism<sup>107</sup> wherein “the voice of liberal Christianity” tried to stamp out all Bible miracles as myth, and to discover the “historical Jesus.”

Likewise, Christian Biblical hermeneutics rejects Talmudical hermeneutics. The rabbis of the Talmud pass on an Oral law that is derived from the Hebrew Bible by extrapolating superfluous or missing words, by using a word's numerical value, or transposing a word's letters. Such hocus-pocus methods of interpretation deny the Lord Jesus Christ as Lord and Creator of the World and are wholly rejected in this systematic Bibliology.

Catholic hermeneutics allows only an interpretation which aligns with the Roman Catholic Church's theological tradition. The Roman Catholic Church's theology need not be an object of study for a Bible believer, and their hermeneutics is only analyzed as bad example. Roman Catholics, of course, reject Protestant hermeneutics which allow such widely differing interpretations that they may prove almost anything using the Bible. Protestant theologians are in so much conflict about Biblical interpretation that there are a thousand listed Protestant denominations (Catholics falsely site 33,000)! Recall that a denomination is a group of congregations under an ordained, organized control and that Baptists are not Protestants nor a denomination, being pre-Roman Catholic, and autonomous, independent congregations.

Thus we herein reject Catholic hermeneutics because it is based on Catholic tradition, and we reject Protestant hermeneutics because it is based on... almost nothing and practically anything. Martin Luther (1484 – 1546) and John Calvin (1509 – 1564) made some initial great strides away from the methods of the Roman Church. The reformation was fine as far as it went, but it did not go far enough, and Reformed

---

106 Rudolf Bultmann (1884 – 1976) , the predominate voice in liberal Christianity, was a German Lutheran theologian who pursued the existential “demythologization” of the Bible and the discovery of the “historical Jesus.”

107 Existentialism is a philosophy wherein everything must be derived from the experience of existence; therein all supernatural and all the Bible's miracles are rejected as myth.

Augustinian Theology quickly backslid into the old catholic ruts of ecclesiology, predestination, and allegorical interpretation. They categorically use slipshod hermeneutics.

Thus, Christian Biblical hermeneutics is a study of the principles of interpretation of the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Word of God that encompasses 1) a logical, orderly method, 2) an art that must be practiced in the field, and 3) a Spiritual act depending on the leading of the Holy Spirit. The latter of these is most important. Dr. Osborn states its emphasis this way,

“Modern scholars too often ignore the sacred dimension and approach the Bible purely as literature, considering the sacral aspect to be almost a genre. Yet human efforts can never properly divine the true message of the Word of God.... We must depend upon God and not just upon humanly derived hermeneutical principles when studying the Bible.”<sup>108</sup>

## **A Historical Overview of Hermeneutics.**

A historical overview of hermeneutics is vital “*for there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ*” (Jude 1:4). Such false teachers have contended that (1) Scripture is NOT to be interpreted according to normal communication rules. (Practicing an allegorical approach, i.e. Catholics, Protestants, Reformers and Reformed); (2) Deceivers saying Scripture has many meanings: A Literal Sense, A Moral or Ethical Sense, A Spiritual-Allegorical-Mystical Sense; and (3) Misleaders saying that in the Bible words and even certain letters, have SECRET significance to be deciphered, ergo there are many meanings and none can be certain.

Understanding outlying methods of hermeneutics and their origins provides a balanced perspective and helps identify predecessor pitfalls and their ill effects on our current situation, i.e. people saying “That is

---

108 Grant R. Osborne, *The Hermeneutical Spiral, A Comprehensive Introduction to Biblical Interpretation*, InterVarsity Press, 1991, 5-6.

just your interpretation.” Further, it helps to understand that Origen, and Augustine, founded and exploited the allegorical method and Luther and Calvin prescribed better hermeneutics than they practiced. Knowing and practicing the good principles of Christian Biblical hermeneutics is important, but knowing its contenders helps keep one on the straight and narrow.

Before delving into the history of bad hermeneutics lets state clearly that Christian Biblical hermeneutics is based on the literal-grammatical-historical method of interpretation, that is, that a text should be interpreted according to the rules of grammar and the facts of history. Ergo Christian Biblical hermeneutics avoids the “letterism” of the Jews, the “allegorisms” of the Alexandrians, and the dogmatic exegesis of traditions (or orthodoxy), in order to exploit its literal, grammatical, and historical context.

A Listerine mouthwash logo was developed after it was caught lying to the public; their new slogan was, “Listerine, it says what it does, and it does what it says.” A similar motto could be applied to our hermeneutics; “The Holy Bible, it says what it means, and it means what it says.”

The schools of thought on hermeneutics originate from three primary locations. Jerusalem yielded to Jewish Midrash, Alexandria Egypt yielded to allegorical methods (which found root in Roman Catholicism), and the Church at Antioch yielded to the Spirit of God and stuck with Jesus' methods of a literal-grammatical-historical interpretation for all Scripture.

## Jewish Exegesis

In his text *Hermeneutics*<sup>109</sup> Virkler gives a reasonable historical overview of hermeneutics. He explains Jewish Exegesis as follows:

At the time of Christ, Jewish exegesis could be classified into four main types: literal, midrashic, *pesher*, and allegorical.... *Midrash* comes from the Hebrew verb *darash*

---

109 Henry A. Virkler, “*Hermeneutics – Principles and Processes of Biblical Interpretation*”, 2nd Edition, Baker Academic, 1991 [An LBU BI-500 Hermeneutics text in 2011 which exalted the critical text, rejected inerrancy, infallibility, and verbal inspiration of Scripture, and dangerously esteemed the RSV above the KJB.]

meaning to search. Midrash, then, speaks of an inquiry or an exposition. *Midrashic interpretation* included a variety of hermeneutical devices that had developed considerably by the time of Christ... The primary goal of midrash was to highlight and explain the relevance of scriptural teaching in new and changing circumstances.<sup>110</sup>

Jewish exegesis, called Midrash, was largely defined by Rabbi Hillel (Born in Babylon 110 BC, died in Jerusalem AD 10), a famous Jewish sage and scholar. It is collected in the Babylonian Talmud and the Mishnah, a collection of rabbinic commentaries compiled around AD 200, and focused on identification of hidden meanings. In so doing Midrash often lost sight of the literal meaning of a text. It followed a trend toward the more fanciful and (1) gave meaning to texts, phrases, and words without regard to the context in which they were meant to apply; (2) combined texts that contained similar words or phrases whether or not such texts were referring to the same idea; and (3) bestowed interpretive significance on incidental aspects of grammar.<sup>111</sup>

*Pesher interpretation* followed the midrash method but included an emphasis and focus on the end times. Practiced by the Qumran community<sup>112</sup>, *Pesher* interpretation believed that everything the ancient prophets wrote had a veiled prophetic meaning that was Apocalyptic and fulfilled in their community.

Jewish allegorical exegesis was based on the idea that beneath the literal meaning of Scripture lay the true hidden meaning. Virkler gives insight to how allegorical interpretations tend to go far beyond reality to reach fantastic proportions:

Historically, allegory had been developed by the Greeks to resolve the tension between their mythological religious

---

110 Ibid., 45.

111 Ibid., 46.

112 Britannica, s.v. Qumran - Essenes established a monastic community at Qumrān in the mid-2nd century BC. Living apart, like other Essenian communities in Judaea, the members of the Qumrān community turned to apocalyptic visions of the overthrow of the wicked priests of Jerusalem and the ultimate establishment of their own community as the true priesthood and the true Israel. ... The baptism they practiced symbolized repentance and entry into the company of the "Elect of God."

tradition and their philosophical heritage. Because the religious myths contained much that was immoral or otherwise unacceptable, Greek philosophers allegorized these stories; that is, the myths were to be understood not literally but as stories whose real truth lay at a deeper level. At the time of Christ, Jews who wished to remain faithful to the Mosaic tradition and yet adopt Greek philosophy were faced with a similar tension. Some Jews resolved this by allegorizing the Mosaic tradition. Philo(ca. 20 BC-AD 50) is well known in this regard.

Philo believed that the literal meaning of Scripture represented an immature level of understanding; the allegorical meaning was for the mature reader. The allegorical interpretation should be used (1) if the literal meaning seems to say something unworthy of God, (2) if the statement seems to contradict some other statement in Scripture, (3) if the record claims to be an allegory, (4) if expressions are doubled or superfluous words are used, (5) if something already known is repeated, (6) if an expression is varied, (7) if synonyms are employed, (8) if a play on words is possible, (9) if there is anything abnormal in number or tense, or (10) if symbols are present.<sup>113</sup>

The allegorical method has evil roots that, to this day, allow priests, clergy, scholars, and other elitists to lord over “laity”<sup>114</sup> and make Satan’s claim, “Yea, hath God said?...” (Gen 3:1). It came to a full and ugly bloom under Origen of Alexandria Egypt.

## **The School of Alexandria**

Origen, (in full Latin Oregenes Adamantius) (born AD 185, probably in Alexandria, Egypt—died AD 254, in Tyre, Phoenicia) was called “The Father of the Allegorical Method” (Also the “Father of Bible Criticism,” also “A Father of Roman Catholicism”). The

---

113 Henry A. Virkler, “*Hermeneutics*”, 47 (Virkler cites Bernard Ramm, *Protestant Biblical Interpretation*, 3rd rev. ed. (Grand Rapids:Baker, 1970, 26-28).

114 Noah Webster’s 1828 *Dictionary of American English* s.v. laity - The people, as distinguished from the clergy; the body of the people not in orders.

Britannica says of him, “the most important theologian and biblical scholar of the early Greek church,” and “His greatest work is the Hexapla, which is a synopsis of six versions of the Old Testament.” Origen's mentor, Clement of Alexandria (AD 150 – 215) determined that it was impossible for God to keep his promises to Israel, in that Jerusalem was leveled, and every Jew that occupied Israel was annihilated in AD 70. Almost anyone might suppose an original source for the English prose about Humpty Dumpty, so I have supposed it was Clement of Alexandria who thought, “All the King's horses, and all the King's men cannot put Israel together again.” Since Israel, Hebrews, and all Jews were now annihilated, Clement supposed that the catholic church would be the new recipients of every promise that the Old Testament Scriptures made to them.

In response to his mentors oversight, Origen refined an allegorical method which could strip all the promises made to Israel, King David, and the Jews from the Old Testament Scripture and apply them to a catholic church. Little wonder that the Roman Catholic Church sainted both Clement and Origen posthumously a couple hundred years later.

Clement and Origen were instrumental founders of the School of Alexandria. The Britannica says of it:

School of Alexandria, ... founded in the mid-2nd century AD in Alexandria, Egypt. Under its earliest known leaders (Pantaenus, Clement, and Origen), it became a leading centre of the allegorical method of biblical interpretation, espoused a rapprochement between Greek culture and Christian faith, and attempted to assert orthodox Christian teachings against heterodox views in an era of doctrinal flux. Opposing the School of Alexandria was the School of Antioch, which emphasized the literal interpretation of the Bible.<sup>115</sup>

In the hands of the Roman Catholic Church the allegorical method of Bible interpretation became the scourge of Christianity. In their

---

<sup>115</sup> Encyclopedia Britannica s.v. Alexandrian, School of, [www.britannica.com/topic/School-of-Alexandria](http://www.britannica.com/topic/School-of-Alexandria) (Accessed 9/21/2017).

doctrine no one less than the Roman Catholic trained priesthood had the pious maturity to properly interpret the secret, hidden allegorical meanings of Scripture. Others found reading Bibles were killed. millions of Christians were called heretics and burned alive under their doctrine. The Protestants did not readily set aside this practice. Even today Protestants give credence to the allegorical methods, and to the “Clergy” for interpretation of Scripture. The “laity” are disesteemed as a lower class that ought not interpret what they read.

This distinction between “clergy” and “laity” is likely the sin of the Nicolaitons. (ΝΙΚΟΛΑΙΤΗΣ – meaning “destruction of people”, from the Greek root ΝΙΚΟΛΑΟΣ meaning “victor of the people.” Ergo the division of classes, such as clergy and laity, seems to be indicated.) Of this Jesus said to the Church of Pergamos, “*So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate*” (Rev 2:15). Baptists are not Protestants and justly depose allegorical methods and the tag titles of clergy and laity.

## School of Antioch

When the local Church at Jerusalem did not accomplish Acts 1:8, God used Acts 8:1 to scatter them as far as Antioch. (Dyslexics can recall that better than most.) Antioch became the center of Christian activity.

*And it came to pass, that a whole year they (Barnabas and Saul) assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people. And the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch. And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. Acts 11:26-27*

*Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers; as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work whereunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them*

*away.* Acts 13:1-3

It is the School of Antioch which teaches us to interpret Holy Scripture just like Jesus did, with a literal-grammatical-historical hermeneutics. This is the essence of Christian Biblical hermeneutics, and it traces back to our Lord Jesus Christ himself. Even the Encyclopedia Britannica declares this distinction:

School of Antioch, Christian theological institution in Syria, traditionally founded in about ad 200, that stressed the literal interpretation of the Bible and the completeness of Christ's humanity, in opposition to the School of Alexandria (see Alexandria, School of), which emphasized the allegorical interpretation of the Bible and stressed Christ's divinity. Flourishing in the 4th–6th century, the School of Antioch produced several significant theologians, including Diodore of Tarsus, Theodore of Mopsuestia, St. John Chrysostom, and Theodoret of Cyrrhus.<sup>116</sup>

The School of Antioch did not say, “The Holy Bible, it says what it means, and it means what it says,” but they might as well have. The battle lines were drawn and there was no sitting on the fence. One cannot use a little allegorical method and a little literal. One is correct, one is from the pits of hell. Theodore Of Mopsuestia made this clear, the Britannica says of him:

Theodore Of Mopsuestia, (born c. 350, Antioch, Syria—died 428/429, Mopsuestia, Cilicia [now part of Turkey]), Syrian theologian, considered the greatest biblical interpreter of his time and the spiritual head of the exegetical School of Antioch....

As an exegete he used unprecedented critical standards. Instead of the allegorical interpretation employed by the rival exegetical School of Alexandria, Egypt, Theodore used scientific, critical, philological, and historical methods that

---

<sup>116</sup> Encyclopedia Britannica s.v. Antioch, School of, [www.britannica.com/topic/School-of-Antioch](http://www.britannica.com/topic/School-of-Antioch) (Accessed 9/21/2017).

anticipated modern scholarship. By considering the historical circumstances in which the biblical books were written, he anticipated the modern view that many of the Psalms belong to the 2nd century BC and rejected as uncanonical such books as Chronicles, Esdras, and the Catholic Letters.

Theologically, Theodore insisted that Christ's person has two natures: divine and human. Basing this Christological issue on a psychological analysis of personality, he believed that the human and divine natures were some kind of union, as between body and soul. His Christology opposed that of the Alexandrians and curbed speculation at large through his appreciation of the human nature in Christ and his interest in the literal sense of Scripture. He composed a treatise on allegory and history, no longer extant, in which he criticized Origen, considered the most influential theologian of the early Greek church, for ignoring the literal sense of Scripture. Elsewhere, Theodore said that those who interpreted Scripture allegorically "turn everything backwards, since they make no distinction in divine Scripture between what the text says and dreams."<sup>117</sup>

Christian Biblical Hermeneutics can be cleanly outlined when one better understands what is to be avoided. This brief review of the history of hermeneutics clarifies pitfalls of the past and singles out the straight path and narrow way which must be adhered to. The School of Antioch, captures that path, while the School of Jerusalem and its Jewish Midrash, and the School of Alexandria, so exalted by Rome, modernist scholars and Bible critics, and eachs allegorical methods, fall way short of what Jesus taught us about everything, but especially about hermeneutics.

## **Hermeneutics - Believe What Jesus Believed**

Christians ought to take great care to act like, think like, and react like Christ. That is why, at Antioch, we were tagged with that name.

---

<sup>117</sup> Encyclopedia Britannica s.v. Theodore Of Mopsuestia. [www.britannica.com](http://www.britannica.com) (Accessed 9/21/2017).

Ergo our hermeneutics ought to be Christ-like, and we employ those used and propagated from the School of Antioch.

Before delving further into the literal-grammatical-historical methods of a Christian Biblical hermeneutic, it is important to understand how Jesus himself interpreted Holy Scripture. Examine a few quintessential points:

- A. Jesus consistently treated historical narratives as straight forward records of fact.
- B. Jesus often chose as the basis of his teaching those very stories that most modern critics find unacceptable.
- C. Jesus consistently adduced the Scriptures as an authoritative court of appeal in his controversies with scribes and Pharisees
- D. Jesus taught that nothing could pass form the law until all had been fulfilled, and that Scripture cannot be broken.
- E. Jesus used Scripture in his rebuttal to each of Satan's temptations.
- F. Jesus did not differentiate between validity and accuracy of revelation from God versus revelation from observation or historical matters!
- G. Jesus had unquestioning acceptance of All Scripture.

Notice that practicing the hermeneutics that Jesus used is quite simple. Reading the Scriptures as Jesus read them is straightforward and filled with commonsense. There is no hidden meaning, there is no secret understanding, there is no division of clergy and laity or scholar from common-man. Indeed, if there is a division, according to his letter to Corinth it is disparaging to the wise of this world,

*“Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe”*

(1Cor 1:20-21).

In most, if not all, of the hermeneutics texts interpreting what one reads in the Scripture is a very complicated task. In this authors course

requirements at Calvary Theological Seminary, Lansdale PA, under Dr. “Chief” Jordan, I suffered through W. Randolph Tate's book “*Biblical Interpretation, an Integrated Approach*.” He labors for two hundred pages to concluded that one must “examine the labyrinth of available methods and then to choose one, or a mixture of methods, that takes into account the three worlds of hermeneutics—author-centered methods, text-centered methods, and reader-centered methods.” (page 205) Nowhere in Tate's dissertation, even in his author-centered method, is it pondered that the author of Scripture is God. This is not uncommon in hermeneutics texts, they are so busy with the modernist's complicated methods, that they to often overlook the obvious. I am not saying that there is no merit in their study, just that it has very little to do with reading and understanding God's Holy Bible.

A Christian Biblical hermeneutics is a common sense rendering of the Word of God, whereby 1) it is considered literal, not mystical or allegorical, not hiding hidden meanings for only mature, pious, priests, or clergy; 2) it follows common rules of grammar, whereby simile<sup>118</sup>, metaphor<sup>119</sup>, figures of speech, parable, fable<sup>120</sup>, images, and likenesses are readily recognized in their proper context; and 3) it is historically accurate and true, i.e Abraham going to Canaan land was real, not an allusion to a stoic philosopher who leaves sensual understanding (Chaldea) and sees the emptiness of it all (Haran) to become an enlightened philosopher who marries wisdom (Sarah).<sup>121</sup>

These three considerations, the literal-grammatical-historical method of hermeneutics, combine with the seven methodologies that Jesus showed in his interpretations to provide a complete Christian Biblical hermeneutic, which consistently and accurately interprets the LORD God's holy, inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Scripture. Even

---

118 Dictionary s.v. “Simile” - A figure of speech that expresses a resemblance between things of different kinds (usually formed with 'like' or 'as')

119 Dictionary s.v. “Metaphor” - A figure of speech in which an expression is used to refer to something that it does not literally denote in order to suggest a similarity

120 Dictionary s.v. “Fable” - A deliberately false or improbable account, A short moral story (often with animal or animated characters). [The Bible is not a “book of fables” but it does contain two, and only two, fables, Judges 9:7-15 and 2Kings 14:9]

121 Bernard Ramm, “*Protestant Biblical Interpretation*, 3<sup>rd</sup> rev. ed. (Grand Rapids: Baker, 1970), 28, as cited by Virkler, 47-48.

with these methods, however, consistency and accuracy can only be achieved with the presence and leading of the Holy Spirit of God.

### **Hermeneutics and the Premillennial Return of Christ and the Pretribulational Rapture of the Church**

These bullets were developed and expounded with this authors 19<sup>th</sup> Annual Hunt for the Last October Biblical Prophecy Conference. They show how and why Protestant theologians oppose the teaching of the premillennial return of Christ, and the pretribulational rapture of the Church, and seem to fit appropriately in this concluding section on hermeneutics.

- Alexandrian Philosophers Did Not Believe in the Millennial Reign of Jesus Christ
- They developed their own allegorical methods of reading Scripture as they developed their own Alexandrian bibles.
- Clement of Alexandria (150-215 AD) Greek founder of the School of Alexandria and the 'patristic exegete' believing that Scriptures hide their true meaning in allegory.
- Origen of Alexandria (185-254 AD), called 'one of the greatest Christian theologians' but honestly a Greek philosopher emphasizing a mystical-allegorical rendering of Scripture and synthesizing Greek Philosophy with 'Christian' beliefs. Compiler of the Hexapla, and father of Bible criticism.
- Constantine the Great (272-337 AD), the Roman Emperor who decreed - convert to the Christianity or die! He gave the Roman Church its authority and sword, while Augustine gave it its twisted doctrines and Jerome its twisted bible.
- What is a Preterist? In short, they despise the pretribulational / dispensational / rapture-of-the-church Bible Truth.
- Preterism holds that Ancient Israel finds its continuation or fulfillment in the Christian catholic church. From the Latin “praeter” denoting that something is past, Preterists suppose that God is all done with Israel, Hebrews, and Jews and had them annihilated at the destruction of Jerusalem in AD 70. They developed and practice

their allegorical interpretations to transfer all the promises made to Israel to the catholic church.'

- After the destruction of Jerusalem in 70 AD, Origen (184-253 AD) and his mentor Clement of Alexandria Egypt (150-215 AD), both sainted fathers/founders of the upcoming Roman's Catholicism, concluded that that was the complete and forever destruction of all Judaism.
- Gone, in their mind, was any promise for a literal restoration of Israel and their reentry to their promised land. Impossible, in their mind, was a literal fulfillment of Psalms 2:6, "Yet have I set my king upon my holy hill of Zion." God's chosen people, the Hebrews, God's chosen nation, Israel, and God's chosen remnant, Judaism, were indeed, in their mind, annihilated and gone forever. Something must be done, they figured, with all the promises made about Israel's restoration and eternal existence.
- Origen, a renown scholar of Scripture, came through with a method of rejecting what the Bible literally states, and supposing that the Bible was written with a secret and concealed intent. Only the very pious and astute could interpret this secret intent of Holy Scripture. This hermeneutical method, this method of spiritualizing away the literal meaning of Scriptures, is called the allegorical method of Bible interpretation.
- It became the mainstay of Roman Catholicism, wherein if the unapproved commoner were found reading a Bible, he was executed. Luther, Calvin, and all Protestantism rejected this allegorical method for interpreting for "So Great Salvation," but they retained every evil bit of it for keeping Israel annihilated. In their reformed theology the Protestant's Catholic Church is the spiritualized replacement for an annihilated Israel.
- Straight from John Calvin's "Institutes of the Christian Religion" comes this Covenant Theology, where believers are the elect replacement for Israel. His misleading antics about election are much larger than the gross errors captured in a TULIP model of Calvinism. In the larger realm, that wicked concept of an annihilated Israel, never to be restored in the Kingdom of God, is

captured and promoted as Preterism.

- This false teaching of Covenant Theology, Reformed Theology, and Preterism, can trace its roots all the way back to the first century, and in this age of easy access to every published work ever written, they very effectively do just that. It is important to know the root of their error and the evil of this error. It is still a root of false teaching and false teachers. One need only reference the false teachings of amillennialists, Calvinists, or both in one Dr. Harold Camping to illustrate the dangers of this sweeping error.

Staying literal while differentiating simile and metaphor, is illustrated in the following rapture-lecture bullets:

Bible Evidence of Pre-Trib Rapture, Keeping The Most Consistent Literal Interpretation (Literal- Grammatical- Historical Interpretation, No Allegorical).

<p><b>Literal 1000 Years</b>  “and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.” Rev 20:4b  Notwithstanding “be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.” 2Pet 3:8</p>	<p><b>Figurative 70 weeks</b>  “Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, ... and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy.” Dan 9:24</p>
<p><b>Literal Throne of David</b>  “For unto us a child is born, .. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, ... from henceforth even for ever. Isa 9:6-7</p>	<p><b>Figurative Swords and Horses</b>  Eze 11:8 Ye have feared the sword; and I will bring a sword upon you, saith the Lord GOD. ...10 Ye shall fall by the sword; I will judge you in the border of Israel; and ye shall know that I am the LORD.</p>
<p><b>Literal Eyes AS a Flame of Fire</b>  Here a SIMILE, using like or as, vs a METAPHOR, being a figure of speech</p>	<p><b>Figurative Many Crowns</b>  “His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.” Rev 19:12</p>
<p><b>Literal? Riding a White Horse</b></p>	<p><b>Figurative Sharp Sword</b></p>

“And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True” Rev 19:11	“And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations:” Rev 19:15
<b>Literal? Vesture Dipped in Blood</b> “And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God.” Rev 19:13	<b>Figurative Rod of Iron and Winepress</b> “and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.” Rev 19:15

Christian Biblical Hermeneutics is the power-tool that allows a proper eschatology grounded in dispensationalism, not covenant theology, standing on the premillennial return of Christ, not postmillennialism supposing Satan is presently chained and bound, and the pretribulational rapture of the church, not a catholic church riding on the back of the beast fighting against Israel. These truths are further expounded in this works eschatology section.

## Hermeneutics Conclusion

Christian Biblical hermeneutics, the study of the principles of interpretation of Holy Scripture, is an important topic in a systematic theology. Hermeneutics has been tainted by bad practice. Tainted to the point where infidels repeatedly argue to Bible believers that, “That is just your interpretation.” Theirs is a learned response because allegorical interpretation, where Scripture has a hidden, secret, allegorical rendering that only the mature, wise, trained and pious can decipher has dominated Roman and Protestant Christendom.

The Midrashic interpretation, that came from the Jewish School of Jerusalem, tried to explain away the relevance of Scripture in light of new and changing circumstances. The Allegorical interpretation, that came from the Philosophical School of Alexandria Egypt, tried to redirect all the promises made to Israel and spiritualize them into the Catholic Church. The Schleiermacher interpretation, that came from Friedrich Schleiermacher the “Father of Modern Liberal Theology and Christianity,” and the rationalist founder of “Higher Bible Criticism,” viewed the Holy Bible as a purely man made book and strives to understand the text's primitive meaning in its original historical context. All of these promote a warped and errant hermeneutics.

Only the literal-grammatical-historical method of hermeneutics, that was practiced by our Lord Jesus Christ and advanced through the School of Antioch, is suitable for Christian Biblical Hermeneutics. In it All Scripture is 1) literal, i.e. without hidden, secretive, spiritualized meaning, for only the pious to discover, 2) grammatical, i.e. it follows rules of grammar, rules whereby simile, metaphore, fable, parable, and figurative language is readily recognized, and 3) historical, i.e. it portrays, references, and reveals historical fact.

This is a very commonsense approach to interpreting Scripture. A real concern exists that modern hermeneutics courses emphasize Schleiermacher's Bible critical methods which view the Bible as a purely man made book and strive to understand the text's primitive meaning in its original historical context. That is the method of all ecumenical modernists. The author of Scripture is divine. All Scripture is given by inspiration. Understanding God's work with only man-made tools, even highly refined author-center, text-centered, reader-centered man-made tools, is foolishness.

## Chapter 11 The Word Became Wycliffe's Middle English<sup>122</sup>

*1 In the bigynnyng God made of nouyt heuene and erthe.*

*2 Forsothe the erthe was idel and voide, and derknessis weren on the face of depthe; and the Spiryte of the Lord was borun on the watris.*

*3 And God seide, Liyt be maad, and liyt was maad.*

*4 And God seiȝ the liyt, that it was good, and he departide the liyt fro derknessis; and he clepide the liyt,*

*5 dai, and the derknessis, nyȝt. And the euentid and morwetid was maad, o daie (Genesis 1:1-5 Wycliffe Bible).*

*1 In the beginning God made of nought heaven and earth. (In the beginning God made out of nothing the heavens and the earth.) 2 Forsooth the earth was idle and void, and darknesses were on the face of (the) depth; and the Spirit of the Lord was borne on the waters [and the Spirit of God was borne upon the waters]. 3 And God said, Light be made, and the light was made. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good, and he parted the light from (the) darknesses; 5 and he called the light, day, and the darknesses, night. And the eventide and the morrowtide was made, one day (the first day) (Genesis 1:1-5 BibleHub.com Wycliffe Bible).*

John Wycliffe's English translation of the Scriptures was the commencement of God's presence in the English world and it could now have a place on your book shelf. Wycliffe (1324-1384) was historically the first to translate the Holy Scriptures into the English language. Thus he is called "The Father of the English Bible." In this day anyone with a computer could read Wycliffe's English Bible. Few have. Sincere Bible students should. Weigh the value of such an experience with the knowledge of the cost in effort and persecution that Wycliffe paid.

*"And alle men that wolen lyue feithfuli in Crist Jhesu, schulen suffre persecucioun" (2Tim 3:12 Wycliffe Bible).*

---

<sup>122</sup>This section is the author's December 2007 written project submitted to Dr. Phil Stringer in partial fulfillment of the requirements of the course BI-301 "Inspiration of Scripture II" of Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, Florida. That project is herein presented in its entirety.

Weigh the greater blessing he provided to dying saints who never before got to read of David's journey through the valley of the shadow of death.

*“For whi thouy Y schal go in the myddis of schadewe of deeth; Y schal not drede yuels, for thou art with me. Thi yerde and thi staf; tho han coumfortid me”* (Psalm 22:4 Wycliffe Bible).

Weigh the great blow to Satan, the opposer of God, that this broken Middle English Bible delivered.

*“Be ye sobre, and wake ye, for youre aduersarie, the deuel, as a rorynge lioun goith aboute, sechinge whom he schal deuoure”* (1Pet 5:8 Wycliffe Bible).

The book most hated by the Roman Catholic Church and most loved by the 14<sup>th</sup> century saints of the Church that Jesus built, is this first English translation of the Holy Bible. In English, it also exposes the vile condition of the Latin Vulgate in the 14<sup>th</sup> century. It shows the Latin Vulgate corruptions from the continual tampering of the Roman Catholic scribes. It emphasizes Wycliffe's accuracy over and above today's Unitarian/Roman Catholic/Modernist Critical Greek text. It is easily available for examination in your study from the web site: [http://wesley.nnu.edu/fileadmin/imported\\_site/biblical\\_studies/wycliffe](http://wesley.nnu.edu/fileadmin/imported_site/biblical_studies/wycliffe)<sup>123</sup>. Knowing the impact of Wycliffe's Bible on saints and Satan is a valuable heritage.

## **Wycliffe's Middle English -The Cost of Translating**

Those influenced by the Wycliffe Bible in English soon took up the cause of preaching the gospel of Jesus Christ and were tagged by their opponents as "Bible men." Wycliffe's Bible, by reason of its clarity, beauty, and strength, influenced both the English language and the English people. This influence is aptly described in an article on the antique Bible web site, GreatSite.com:

Wycliffe aimed to do away with the existing hierarchy

---

123 Or for those preferring the corrected spellings at Online Bible <http://biblehub.com/wycliffe/> (Accessed 12/28/2016).

and replace it with the "poor priests" who lived in poverty, were bound by no vows, had received no formal consecration, and preached the Gospel to the people. These itinerant preachers spread the teachings of Wycliffe. Two by two they went, barefoot, wearing long dark-red robes and carrying a staff in the hand, the latter having symbolic reference to their pastoral calling, and passed from place to place preaching the sovereignty of God. The bull of Gregory XI impressed upon them the name of Lollards, intended as an opprobrious epithet, but it became a name of honour. Even in Wycliffe's time the "Lollards" had reached wide circles in England and preached "God's law, without which no one could be justified."<sup>124</sup>

It is always interesting to see what The Catholic Encyclopedia says about the martyrs that it hated, tortured and killed. Of Wycliffe, they confound the search by using a derivative name spelling, but their biased history says of him:

Thus by 1380 Wyclif had set himself in open opposition to the property and government of the Church, he had attacked the pope in most unmeasured terms, he had begun to treat the Bible as the chief and almost the only test of orthodoxy, and to lay more and more stress on preaching. Yet he would have protested against an accusation of heresy. Great freedom was allowed to speculation in the schools, and there was much uncertainty about clerical property. Even the exclusive use of Scripture as a standard of faith was comprehensible at a time when the allegiance of Christendom was being claimed by two popes. It must be added that Wyclif frequently inserted qualifying or explanatory clauses in his propositions, and that, in form at

---

<sup>124</sup> Antique Bible Dealers, <http://www.greatsite.com/timeline-english-bible-history/john-wycliffe.html> (Accessed Mar 2008), GREATSITE.COM is the online showroom of The Bible Museum, Inc. "Since 1987, we have been the world's largest dealer of rare & antique Bibles, ancient Biblical manuscripts, and antiquarian theology books."

least, he would declare his readiness to submit his opinions to the judgment of the Church. It seems to have been a time of much uncertainty in matters of faith, and the Lollard movement in its earlier stages is remarkable for a readiness of recantation. Wyclif's heretical position became, however, much more pronounced when he denied the doctrine of Transubstantiation. His own position is not quite clear or consistent, but it seems to approach the Lutheran "consubstantiation", for he applied to the Blessed Eucharist his metaphysical principle that annihilation is impossible. To attack so fundamental a doctrine tended to define the position of Wyclif and his followers. Henceforth they tend to become a people apart.<sup>125</sup>

The Roman Catholics spoke forthrightly about Wycliffe's "heretical position" but it was not Wycliffe's positions that inflamed their hatred. It was Wycliffe's English Bible translation that was their main irritant. The Black Death killed 50 million in England and Europe between 1351 and 1358.<sup>126</sup> Coming out of that there was a peasant revolt against the money mongering, financially depleted Roman Catholics by 1380. Wycliffe was very outspoken against the monetary pursuits of Catholicism but never pursued violent means against them. Instead, Wycliffe taught the power of the written word of God to deliver the peasants from their enslaving Catholic priest craft. Wycliffe declared the authority of Scripture over that of the Church. They hated this exposure, his English Bible translation, and what he was doing to their coffers. He said of the Scriptures:

The authority of the Holy Scriptures infinitely surpasses any writing, how authentic soever it may appear, because the authority of Jesus Christ is infinitely above that of all mankind. The authority of the Scriptures is independent on any other authority, and is preferable to every other writing, but especially to the books of the

---

125 "The Catholic Encyclopedia" <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/15722a.htm>

126 Cloud, David W., "*JOHN WYCLIFFE AND THE FIRST ENGLISH BIBLE*", 1996, Way of Life Literature, Oak Harbor, WA, 2

Church of Rome.<sup>127</sup>

In the 1360s Wycliffe, a pupil, a graduate, a master, a doctor, and a professor in Oxford University, said "Friars draw children from Christ's religion into their private Order by hypocrisy, lies and stealing."<sup>128</sup> In the years following his translation of the Bible, Wycliffe became more and more outspoken against Roman Catholicism. Eventually writing "It is supposed, and with much probability, that the Roman pontiff is the great Antichrist."<sup>129</sup>

One must consider that those men who went through great Roman persecutions in order to provide an English Bible were of one general mind about the matter. Evangelist Bill Bradley captures well that mindset when considering those who penned their thoughts in the margins of the Geneva Bible. He says of them:

These and other thoughts from the hearts of these great Christian men ... show us that they not only found hope for the future in the Word of God, but they also found answers for their present predicament in the sacred Scriptures. They saw in the Bible that what the church of God was experiencing, the exile, the imprisonment, the torture, the burnings, the executions, the bloodshed at the hands of the clergy and the established religion of their day, was not the temporary triumph of Satan, nor the judgment hand of God upon a rebellious and backslid people, but the will of God, the trying and proving of God's people, allowed to happen to them by the Sovereign hand and Providence of God, and intended to strengthen their faith and resolve, and draw them into a closer, more intimate relationship with their Maker and Master.<sup>130</sup>

---

127 Cloud, 2

128 Cloud, 3

129 Cloud, 4

130 Bradley, Evangelist Bill, "Purified Seven Times, The Miracle of the English Bible", Landmark Baptist Press, Haines City FL, 2001, 88

In 1382, in Blackfriars London, amidst falling castle walls and pinnacles of an earthquake, forty-seven bishops and monks condemned Wycliffe for ten heresies and sixteen errors. Wycliffe called it the “Earthquake Counsel under the judgment of God.” He died two years later seeing his books banned and burned by the Roman Catholic Church. It is amazing that 150 copies of his English Bible translation, and many of his words and works survived the scathing hatred of Roman Catholicism. Wycliffe's English Bible caused such a widespread Bible belief, and his 'Bible Men' preached with such fervency from England to Bohemia, that forty-one years after his death the Roman Catholic Pope had his bones exhumed and burnt with his Bibles. It makes the reading of his Middle English Bible an act of audacity reminding one of the ugly history and hatred of Roman Catholicism. You can get a copy of his hated Bible at

[http://wesley.nnu.edu/fileadmin/imported\\_site/biblical\\_studies/wycliffe/](http://wesley.nnu.edu/fileadmin/imported_site/biblical_studies/wycliffe/) or for those preferring the corrected spellings at <http://biblehub.com/wycliffe/>

### **The Holy Bible, From The Latin to Middle English**

The Middle English of John Wycliffe could be called Medieval English as it was the English of the period of 1100-1500.<sup>131</sup> Middle English is still present and popular in America because of literary works like “The Canterbury tales” by Geoffrey Chaucer, 1400 AD, and “The vision of Piers Plowman” by William Langland, 1330?-1400?<sup>132</sup> This was the English used between “the Norman invasion of 1066 and the mid-to-late 15th century, when the Chancery Standard, a form of London-based English, began to become widespread. .... The language of England as spoken after this time, up to 1650, is known as Early Modern English”.<sup>133</sup>

The shaping of the polyglot English language cannot be fully appreciated without consideration of the rich history of the Celtic Europeans.

At its height in 300 B.C. the Celtic realm extended all

---

131 <http://quod.lib.umich.edu/m/med/> The free online electronic Middle English Dictionary (MED) "the greatest achievement in medieval scholarship in America."

Last updated 18 December 2001, 2001, the Regents of the University of Michigan

132 <http://etext.virginia.edu/collections/languages/english/mideng.browse.html>

133 [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Middle\\_English](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Middle_English) (Accessed 02/02/2008).

the way across Europe from today's countries of Romania and Hungary into Britain and Ireland and from Belgium south into Portugal and Spain. Its people introduced the use of iron technology to the lands north of the Alps – the vast territories called 'Celtica' by the ancient Greeks.<sup>134</sup>

Historian Kevin Duffy shows the effect that these Celts had on language development:

The Romans introduced Latin to France's Celts, who shaped it into French. The Normans, assisted by French Celts, invaded and assumed control of Saxon England in 1066 A.D. Norman French, with its roots in a Romanized, Celtic land, enriched the English tongue and helped make it the world's major language.<sup>135</sup>

The English language during this period was a very dynamically expanding polyglot. It did not really solidify until it was grounded with a Biblical English of the 1611 authorized version of the English Bible. The dynamics of the early English language can be further seen in this article on its history:

Middle English (1100-1500): In 1066 William the Conqueror, the Duke of Normandy (part of modern France), invaded and conquered England. The new conquerors (called the Normans) brought with them a kind of French, which became the language of the Royal Court, and the ruling and business classes. For a period there was a kind of linguistic class division, where the lower classes spoke English and the upper classes spoke French. In the 14th century English became dominant in Britain again, but with many French words added. This language is called Middle English. It was the language of the great poet Chaucer (c1340-1400), but it would still be difficult for native

---

134 Duffy, Kevin, *"Who Were the Celts?"*, Barnes & Nobel Books, New York, 1996, XIII.

135 Duffy, XIV.

English speakers to understand today.<sup>136</sup>

It is likely called Middle English because it fell between Old English (450-1100 AD) and Early Modern English (1500-1800) but as Wycliffe uses it for expressing Scripture truths it may there be called the middle of Middle English. There are always three dynamic levels of diversity in a language, an upper, middle and lower stratum. Middle English had this stratum in dialect as well. In this stratum of language the 'middle' ground is the common language of the average and is the most stable of the three. This division is described well by Dr. Ian Paisley as he establishes the preeminent language used for the 1611 King James Authorized Version of the Bible:

Every living language is communicated in three levels of speech. First, there is the level of intelligentsia – the cleverest scientists, the clearest thinkers and most careful writers. We would call that the upper level. This level is remote in many ways from the habitual speech of common life.

Second, there is the level of the least educated of our people. Their speech is rough, often incorrect grammatically, well flavoured with what is called 'slang'. It is uncouth and unkind, the language of the backstreet corner, the speech of the back street gutter snipes and the gutter press. We would call that the lowest level. Between the upper level of the first and the lowest level of the second there is a great gulf fixed. What is food and drink to one is poison to the other and what is poison to the one is food and drink to the other.

There is, however, another level. It is the language of the vast majority of the populace. It is the language of the church, the school, the study, the home, the parlour, the shop, the business and the press.

We would call that the middle level. It has little to do with the peculiarities and distinctiveness of the other two levels. It is not a slave to where a man lives his life and

---

136 <http://www.englishclub.com/english-language-history.htm> (Accessed 02/19/08).

does his business. What is important, however, is that those of the other two can both meet here.<sup>137</sup>

Wycliffe's Bible translation was this middle of Middle English and it can be readily deciphered today, especially when examining familiar Scripture portions.

*“For God louede so the world, that he yaf his `oon bigetun sone, that ech man that bileueth in him perische not, but haue euerlastynge lijf. For God sente not his sone in to the world, that he iuge the world, but that the world be saued bi him. He that bileueth in hym, is not demed; but he that bileueth not, is now demed, for he bileueth not in the name of the `oon bigetun sone of God”* (John 3:16-18 Wycliffe Bible).

In fact, it is so familiar you can see Tyndale's wordings 100 years later, from which you see the Authorized Version wordings 100 years later again. It is so easy and interesting reading that in the remaining of this paper the Roman Catholic corruptions and then the Gnostic and Unitarian corruptions of Westcott and Hort's Critical Greek text shall be examined from Wycliffe's Middle English translation of the Holy Bible.

## **Wycliffe's Bible Exposes Catholic Corruptions**

It is of interest that Wycliffe did not translate from the original Greek, and Hebrew Scriptures, but from the Catholic Latin Vulgate of Jerome. The very first English translation of the Bible had it's profound and Godly effect on English speaking people despite the fact that it was translated from the corrupted Roman Catholic Latin version. In his book *“Annals of the English Bible,”* Anderson captures this wonder well:

It was the Latin Bible, therefore, long buried in cloisters, or covered with the dust of ages, which must now be brought forth to view. Confessedly imperfect, it was of importance first to prove that it had all along contained

---

137 Paisley, Ian R.K., “My Plea For The Old Sword”, 1997, Ambassador Productions Ltd., Belfast, Northern Ireland, 49-50.

enough for mortal man to know, in order to his eternal salvation; and once translated into any native tongue, not only will the language touch the heart, but the people at last know what that mysterious book was, from which they had been debarred, so wickedly and so long. Although, therefore, the nation was yet an hundred and fifty years distant from the English Bible, properly so called, the present should be regarded as the first preliminary step. An all-disposing foresight, far above that of any human agent, is now distinctly visible in drawing first upon that very language which had been employed for ages as the instrument of mental bondage. It shall now be made to contribute to the emancipation of the human mind<sup>138</sup> (Anderson, I, p. xl).

The Catholic corruptions in the Latin Vulgate were prevalent but it is amazing that the source contained so many profound truths that God loved and Catholicism hated. Dr. Gaussen puts it well in one profound sentence:

When one thinks that the Bible has been copied during thirty centuries, as no book of man has ever been, or ever will be; that it was subjected to all the catastrophes and all the captivities of Israel; that it was transported seventy years to Babylon; that it has seen itself so often persecuted, or forgotten, or interdicted, or burnt, from the days of the Philistines to those of the Seleucidæ; -when one thinks that, since the time of Jesus Christ, it has had to traverse the first three centuries of the imperial persecutions, when persons found in possession of the holy books were thrown to the wild beasts; next the 7th, 8th, and 9th centuries, when false hooks, false legends, and false decretals, were everywhere

---

138 Anderson, “*Annals of the English Bible*”, I, p. xl as quoted by David Cloud in [www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm](http://www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm) quoted with this preamble “Christopher Anderson, who meditated deeply upon God’s sovereignty in history, gives an interesting thought on why it was the Latin Vulgate that was first translated into the English language.”

multiplied; the 10th century, when so few could read, even among princes; the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries, when the use of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue was punished with death, and when the books of the ancient fathers were mutilated, when so many ancient traditions were garbled and falsified, even to the very acts of the emperors, and to those of the councils; - then we can perceive how necessary it was that the providence of God should have always put forth its mighty power, in order that, on the one hand, the Church of thee Jews should give us, in its integrity, that Word which records its revolts, which predicts its ruin, which describes Jesus Christ; and, on the other, that the Christian Churches (the most powerful of which, and the Roman sect in particular, interdicted the people from reading the sacred books, and substituted in so many ways the traditions of the middle ages for the Word of God) should nevertheless transmit to us, in all their purity, those Scriptures, which condemn all their traditions, their images, their dead languages, their absolution; their celibacy; which say, that Rome would be the seat of a terrible apostasy, where “the Man of Sin would be seen sitting as God in the temple of God, waging war on the saints, forbidding to marry, and to use meats which Gods hand created;” which say of images, “Thou shalt not bow down to them” - of unknown tongues, “Thou shalt not use them” - of the cup, “Drink ye all of it” - of the Virgin, “Woman, what have I to do with thee?” - and of marriage, “It is honourable in all.”<sup>139</sup>

It is clear that corruptions were present in the source text, and these corruptions are not taken lightly. The amazing truth to unfold here is that Roman Catholicism was holding enough of God's Scriptures to initiate the overthrow of all they were teaching. This Bible still taught that Jesus is the only mediator,

*“For o God and a mediatour is of God and of men, a man*

---

<sup>139</sup> Gaussen, L, D.D., “*THEOPNEUSTIA: THE PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES*”, 170-171.

*Crist Jhesus*” (1Tim 2:5 Wycliffe Bible);

that you should not bow to Catholic images,

*“Y am youre Lord God; ye schulen not make to you an ydol, and a grauun ymage, nether ye schulen reise titlis, nether ye schulen sette a noble stoon in youre lond, that ye worschipe it; for Y am youre Lord God”* (Leviticus 26:1 Wycliffe Bible);

that Mary did have other children,

*“Whether this is not a carpenter, the sone of Marie, the brother of James and of Joseph and of Judas and of Symount? whether hise sistris ben not here with vs? And thei weren sclaundrid in hym”* (Mark 6:3 Wycliffe Bible);

and that you should have no pope here on earth,

*“And nyle ye clepe to you a fadir on erthe, for oon is your fadir, that is in heuenes”* (Matt 23:9 Wycliffe Bible).

Although it was Catholic corrupted it had enough Scripture to reach people with truth in a powerful way. In his book called *“The English Bible”* John Eadie notes that:

Any attempt to translate from a Greek original at that period, had it been practicable, might have led to confusion and misunderstanding; for ignorance would have branded such a book as heretical and misleading, if it was found to differ in any way from the ecclesiastical text. The common people could not have appreciated these variations, and such prejudices would have been created against the new version as the priesthood could easily foster and spread. Yet the translation of the Latin Scriptures had been a first step to something higher, an intermediate gift to the nation. The effect had been like the first touch of the Blessed Hand upon its vision—‘it saw men as trees walking;’ and when at

length the second touch passed over it, it looked up, and then it ‘saw every man clearly’<sup>140</sup> (Eadie, I, p. 101).

So the Latin Bible was translated to Middle English in 1380 giving the English speaking world their first look at Scripture in their own tongue. It had a profound effect though it was a translation of the Roman Catholic Latin Vulgate. Two major corruptions of the Roman Religion and their corrupt Latin Vulgate involved the substitution of 'penance' for 'repentance' and the substitution of a 'priesthood' for a 'presbyter.' The tables below amply display these two corruptions from the Latin Vulgate in Wycliffe's Bible translation.

### Wycliffe's Translation and Corrupted Repentance

The Holy Bible on Repentance	Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
Mt 3:2 And saying, <b>Repent</b> ye: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.	2 and seide, Do ye <b>penaunce</b> , for the kyngdom of heuenes shal neie.
Mt 3:8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for <b>repentance</b> :	8 Therfor do ye worthi fruyte of <b>penaunce</b> ,
Mt 3:11 I indeed baptize you with water unto <b>repentance</b> : but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire:	11 Y waische you in water, in to <b>penaunce</b> ; but he that shal come after me is strongere than Y, whos schoon Y am not worthi to bere; he shal baptise you in the Hooli Goost and fier.
Mt 4:17 From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, <b>Repent</b> : for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.	17 Fro that tyme Jhesus bigan to preche, and seie, Do ye <b>penaunce</b> , for the kyngdom of heuenes schal come niy.
Mt 9:13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy,	13 But go ye, and lerne what it is, Y wole merci, and not sacrifice; for

140 John Eadie, “The English Bible”, 1876 as quoted by David Cloud in [www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm](http://www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm)

The Holy Bible on Repentance	Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners <b>to repentance</b> .	I cam, not to clepe rihtful men, but synful men. [OMISSION]
Mt 11:20 Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they <b>repented</b> not:	20 Thanne Jhesus bigan to seye reпреef to citees, in whiche ful manye vertues of him weren doon, for thei diden not <b>penaunce</b> .
Mt 11:21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works, which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have <b>repented</b> long ago in sackcloth and ashes.	21 Wo to thee! Corosaym, woo to thee! Bethsaida; for if the vertues that ben doon in you hadden be doon in Tyre and Sidon, sumtyme thei hadden don <b>penaunce</b> in heyre and aische.
Mt 12:41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they <b>repented</b> at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.	41 Men of Nynyue schulen rise in doom with this generacioun, and schulen condempne it; for thei diden <b>penaunce</b> in the prechyng of Jonas, and lo! here a gretter than Jonas.
Mt 21:29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he <b>repented</b> , and went.	29 And he answeride, and seide, Y nyle; but afterward he <b>forthouyte</b> <sup>141</sup> , and wente forth.
Mt 21:32 For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, <b>repented</b>	32 For Joon cam to you in the weie of rihtwisnesse, and ye bileueden not to him; but pupplicans and hooris bileueden to hym. But ye sayn, and hadden no

141 The word forthouyte from Nobel's modernization of Wycliffe's Middle English means 'stirred by penance' Nobel, Terence P., WYCLIFFE'S NEW TESTAMENT Translated by JOHN WYCLIFFE and JOHN PURVEY, A modern-spelling edition of their 14th century Middle English translation, the first complete English vernacular version, with an Introduction by TERENCE P. NOBLE, (Editor and Publisher), Published by Terence P. Noble, August 2001 by Terence P. Noble

The Holy Bible on Repentance	Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
not afterward, that ye might believe him.	<b>forthenkyng</b> <sup>142</sup> aftir, that ye bileueden to hym.
Mt 27:3 Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, <b>repented</b> himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,	3 Thanne Judas that bitraiede hym, say that he was dampned, he <b>repentide</b> , and brouyte ayen the thretti pans to the princis of prestis, and to the elder men of the puple, [EXCEPTION 1]
Mr 1:4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of <b>repentance</b> for the remission of sins.	4 Joon was in desert baptisyng, and prechyng the bapty[m] of <b>penaunce</b> , in to remissioun of synnes.
Mr 1:15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: <b>repent</b> ye, and believe the gospel.	15 and seide, That the tyme is fulfillid, and the kyngdoom of God schal come nyy; do ye <b>penaunce</b> , and bileue ye to the gospel.
Mr 2:17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to <b>repentance</b> .	17 Whanne this was herd, Jhesus seide to hem, Hoole men han no nede to a leche, but thei that ben yuel at eese; for Y cam not to clepe iust men, but synneris. [OMISSION]
Mr 6:12 And they went out, and preached that men should <b>repent</b> .	12 And thei yeden forth, and prechiden, that men schulden do <b>penaunce</b> .
Lu 3:3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of <b>repentance</b> for the remission of sins;	3 And he cam in to al the cuntre of Jordan, and prechide bapty[m] of <b>penaunce</b> in to remyssoun of synnes.
Lu 3:8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of <b>repentance</b> , and begin	8 Therfor do ye worthi fruytis of <b>penaunce</b> , and bigynne ye not to

<sup>142</sup> The word forthenkyng, from Nobel's modernization of Wycliffe's Middle English means 'had not penance afterward'

The Holy Bible on Repentance	Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.	seie, We han a fadir Abraham; for Y seie to you, that God is myyti to reise of these stoonys the sones of Abraham.
Lu 5:32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to <b>repentance</b> .	32 for Y cam not to clepe iuste men, but synful men to <b>penaunce</b> .
Lu 15:7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that <b>repenteth</b> , more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no <b>repentance</b> .	7 And Y seie to you, so ioye schal be in heuene on o synful man doynge <b>penaunce</b> , more than on nynti and nyne iuste, that han no nede to <b>penaunce</b> .
Lu 15:10 Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that <b>repenteth</b> .	10 So Y seie to you, ioye schal be bifor aungels of God on o synful man doynge <b>penaunce</b> .
Lu 16:30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will <b>repent</b> .	30 And he seide, Nay, fadir Abraham, but if ony of deed men go to hem, thei schulen do <b>penaunce</b> .
Lu 17:3 Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he <b>repent</b> , forgive him.	3 Take ye hede you silf; if thi brothir hath synned ayens thee, blame hym; and if he do <b>penaunce</b> , forgyue hym.
Lu 24:47 And that <b>repentance</b> and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.	47 and <b>penaunce</b> and remysсион of synnes to be prechid in his name `in to alle folkis, bigynnynge at Jerusalem.
Ac 2:38 Then Peter said unto them, <b>Repent</b> , and be baptized every one of you in the name of	38 And Petre seide to hem, Do ye <b>penaunce</b> , and eche of you be baptisid in the name of Jhesu Crist,

The Holy Bible on Repentance	Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.	in to remissioun of youre synnes; and ye schulen take the yifte of the Hooli Goost.
Ac 3:19 <b>Repent</b> ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;	19 Therfor be ye <b>repentaunt</b> , and be ye conuertid, that youre synnes be don awei, [EXCEPTION 2]
Ac 8:22 <b>Repent</b> therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.	22 Therfor do thou <b>penaunce</b> for this wickidnesse of thee, and preie God, if perauenture this thouyt of thin herte be foryouun to thee.
Ac 11:18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted <b>repentance</b> unto life.	18 Whanne these thingis weren herd, thei helden pees, and glorifieden God, and seiden, Therfor also to hethene men God hath youun <b>penaunce</b> to lijf.
Ac 13:24 When John had first preached before his coming the baptism of <b>repentance</b> to all the people of Israel.	24 whanne Joon prechide bifor the face of his comyng the baptym of <b>penaunce</b> to al the puple of Israel.
Ac 17:30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to <b>repent</b> :	30 For God dispisith the tymes of this vnkunnyng, and now schewith to men, that alle euery where doon <b>penaunce</b> ; for that he hath ordeyned a dai,
Ac 20:21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the Greeks, <b>repentance</b> toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.	21 and Y witnesside to Jewis and to hethene men <b>penaunce</b> in to God, and feith in to oure Lord Jhesu Crist.
Ac 26:20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the	20 but Y tolde to hem that been at Damask first, and at Jerusalem, and bi al the cuntre of Judee, and to

<b>The Holy Bible on Repentance</b>	<b>Wycliffe's Translation from The Vulgate</b> substituting 'penance' for 'repentance'
coasts of Judaea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should <b>repent</b> and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.	hethene men, that thei schulden do penaunce, and be conuertid to God, and do worthi werkis of <b>penaunce</b> .

The sacramental system of Catholicism depends extensively on penance to the detriment of repentance. If one could repent and be saved from sin without works, as the Bible says, the whole Roman sacramental system would be in danger of collapse, ... it is, ... it needs be. This corruption of the text occurred when Jerome translated the Scripture into the Latin, or, in the vast changes made to his translation work upon his death. Penance promoted priest craft. With only two exceptions here in 31 verses penance is substituted for repentance, as a brazen corruption of the Roman Catholic Latin Vulgate, and that captured by Wycliffe's 14<sup>th</sup> century translation work.

### **Wycliffe's Translation and Corrupted Presbyterian**

The corruption of the Greek word '*presbuteros*' into the Roman Catholic priest was not as prevalent, but was just as brazen a corruption. Looking at Wycliffe's translation from the Latin Vulgate shows this corruption.

<b>The Holy Bible on Presbyter (Elder)</b>	<b>Wycliffe's Translation from the Vulgate</b> often substituting 'priest' for 'presbyter'
1Ti 5:17 Let the <b>elders</b> <4245> that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.	17 The <b>prestis</b> that ben wel gouernoures, be thei had worthi to double onour; moost thei that trauelen in word and teching.
1Ti 5:19 Against an <b>elder</b> <4245> receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses.	19 Nyle thou resseyue accusyng ayens a <b>preest</b> , but vndur tweyne or thre witnessis.
Tit 1:5 For this cause left I thee in	5 For cause of this thing Y lefte

<b>The Holy Bible on Presbyter (Elder)</b>	<b>Wycliffe's Translation from the Vulgate</b> often substituting 'priest' for 'presbyter'
Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain <b>elders</b> <4245> in every city, as I had appointed thee:	thee at Crete, that thou amende tho thingis that failen, and ordeyne <b>preestis</b> bi citees, as also Y disposide to thee.
Heb 11:2 For by it the <b>elders</b> <4245> obtained a good report.	2 And in this feith <b>elde</b> men han gete witnessyng.
Jas 5:14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the <b>elders</b> <4245> of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord:	14 If ony of you is sijk, lede he in <b>preestis</b> of the chirche, and preie thei for hym, and anoynte with oile in the name of the Lord;
1Pe 5:1 The <b>elders</b> <4245> which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:	1 Therfor Y, an euene <b>eldre</b> man, and a wisse of Cristis passiouns, which also am a comynere of that glorie, that schal be schewid in tyme to comynge; byseche ye the eldre men,
1Pe 5:5 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the <b>elder</b> <4245>. Yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.	5 Also, ye yonge men, be ye suget to <b>eldre</b> men, and alle schewe ye togidere mekenesse; for the Lord withstondith proude men, but he yyueth grace to meke men.

It is interesting that the online Bible program that has a version of Jerome's 405 A.D. Latin Vulgate, as posted in 2005 has all these verses properly translated, while the Latin Vulgate that Wycliffe translated from in the 1300s included priest craft in four of these seven verses. The Latin Vulgate maintained by the Roman Catholics was dynamic not static. The corruptions are purposeful and some of their excursions into error were so brazen that they were later withdrawn under the less audacious supervision. This insight into these changes

would make an interesting study in itself. What is seen here is that Wycliffe caught them at their own craft of Scripture corruption, showing that the Latin Vulgate maintained at Oxford in the 1300s contained corruptions to promote Catholic priest craft. Despite their corruptions, the Latin Vulgate translated into the language of the English people was a powerful liberating force against the yoke of Roman bondage.

### **Wycliffe and the Pure Words of God**

The holiness of the Word of God was understood better by John Wycliffe than it was by Brook Foss Westcott (1825-1903) and Fenton John Anthony Hort (1828-1892). These two eliminated words that did not 'ring true' to their ear and their ear did not believe in infallibility of Scripture, nor in the atoning work of the Lord Jesus Christ. Wycliffe knew not to add nor subtract from the words of God, for his translation.

*“Ye schulen not adde to the word which Y speke to you, nether ye schulen take awei fro it; kepe ye the comaundementis of youre Lord God, which Y comaunde to you”* (Deuteronomy 4:2 Wycliffe Bible).

*“Do thou to the Lord this thing oneli which Y comaunde to thee, nethir adde thou ony thing, nether abate.”* (Deuteronomy 12:32 Wycliffe Bible).

Wycliffe knew the power of the Scripture, even when translating from Latin he records the purity of the words of Psalm 11(12):7,8.

*“The spechis of the Lord ben chast spechis; siluer examynyd bi fier, preued fro erthe, purgid seuen fold. 8 Thou, Lord, schalt kepe vs; and thou `schalt kepe vs fro this generacioun with outen ende”* (Psalm 11(12):7,8 Wycliffe Bible).

John Wycliffe knew that God had magnified his truth above all things.

*“Y schal worschipe to thin hooli temple, and Y schal knoueleche to thi name. On thi merci and thi treuthe; for thou hast magnified thin hooli name aboue al thing”* (Psalm 137:2 Wycliffe Bible).

Below is a table of the 20 omissions of Westcott and Hort, the omissions that never show up in the NIV and ASV, and any other modernist bible translated from their 'critical Greek text.' Included in the table are the verses from the Authorized Version and the Wycliffe Middle English translation of the Bible. Wycliffe, who translated Proverbs 30 in his Bible included the verse:

*“Ech word of God is a scheld set a fiere, to alle that hopen in hym. 6 Adde thou not ony thing to the wordis of hym, and thou be repreued, and be foundun a liere”* (Proverbs 30:5,6 Wycliffe Bible).

He was careful to capture 'ech word of God' in all his translation work. Would that the modernist were so careful. Note their slanderous work and Wycliffe's careful translation of twenty verses in the table below:

	<b>Holy Bible Common Text</b>	<b>NIV/ASV</b>	<b>Wycliffe Middle English</b>
1	Mt 17:21 Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.	Mt 17:21 [Omit]	20 but this kynde is not caste out, but bi preiying and fastyng.
2	Mt 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.	Mt 18:11 [Omit]	11 For mannus sone cam to saue that thing that perischide.
3	Mt 23:14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.	Mt 23:14 [Omit]	13 But wo to you, scribis and Farisees, ipocritis, that closen the kyngdom of heuenes bfore men; and ye entren not, nether suffren men entrynge to entre. <sup>143</sup>
4	Mr 7:16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.	Mr 7:16 [Omit]	16 If ony man haue eeris of hering, here he.
5	Mr 9:44 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.	Mr 9:44 [Omit]	44 And if thi foote sclaudre thee, kitte it of; it is betere to thee to entre crokid in to euerlastyng lijf, than

<sup>143</sup> The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows the Latin Vulgate omitting Matt 23:14 but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes this verse.

## Chapter 11 – The Word Became Wycliffe's Middle English

	<b>Holy Bible Common Text</b>	<b>NIV/ASV</b>	<b>Wycliffe Middle English</b>
			haue twei feet, and be sent in to helle of fier, that neuer schal be quenched,
6	Mr 9:46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.	Mr 9:46 [Omit]	46 That if thin iye sclandre thee, cast it out; it is betere to thee to entre gogil iyed in to the reume of God, than haue twey iyen, and be sent in to helle of fier, where the worme of hem dieth not,
7	Mr 11:26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.	Mr 11:26 [Omit]	26 And if ye foryyuen not, nether youre fadir that is in heuenes, schal foryyue to you youre synnes.
8	Mr 15:28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.	Mr 15:28 [Omit]	28 And the scripture was fulfillid that seith, And he is ordeyned with wickid men.
9	Lu 17:36 Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. (NOTE: This whole verse also errantly omitted from online Bible copy of TR; it is in the real TR, as it is in the KJB)	Lu 17:36 [Omit]	35 twei wymmen schulen be gryndynge togidir, `the toon schal be takun, and `the tother forsakun; twei in a feeld, `the toon schal be takun, and `the tother left.
10	Lu 23:17 (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)	Lu 23:17 [Omit]	17 But he moste nede delyuer to hem oon bi the feest dai.
11	Joh 5:4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.	Joh 5:4 [Omit]	4 For the aungel `of the Lord cam doun certeyne tymes in to the watir, and the watir was moued; and he that first cam doun in to the sisterne, afir the mouynge of the watir, was maad hool of what euer sijknesse he was holdun. <sup>144</sup>
12	Ac 8:37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe	Ac 8:37 [Omit]	37 And Filip seide, If thou bileuest of al the herte, it is leueful. And he answeride, and seide, Y bileue that Jhesu Crist is the sone of God. <sup>145</sup>

144 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting John 5:4 but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes this verse.

145 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting Acts 8:37, 15:34, 24:7, and 28:29 but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes these verses.

	<b>Holy Bible Common Text</b>	<b>NIV/ASV</b>	<b>Wycliffe Middle English</b>
	that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.		
13	Ac 15:34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.	Ac 15:34 [Omit]	34 But it was seyn to Silas, to dwelle there; and Judas wente aloone to Jerusalem.
14	Ac 24:7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands,	Ac 24:7 [Omit]	7 But Lisias, the trybune, cam with greet strengthe aboue, and delyuerede hym fro oure hoondis;
15	Ac 28:29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.	Ac 28:29 [Omit]	29 And whanne he hadde seid these thingis, Jewis wenten out fro hym, and hadden myche questioun, ethir musyng, among hem silf.
16	Ro 16:24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.	Ro 16:24 [Omit]	24 The grace of oure Lord Jhesu Crist be with you alle. <sup>146</sup>

	<b>Holy Bible Common Text</b>	<b>NIV/ASV</b>	<b>Wycliffe Middle English</b>
17	1Jo 5:7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. 1Jo 5:8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.	1Jo 5:7 For there are three that testify: I Jo 5:8 The Spirit, the water and the blood; and the three are in agreement.	7 For thre ben, that yyuen witnessing in heuene, the Fadir, the Sone, and the Hooli Goost; and these thre ben oon. 8 `And thre ben, that yyuen witnessing in erthe, the spirit, water, and blood; and these thre ben oon. <sup>147</sup>
18	Col 1:14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins:	Col 1:14 in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins:	14 in whom we han ayenbiyng and remyscioun of synnes. <sup>148</sup>

146 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting Rom 16:24 but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes this verse.

147 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting 1John 5:7, the Trinitarian Proof Text commonly called the Johanne Comma, but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes these two key verses of Scripture, completely intact.

148 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting the phrase "through His blood" in Col 1:14 and Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 did indeed leave this off.

	<b>Holy Bible Common Text</b>	<b>NIV/ASV</b>	<b>Wycliffe Middle English</b>
19	Mt 5:44 But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;	Mt 5:44 But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you,	44 But Y seie to you, loue ye youre enemyes, do ye wel to hem that hatiden you, and preye ye for hem that pursuen, and sclaudren you;
20	Lu 9:56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.	Lu 9:56 and they went to another village	56 for mannus sone cam not to leese mennus soulis, but to saue. And thei wenten in to another castel. <sup>149</sup>

These verses speak for themselves when Westcott and Hort, Nestle and Aland, Lockman<sup>150</sup> and Metzger<sup>151</sup> scratch them from their Bibles but John Wycliffe of the 1300s assures of their presence in his Middle English Bible translation. Attention is given to 1John 5:7 called by modernists the 'Johanne Comma.' It is errantly taught that Erasmus added this without cause, but John Wycliffe knew it's place in the Holy Scriptures 200 years earlier. John Wycliffe knew also that Matt 24:35 said *“heue and erthe schulen passe, but my wordis schulen not passe.”* and he knew the Judge that gave these words from John 12:48.

*“He that dispisith me, and takith not my wordis, hath hym that schal iuge hym; thilke word that Y haue spokun, schal deme hym in the last dai”* (John 12:48 Wycliffe Bible).

This 'trinity proof text' was first translated into the English language by John Wycliffe in the 1300s. How unfortunate and asinine that it is eliminated from all the modernist English translations.

The Wycliffe English Bible as translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 contained nineteen of these twenty verse omissions brazenly torn from the modernist Bibles translated from the Westcott and Hort

149 The Nestle Aland Greek apparatus shows Latin Vulgate copies omitting Luke 9:56 but Wycliffe's English Bible translated from the Latin Vulgate in 1380 includes this verse.

150 Lockman Foundation holds the 1960, 62, 63, 68, 71, 72 and 1973 copyright on the NASV

151 Bruce M. Metzger is an editor of the, 1993, 1994, 1998, Fourth Revised Edition of the United Bible Societies Greek New Testament.

Critical Greek text. The Nestle-Aland Greek apparatus indicated that some copies of the Latin Vulgate supported eleven of the twenty rip-torn omissions. But ten of these eleven were indeed found in The Wycliffe English Bible, translated from the 14<sup>th</sup> century Latin Vulgate. The only omission that Wycliffe indicated from his Oxford version of the Vulgate of the 1300s was for the phrase “through His blood” from Colossians 1:14, and that verse is supported by some later copies of the Latin Vulgate itself, four Greek manuscripts, five Lectionaries, Syriac, Armenian and Slavonic versions, and Early (so called) Church Fathers Gregory of Nyssa; Victorinus of Rome and Salsodrus. All in all a very good showing of the work of John Wycliffe refuting the bias textual criticism of modernist Westcott and Hort, Nestle and Aland, Lockman and Metzger, and their slanderous omissions of these 20 verses.

Not only did Wycliffe include the trinitarian proof text, (1John 5:7) he clearly stated Phillipians 2:9-10:

*“For which thing God enhaunside hym, and yaf to hym a name that is aboue al name; 10 that in the name of Jhesu ech kne be bowid, of heuenli thingis, of ertheli thingis, and of hellis”* (Phillipians 2:9-10 Wycliffe Bible).

Even as Timothy knew the Scriptures from his youth John Wycliffe knew from his youth 2Timothy 3:15-16:

*“15 for thou hast knowun hooli lettris fro thi youthe, whiche moun lerne thee to heelthe, bi feith that is in Crist Jhesu. 16 For **al scripture** inspirid of God is profitable to teche, to repreue, to chastice, to lerne in riytwisnes, that the man of God be parfit, lerud to al good werk”*(2Timothy 3:15-16 Wycliffe Bible).

And John Wycliffe knew better than Westcott and Hort the dangers of removing Scriptures from the Holy Bible for his translation closes with:

*“And I witnesse to ech man herynge the wordis of prophesie of this book, if ony man schal putte to these thingis, God schal putte on hym the veniauncis writun in this book. 19*

*And if ony man do awei of the wordis of the book of this prophesie, God schal take awei the part of hym fro the book of lijf, and fro the hooli citee, and fro these thingis that ben writun in this book. 20 He seith, that berith witnessyng of these thingis, Yhe, amen. I come soone. Amen. Come thou, Lord Jhesu. 21 The grace of oure Lord Jhesu Crist be with you alle. Amen”* (Revelation 22:18-21 Wycliffe Bible).

## The Word Became 1611 King James English

Examining the Bible in middle English can lead to a better understanding of the English used in the 1611 King James Bible. Some Bible critics have accused that what one holds in today's King James Bible is nothing like what was translated in 1611. That is not true. Reading the 1611 English has some divergent spellings from our standardized English, but it is not at all like reading Middle English.

Daniel Wallace, a Greek scholar and professor of New Testament at Dallas Theological Seminary, slanderously wrote, “...we must remember that the King James Bible of today is not the King James of 1611. It has undergone three revisions, incorporating more than 100,000 changes!” That is just not true. This line of argument is practiced by those who want to use (or sell) their own version of the Bible. They are trying to lower the KJB to their level of version making. There are not different version of the King James Bible. Such a statement is “willfully deceptive” and is amply refuted in a Bible.org article.<sup>152</sup> Honest scholars know that the 1769 revision incorporated a standardization of spelling, typeface, and English usage and does not meet a strict definition of a *version* at all. The Bible.org article illustrates the professor's deception first by pointing out 214 trivial changes meant to standardize some English usage.

TOWARDS has been changed to TOWARD 14 times.

BURNT has been changed to BURNED 31 times.

AMONGST has been changed to AMONG 36 times.

LIFT has been changed to LIFTED 51 times.

YOU has been changed to YE 82 times.

---

<sup>152</sup> <https://bible.org/article/changes-kjv-1611-illustration> (Accessed 10/26/2017)

The articles comprehensive list of the changes incorporated shows the depth of Dr. Wallace's deceitfulness in this argument. It is accurate to say we have a 1611 King James Bible.

Below is a comparison of the 1611 King James Bible and the Wycliffe Bible's reading of Psalm 1. Those familiar with the King James Bible will quickly recognize every one of the 136 words of the 1611.

1611 King James Bible Psalm 1	Wycliffe Bible Psalm 1
1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsell of the vngodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornefull.	1 Blessid is the man, that yede not in the councel of wickid men; and stood not in the weie of synneris, and sat not in the chaier of pestilence.
2 But his delight is in the Law of the Lord, and in his Law doeth he meditate day and night.	2 But his wille is in the lawe of the Lord; and he schal bithenke in the lawe of hym dai and nytt.
3 And he shalbe like a tree planted by the riuers of water, that bringeth foorth his fruit in his season, his leafe also shall not wither, and whatsoever he doeth, shall prosper.	3 And he schal be as a tree, which is plauntid bisidis the rennyngis of watris; which tre schal yyue his fruyt in his tyme. And his leef schal not falle down; and alle thingis which euere he schal do schulen haue prosperite.
4 The vngodly are not so: but are like the chaffe, which the winde driueth away.	4 Not so wickid men, not so; but thei ben as dust, which the wynd castith awei fro the face of erthe.
5 Therefore the vngodly shall not stand in the iudgement, nor sinners in the Congregation of the righteous.	5 Therfor wickid men risen not ayen in doom; nethir synneres in the councel of iust men.
6 For the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous: but the way of the vngodly shall perish.	6 For the Lord knowith the weie of iust men; and the weie of wickid men schal perische.

A comparison of another familiar portion of Scripture is included below to solidify the argument that we use a 1611 King James Bible.

The corrected spellings constitute a revision, not a version.

1611 Bible John 3:16-21, 36	Wycliffe's Bible John 3:16-21,36
16 For God so loued þe world, that he gaue his only begotten Sonne: that whosoever beleueþ in him, should not perisþ, but haue euerlasting life.	16 For God louede so the world, that he yaf his `oon bigetun sone, that ech man that bileueth in him perische not, but haue euerlastynge lijf.
17 For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saued.	17 For God sente not his sone in to the world, that he iuge the world, but that the world be saued bi him.
18 ¶ He that beleueþ on him, is not condemned: but hee that beleueþ not, is condemned already, because hee hath not beleued in the Name of the onely begotten Sonne of God.	18 He that bileueth in hym, is not demed; but he that bileueth not, is now demed, for he bileueth not in the name of the `oon bigetun sone of God.
19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loued darknesse rather then light, because their deedes were euill.	19 And this is the dom, for liyt cam in to the world, and men loueden more derknessis than liyt; for her werkes weren yuele.
20 For euery one that doeth euill, hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, lest his deeds should be reþroued.	20 For ech man that doith yuele, hatith the liyt; and he cometh not to the liyt, that hise werkis be not reþreued.
21 But hee that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.	21 But he that doith treuthe, cometh to the liyt, that hise werkis be schewid, that thei ben don in God.
36 He that beleueþ on the Sonne, hath euerlasting life: and he that beleueþ not the Sonne, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.	36 He that bileueth in the sone, hath euerlastynge lijf; but he that is vnbileueful to the sone, schal not se euerlastynge lijf, but the wraththe of God dwellith on hym.

The “scholar” who said “You couldn't read a 1611 King James Bible if you had one,” did not know what he was talking about. In 2011 I bought a 1611 replica from Walmart for \$5 and read every one of its 783,137 words in every one of its 31,101 verses found in 1,189 chapters of its 66 books. It was edifying. And mocked Dr. Wallace's foolishness.

## **The Word Became Wycliffe's Middle English - Conclusion**

In this brief excursion through the first English translation of the Holy Bible it is seen that every word of God is pure and precious. John Wycliffe translated from a corrupt Roman Catholic Latin Vulgate version of the Holy Scriptures but his work in middle English of the 1300s shows more care for the infallible, inerrant, inspired words of God than the leading modernist scholars who tote along after faulty textual criticism, Alexandrian Gnostic corruptions, depraved Unitarian theology, and decrepit modernist thinking.

Some Roman Catholic corruptions are present in this middle English translation, but the very readable translation work of John Wycliffe is well worth the effort of securing the free copy and gleaning the truths of God in the broken awkward spellings of this archaic English Bible. It is more accurate than the modernist of English translations which spring from the modernist minds of man. Copies are readily available online and it is well worth the study in ones study.

Note: The bibliography for this chapter has been incorporated into the Bibliology bibliography.

## Chapter 12 In Defense of Learning Greek<sup>153</sup>

One can more fully embrace the vast wisdom of God with a knowledge of the Greek and Hebrew languages with which God communicated to mankind! They can also more fully appreciate the travesty done to our Bibles by the 'modern scholars' of the Westcott and Hort only ilk. Further, the attacks against fundamental Christianity and orthodox doctrines are no longer primarily done in our mother tongue of English, they are done with a misrepresentation of what the Bible supposedly says in it's mother tongue. A Baptist preacher of the gospel of Jesus Christ should therefore be about learning Greek and Hebrew, and Baptist colleges should have a Greek and Hebrew department developing a strong language curriculum for that process.

Learning anything about linguistics is an essential help for a good communicator. A pastor is to be a good communicator. Learning the linguistics that God used is the more valuable for one who is to stand in a pulpit and say "Thus saith the Lord." Gaussen reminds that: "Learning is a doorkeeper who conducts you to the temple of the Scriptures. Never forget then, that she is not the God, and her house is not the temple."<sup>154</sup> Proverbs 9 says, "*Wisdom hath builded her house, she hath hewn out her seven pillars.*" Those seven pillars were hewn in Hebrew and Greek.

From 13th Century BC "Linear B" Greek, through the "Classical Greek" of Homer's 8th century, and Plato's 4th century, up to the "Koine Greek", or common man's Greek of the Bible, the Greek language is a marvelous form of language, capable of exact expression and subtle nuances. Christ came when the fullness of time was here (Gal 4:4), and the universal language used to capture and record and preach his arrival and the New Testament he came to offer, was Koine Greek.<sup>155</sup> Every Christian can benefit from the study of this language.

Under educated, underfunded and underestimated British

---

153 This section is the authors December 2007 written project submitted to Dr. Phil Stringer in partial fulfillment of the requirements of the course BI-301 "Inspiration of Scripture II" of Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, Florida. That project is herein presented in its entirety.

154 Gaussen, Louis, "Theopneustia" 338.

155 Mounce, William D., "*Basics of Biblical Greek Grammar*", Zondervan, 2003, xi

missionary William Carey without even a high school education, taught himself Latin, Greek, Hebrew, French and Dutch and started over 100 Christians Schools in India! He was called 'the greatest linguist ever'<sup>156</sup> and he had no Seminary Greek department to spur him into his studies. If the words of God are important, they are important in the language in which he provided them to man, and no matter the education, funding, or estimation of a Baptist preacher of the gospel, he should be about the study of God's language. Landmark Baptist College has the attention of the whole world when it comes to the defense of the King James Bible and the TR. It should be using that attention to develop a powerful linguistics department that would encourage students to pursue the valuable study of the Greek and Hebrew languages. Such study requires a discipline, and for any non-Careys such discipline comes from undergraduate and graduate requirements being held high enough to require the Greek and Hebrew Biblical languages.

### **Some Improperly Frown on the Greek**

There is a King James only school of thinking that supposes that the 1611 King James Bible translation is the endall piece of inspiration and that no study of the Greek or Hebrew languages is pertinante; in fact many view its study and use as dangerous and threatening. They twist Psalm 12:6 and suppose that the English language is the seventh and final purification of the Word of God and suppose that English is superior to the Greek and Hebrew languages used by God to give us his Word. They subjugate those who would use the original Bible languages. They reason that, "If the AV1611 is the perfect, preserved word of God, there is no need to 'go to the Greek'."<sup>157</sup> Such a 'knee jerk'

---

156 Stringer, Dr. Phil, BI-301 Inspiration of Scriptures II – Syllabus, 82

157 A 2007 Daystar Publishing Manuscript Review Comment reads, "If the AV1611 is the perfect, preserved word of God, there is no need 'to go to the Greek' – the author repeatedly 'goes to the Greek'. Does he really believe the Book?... We believe in the superiority of the King James and see no value in one man's limited opinion of the proper Greek translation against those of 47 men of much higher qualifications. This is not meant as an insult. We simple know that five different men can come up with five different changes to the King James using the SAME process in the SAME passage so we simply accept what was given in 1611. Thus, I fear that no matter what changes you may make to your manuscript it is most likely going to be rejected again. Nothing personal, just a different view of the Book...." Dr. Samuel C. Gipp, Ph. D. 2/10/2007 (This comment was prompted after a

paranoia to separate from anyone that might use the Greek language is ignorant, and dangerous.

Admittedly there have been some one year Greek students who disparagingly use the cliché, “a better translation of the Greek would be ...”. Modern college Greek professors have errantly advanced that learning Greek is for the purpose of improving translations. This author contends that no modernist language student could ever improve on what the fifty-seven genius translators of 1611 gave us in the English language, but that is no cause for fundamentalists to flee from the Greek language, and mock or scorn those who would take up it's study.

Proverbs 3:19 says “*The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens.*”

Understanding is lifted to a higher plane by studying the Greek and Hebrew languages of the Bible. Although many a modernist and hood-winked evangelical has used their Greek studies to slam the Authorized Version of the English Bible, their misleading is not initiated nor even aggravated by their studies of the Bible languages. Indeed the salvation from their error may come from such a study.

The study of Greek and Hebrew will, in a right and Spirit filled environment, give a renewed sense of awe to what those fifty-seven genius linguists did in seven years with unction from the Spirit of God, and authorization and funding from the King of England. The study of Greek and Hebrew will give, when willed, a new respect to every first, second, or third person, feminine, masculine or neuter gender, singular or plural noun or pronoun that those superior linguists carefully captured in an archaic English tongue. There is no better English translation, but there is available a better understanding of what we have, of the exactness of what God said, and of the crosschecking made available in a Strong's Exhaustive Concordance. Take full advantage no matter what some naysayers may say or think.

## **Fundamentalist's Need of Greek Studies**

Why then, should a Baptist preacher learn Greek and why should Baptist colleges have a Greek department? In favor of the study of Greek several have previously answered well. A.T. Robertson begins

---

manuscript used a word search using the Strong's Greek numbering system to revealed several different KJB translations of a common Greek word.)

this answer with an apt description favoring the language itself:

The most perfect vehicle of human speech thus far devised by man is the Greek, English comes next, but Greek outranks it. ... The cultural and spiritual worth of the Greek N.T. Is beyond all computation. In the Renaissance the world woke up with the Greek Testament in its hands. It still stands before the open pages of this greatest of all books in wonder and rapture as the pages continue to reveal God in the face of Jesus Christ.<sup>158</sup>

Men of old had a grand appreciation of the value of learning and Ulrich Zwingli (1484-1531) expands this answer for the advantage of Greek in his pre-King James work "Proper Godly Education of Youth":

"Languages are Gifts of the Holy Ghost Once a young man is instructed in the soul virtue which is formed by faith, it follows that he will regulate himself and richly adorn himself from within: for only he whose whole life is ordered finds it easy to give help and counsel to others.

"But a man cannot rightly order his own soul unless he exercises himself day and night in the Word of God. He can do that most readily if he is well versed in such languages as Hebrew and Greek, for a right understanding of the Old Testament is difficult without the one, and a right understanding of the New is equally difficult without the other.

"But we are instructing those who have already learned the rudiments, and everywhere Latin has the priority. In these circumstances I do not think that Latin should be altogether neglected. For an understanding of Holy Scripture it is of less value than Hebrew and Greek, but for other purposes it is just as useful. And it often happens that we have to do the business of Christ amongst those who speak Latin. No Christian should use these languages simply for his own profit or pleasure: for languages are gifts of the Holy Ghost.

"After Latin we should apply ourselves to Greek. We should do this for the sake of the New Testament, as I have said already. And if I may say so, to the best of my knowledge the Greeks have always handled the doctrine of Christ better than the Latins. For that reason we should always direct our young men to this source. But in respect of Greek as well as Latin we should take care to garrison our souls with innocence and faith, for in these tongues there are many things which

---

158A.T. Robertson "The Minister and His Greek N.T.", 28.

we learn only to our hurt: wantonness, ambition, violence, cunning, vain philosophy and the like. But the soul ... Can steer sagely past all these if it is only forewarned, that is, if at the first sound of the voices it pays heed to the warning" Hear this in order to shun and not to receive.

"I put Hebrew last because Latin is in general use and Greek follows conveniently. Otherwise I would willingly have given Hebrew precedence, for in many places even amongst the Greeks, those who are ignorant of Hebrew forms of speech have great difficulty in attempting to draw out the true sense of Scripture. But it is not my purpose to speak exhaustibly of these languages.

"If a man would penetrate to the heavenly wisdom, with which no earthly wisdom ought rightly to be considered, let alone compared, it is with such arms that he must be equipped. And even then he must still approach with a humble and thirsting spirit."<sup>159</sup>

Only an emphasis on English or Spanish can be added to Zwingli's enthusiasm, perhaps to the de-emphasis of the Latin. On English because of the persistent attack of the modernists on the authenticity and superiority of the King James Bible (The "Thee"s and "thou"s are important). Also because there are extensive study tools available for English Bible study. Further, because of the great care of God to preserve verbal plenary inspiration in the Authorized Version of the Bible. An emphasis on Spanish is important because of the power of the Spanish language which parallels the Greek form, (while the English parallels the Hebrew form) and also, while there is only one accurate Spanish Bible,<sup>160</sup> there is a massive copyright drive for Spanish versions of the Bible. Modernist's critical errors have invaded, and are invading Spanish Bibles, as they did every modern English Bible. The studies of the original languages and the original texts is all the more vital. The hypercritical Nestle-Aland Greek text which mirrors the inflammatory critical Greek work of Bishop Westcott and Professor Hort also needs to be exposed for the gnostic Alexandrian work that it is. This will be done by Bible Believers who know and trust the real Words of God in the languages they were given in.

---

<sup>159</sup>Huldrych Zwingli, "On the Education of Youth" in Zwingli and Bullinger, *The Library of Christian Classics*: Ichthus Edition.

<sup>160</sup>The RVG just released seems a highly commended solution to this dilemma, see [www.ricefamilyministries.com/spanish-bible/](http://www.ricefamilyministries.com/spanish-bible/) (Accessed 12/29/2016).

## In Defense of Learning Greek The Linguistic Advantage

In defending the doctrines and Words of God the use of the Greek and the Hebrew has always been of paramount importance and value. Those gifted in the languages are always better equip to refute the apostasy of the day whether it be the gnostics of 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> century, the errant Augustinian theology of the 4<sup>th</sup> through 15<sup>th</sup> or the modernist and universalist of these last couple centuries. Notice the strong reliance on the languages used by champions of the truth who are contending for the faith today.

In his book “The Lord God Hath Spoken, Introduction: Inerrancy and the Text of the KJV,” Dr. Strause uses his excellent Greek background to point out 3 powerful errors of the Critical Text:

The CT(Critical Text) is laden with major philosophical difficulty; its Greek text records at least three errors which in turn undermines the doctrine of inerrancy.

The first error is a historical error. In Matt. 1:7, 10, the CT opts for an erroneous reading which substitutes for the two kings of Asa and Amon in Christ's kingly lineage the psalmist Asaph and the prophet Amos. Metzger speaks for the United Bible Societies' Greek New Testament (UBSGNT) committee, initially emphasizing their apostasy. He unashamedly declares, “Since, however, the evangelist may have derived material for the genealogy, not from the Old Testament directly, but from subsequent genealogical lists, in which the erroneous spelling occurred, the Committee saw no reason to adopt what appears to be a scribal emendation [Asa and Amon].”<sup>161</sup>

The second error is a scientific error. In Luke 23:45, the CT uses the variant *eklipontos*, “was eclipsed,” instead of the TR reading *eskotisthe*, “was darkened.” It would have been a scientific impossibility for the sun to have been eclipsed during the Passover since the moon was full.

The third error contradicts Christ. In John 7:8, the

---

161 B.M. Metzger, *A Textual Commentary of the Greek New Testament* (London: United Bible Societies, 1975), p. 1, as quoted by Dr. Strouse, in “The Lord God Hath Spoken”, 17.

Lord Jesus states that He is not going to the feast and then He goes to the feast. The CT uses the negative *ouk*, “not,” instead of the TR reading *oupo*, “not yet.” Jesus obviously was stating that he was “not yet” going to the feast.

These three errors, a historical error, a scientific error and a Christ-contradicting error, demonstrate that the textual critics of the Greek edition have a very low view of inspiration and inerrancy, and they also prove that they cannot be trusted with God's inerrant Word. ... the TR is superior textually to the CT and MajT.<sup>162</sup>

There is little question here of the power of Dr. Strauses arguments against the Critical Greek apostate text. The insight is that his extensive knowledge of the Greek language is the empowerment of the argument.

When defending God's accuracy in a seven day creation account it is often a clarification of the very words of God in the Hebrew language that is most powerful, and most maligned by the infidels. This could be illustrated by the arguments of the late Dr. Morris of the Creation institute, but perhaps closer to home with an independent fundamentalist. Arv Edgeworth, defending truth, and contending for the faith, puts out a truth and science newsletter and in his March 2008 letter he writes this defense:

As a follow-up to my last newsletter, I would like to add a few more comments concerning Genesis 1:1. Several pastors have contacted me about the dual ending to “*shamayim*,” translated “heaven” singular in the KJB. Some believe it should be “heavens” plural because of the ending. This same word is translated “heaven” singular over 225 times, even in the modern versions, just not in Genesis 1:1. There are a number of verses where it is translated singular and plural in the same verse (Deut. 10:14; Psalm 115:16; Isa 34:4, etc.) There are times when it is actually translated plural in the KJB, but singular in modern versions (2 Chron.

---

<sup>162</sup> Strouse, Dr. Thomas M., “THE LORD GOD HATH SPOKEN: A GUIDE TO BIBLIOLOGY”, 1992, Tabernacle Baptist Theological Press, VA, 17-18.

6:25 for example).<sup>163</sup>

Arv could have argued his truth without going to a working knowledge of the Hebrew language, just because he stoutly believes in the translation work done by 47 genius scholars in 1611, but his clearer presentation against skeptics who think themselves scholars of the Hebrew language, is better attained with this working knowledge of Hebrew. When the gainsayers of the truth know the languages, the defenders of the truth need to know them better.

The false cults and isms are using the current ignorance of the languages to twist the Word of God and promote their own disbelief. In a recent encounter with a charismatic dismissing the rapture of the Church, he insisted that “in the Greek, *ἐν νεφέλαις* does not really mean in the clouds, and *εἰ ἀέρα* does not really mean 'in the air.’” A good trust in the the King James translators would certainly keep one from his error, but it did not refute his error. The realization that there was another preacher present who knew Greek, completely overwhelmed his false and shallow accusation. Charismatics and JWs both try for this false appeal to the languages. A recent letter received from a missionary asked for some help in Greek and read as follows:

A Jehova's (false) witness was talking to a lady my wife has been working with. He had a copy of a page of a Greek/Spanish interlinear Bible. The page was the first chapter + of the Gospel of John, but specifically for v. 1. He was using it to show this lady that when the NT refers to Jehova God, it uses *theoV* and when it refers to "the Word was God" that that "God" is *theoS* and shouldn't be capitalized (attacking Christ's Deity). I don't find any reference of this in my Strong's--in English or in Spanish. Admittedly, he did not know from what Greek text his copied page was from. Is this something from the Nestle's text (isn't that the false one used a lot today?) I know that this JW is wrong, but I want to prove it to this lady Biblically--and I think she doesn't believe him. I also don't

---

163 Arv Edgeworth <aedgeworth@comcast.net> , Truth and Science Newsletter, Wed , 26 March, 2008, [www.truthandscience.net](http://www.truthandscience.net) (Accessed March 2008).

find this theov word in the concordance. Is this even a word in Greek? Any info would be a help. Thanks.

This JW's onslaught against truth cannot be remedied with the use of a Strong's concordance and its Greek dictionary; it requires a working knowledge of the Greek language itself. In a sentence nouns can be the subject, direct-object, indirect-object, or possessives. In English these are indicated by their careful placement in a sentence structure. My boss used to say, “Throw the horse over the fence some hay.” Which made perfect sense to him in his old tongue. In many languages, Greek included, the nouns function is indicated by its ending letter, not by its position in the sentence. In Greek, for masculine singular nouns, these endings are *os*, *ou*, *oi*, *on*, for subject, possessive, *ido*, and *do*. Masculine plural nouns use a different set of endings, so to do feminine and neuter nouns. Every noun, pronoun, and adjective in our Greek Bible has these gender, case and number indicators on board, and all pronouns and adjectives will agree with their nouns in gender, case, and number (plural or singular). That is the great power of the language, and similar argument can be made for the Hebrew.

In John 1:1, “the Word was with God, and the word was God” uses two different cases for God. First TheoV - “with God” (the Greek 'n' looks like an English 'v'), has the 'on' ending indicating it is a direct-object, and second TheoS - “was God”, has the 'os' ending indicating it is the subject. In Luke 4:4, “every word of God” has TheoU in Greek, having the 'ou' ending to indicate the possessive case for God. The Strong Exhaustive Concordance, and other Greek lexicons, only show their nouns in the 'Nominative Case' (subject) i.e. “theos” and one will look in vain to find “theon” or “theou” in their listings. The Greek language is a very exact and exacting language, and the JW is exactly a deceived deceiver.

Even a first year 'C' student in Greek will find great value in such a rudimentary linguistic expertise. There is a need for Pastors and Missionaries who have completed at least a year of Greek and Hebrew. There is a need for some upcoming Dr. Waites and Dr. Strouses, strong independent fundamental Baptists, who can hold their own amongst scholarly modernists and mislead Critical Text evangelicals.

## In Defense of Learning Greek Scholarship Advantage

When considering what our Greek and Hebrew Bible has already been through it is negligent to abandon them in their original languages just because one has an equivalent in accuracy in the English language. The remarkable accuracy and preservation of our Bible is elaborated eloquently here by Dr. Gaussen:

When one thinks that the Bible has been copied during thirty centuries, as no book of man has ever been, or ever will be; that it was subjected to all the catastrophes and all the captivities of Israel; that it was transported seventy years to Babylon; that it has seen itself so often persecuted, or forgotten, or interdicted, or burnt, from the days of the Philistines to those of the Seleucidæ; -when one thinks that, since the time of Jesus Christ, it has had to traverse the first three centuries of the imperial persecutions, when persons found in possession of the holy books were thrown to the wild beasts; next the 7th, 8th, and 9th centuries, when false hooks, false legends, and false decretals, were everywhere multiplied; the 10th century, when so few could read, even among princes; the 12th, 13th, and 14th centuries, when the use of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue was punished with death, and when the books of the ancient fathers were mutilated, when so many ancient traditions were garbled and falsified, even to the very acts of the emperors, and to those of the councils; - then we can perceive how necessary it was that the providence of God should have always put forth its mighty power, in order that, on the one hand, the Church of these Jews should give us, in its integrity, that Word which records its revolts, which predicts its ruin, which describes Jesus Christ; and, on the other, that the Christian Churches (the most powerful of which, and the Roman sect in particular, interdicted the people from reading the sacred books, and substituted in so many ways the traditions of the middle ages for the Word of God) should nevertheless transmit to us, in all their purity, those Scriptures, which condemn all their traditions, their images, their dead languages, their absolution; their celibacy; which say, that Rome would be the seat of a terrible apostasy, where “the Man of Sin would be seen sitting as God in the temple of God, waging war on the saints, forbidding to marry, and to use meats which God hind created;” which say of images, “Thou shalt not bow down to them” - of unknown tongues, “Thou shalt not use them” - of the cup, “Drink ye all of it” - of the Virgin, “Woman, what have I to do with thee?” - and of marriage, “It is honourable in all.”<sup>164</sup>

---

164 Gaussen, L, D.D., “*THEOPNEUSTIA: THE PLENARY INSPIRATION OF THE HOLY SCRIPTURES*”, 170-171

Now, although all the libraries in which ancient copies of the sacred books may be found, have been called upon to give their testimony; although the elucidations given by the fathers of all ages have been studied; although the Arabic, Syriac, Latin, Armenian, and Ethiopian versions have been collated; although all the manuscripts of all countries and ages, from the third to the sixteenth century, have been collected and examined a thousand times over, by countless critics, who have eagerly sought out some new text, as the recompense and the glory of their wearisome watchings; although learned men, not content with the libraries of the West, have visited those of Russia, and carried their researches into the monasteries of Mont Athos, Turkish Asia, and Egypt, there to look for new instruments of the sacred text; - “Nothing has been discovered,” says a learned person, already quoted, “not even a single reading, that could throw doubt on any one of the passages before considered as certain. All the variantes, almost without exception, leave untouched the essential ideas of each phrase, and bear only on points of secondary importance;” such as the insertion or the omission of an adjective or a conjunction, the position of an adjective before or after its substantive, the greater or less exactness of a grammatical construction.<sup>165</sup>

The continued accurate preservation of the Scriptures, in a day of the accurately printed page and computer distributions, is not likely dependent on a few independent fundamental Baptist preachers learning the Greek and Hebrew languages. But a Baptist appreciation of what is now available, and an articulated defense of these old paths might very well depend on such training. Baptist colleges should have a Greek and Hebrew department because they have already proved consistent at sticking with the old paths concerning plenary inspiration, inerrancy, infallibility, and preservation of Scripture. The training in Greek delivered from Baptist Bible College and Seminary (BBS), Clarke Summit PA, was truly superb linguistically, but was pervasive in its attack of the TR, demand for the CT, and attitude that any first year Greek student could improve on the Authorized Version's translation. The bias was sickening and diabolical.

Baptist colleges could also easily install a directed studies Greek and Hebrew language curriculum to support hundreds of language hungry Baptist pastors and missionaries. The Reformed Theological Seminary (RTS), who is promoting the CT and slandering the TR, says

---

<sup>165</sup> Ibid., 171

of their virtual Greek/Hebrew Online study programs:

RTS Virtual's Approach to Languages: Our biblical language courses offer many advantages to students.

- \* Move at your own pace in an ample six months to complete each course

- \* Attain exemplary language instruction from exceptional instructors

- \* Prepare for long-term usage of the Biblical languages in life and ministry

- \* Pursue masters-level coursework anywhere in the world

- \* Become a better student and teacher of the Scriptures with a solid grasp of the original languages ...

The Virtual Campus approach to teaching language uses textbooks and online material, practice exercises and exams, and online interaction with our instructors via web-conferencing. Students and professors from the RTS residential campuses agree that online language instruction can be just as effective as learning in a traditional classroom setting.<sup>166</sup>

Such an online Greek and Hebrew capability is sorely needed among those who believe in the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Bible captured in the Authorized Version. Such a bold move is required in fundamentalist circles who presently must get their linguistic training from compromised sources.

### **In Defense of Learning Greek the Brain's Advantage.**

Some excerpts from the authors lectures on learning High School Greek might motivate ones brain to pursue these Bible languages.

The classical power of the Greek language was touched upon in the introduction. Biblical Greek is called "Koine Greek" or the "The common man's Greek," Koine Greek is no longer used in ordinary communication and is thus called a dead language. This makes it very

---

<sup>166</sup> [http://virtual.rts.edu/site/virtual/promo/study\\_greek\\_hebrew\\_online.asp](http://virtual.rts.edu/site/virtual/promo/study_greek_hebrew_online.asp) last (Accessed 04/01/08).

stable. Contrast that with the very dynamic language of modern English. Modernists think it evolving, but it is devolving dramatically. Every Christian can benefit from the study of the Koine Greek.

You can learn a lot by watching a child learning to read. If this is your second language, after English, you are now that child. It is humbling, enlightening, and good for your brain. First learn the alphabet with the pronunciations of each letter. Then start reading the Biblical Koine Greek from the *Greek New Testament (Textus Receptus)*<sup>167</sup>. Look up familiar portions of Scripture. Reading the genealogies of Matthew chapter one and Luke chapter three can be interesting and helpful. Pronounce one word at a time trying to figure out the syllabification as you go. You are now reading at a second grade reading level. Keep at it, work on your vocabulary, and in a year or two you can be reading at a third grade level. I repeat, it is humbling, enlightening, and good for your brain.

*Those who stop learning are destined to grow old and senile.  
The difference between the brain of a child and that of an old man  
is that the child must fit in a thousand new things every day,  
the old man's brain just sits still, satisfied with itself.  
Keep your brain young. Learn something new.  
Study Greek and Hebrew.*

Learning is like eating; a little bit several times per day, over stuffing is not healthy, and if you stop you will die. That is good brain doctrine for Algebra students, and Theology students.

From 13th Century BC "Linear B" Greek, through the "Classical Greek" of Homer in the 8th century BC, and Plato in the 4th century BC, right up to the Greek of the Bible, called "Koine Greek" or the common man's Greek, Greek is a marvelous form of language, capable of exact expression and subtle nuances. Christ came when the fullness of time was here (Gal 4:4), and the universal language used to capture and record and preach his arrival and the New Testament he came to

---

<sup>167</sup> *Greek New Testament (Textus Receptus)*, Trinitarian Bible Society, available from Christian Book Distributors \$11..40 CBD Stock No: WW800126 via [www.christianbook.com/greek-new-testament/9781862280977/pd/800126?event=ESRCG](http://www.christianbook.com/greek-new-testament/9781862280977/pd/800126?event=ESRCG)

offer, was Koine Greek. Every Christian can benefit from the study of this language.

The first thing in its study is the learning of a new alphabet, and that becomes child's play when one learns this little song, sung to the tune of "One-Little, Two-Little, Three-Little Indians."

Alpha (α), Beta (β), Gamma (γ), Delta (δ),  
Epsilon (ε), Zeta (ζ), Eta (η), Theta (θ),  
Iota (ι), Kappa (κ), Lambda (λ), Mu (μ),  
Learning Greek is fun!

Nu (ν), Xi (ξ), Omicron (ο), Pi (π),  
Rho (ρ), Sigma (σ'), Tau (τ), Upsilon (υ),  
Phi (φ), Chi (χ), Psi (ψ), Omega (ω),  
See how far we've come!

It is recommended that you put this song on a 3x5 card and sing it every day for two weeks or a month, visually memorizing the Greek letters as you go.

The main purpose of this study of Greek is to help you understand better the exceptional expertise and the almighty hand of God on fifty-seven translators of days gone by. Ergo the only English Bible trusted and used in this development is the Authorized King James Bible. It was translated by fifty-seven men who were divided into six companies which met in cities of Cambridge, Westminster, and Oxford, to take seven years, 1604 – 1611, to translate God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Old Testament and New Testament books into an authorized Holy Bible which answered only to the original Hebrew and Greek.<sup>168</sup>

There was never before, and never since been assembled a group of more scholarly men with a more hallowed purpose. Modernist translators and modern Greek students give no reason whatsoever for anyone to ever say, "A better English translation is..." There is no better English translation. Remember the goal in these Greek studies is a clearer, more exact, and more persuasive understanding of what is miraculously preserved in English, a message of God's saving grace.

Although Mounce's text<sup>169</sup> is used throughout this effort

---

168 D.A. Waite, *Defending the King James Bible, A fourfold superiority: Texts, Translators, Technique, Theology, God's Word Kept Intact in English*" The Bible For Today Press, 1992, 62-66

169 William D. Mounce, *Basics of Biblical Greek Grammar*, 2<sup>nd</sup> Ed., Zondervan, 1993

everything you need to learn Greek (or Hebrew) is found in James Strong's *Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible* with Dictionaries of the Hebrew and Greek Words. These are readily available in print at a reduced price on the internet. The very last section of the book is a Greek dictionary and its opening page has the Greek alphabet and diphthongs with detailed explanations of their use. Use this resource for looking up words in Greek. It is an experience you will never outgrow.

The Format of these Greek lessons will follow William D. Mounce's book "*Basics of Biblical Greek*" (Zondervan Publishing house, 1993) It is recommended that the serious Greek student purchase the book and it's corresponding workbook, much of which is mimicked in these lessons. In these lessons the Chapter divisions referenced are from Mounce's book and the vocabulary lists are verbatim from his excellent work.

You can do this. John Brown of Haddington (1722 – 19 June 1787) aptly proves it.

John Brown was born at Carpow in the parish of Abernethy, in Perthshire, Scotland, the son of a self-educated weaver and river-fisherman. His own formal education was scanty, and after both of his parents died when he was about 12, he became a shepherd.

Brown taught himself Greek, Latin and Hebrew by comparing texts and scripts. In 1738, after hearing that the Greek New Testament was available in a bookshop, he left his sheep with a friend and walked 24 miles to St Andrews to buy a copy. There Francis Pringle, a professor of Greek, challenged him to read it, saying that he would buy it for him if he could do so; Brown succeeded. His learning led to controversy among the members of the Secession Church to which he belonged, as some asserted that he got his learning from the devil.

The Greek grammarian A.T. Robertson concludes this remarkable story of the self taught John Brown, "He had taught himself Greek while herding his sheep, and he did it without a grammar book. Surely young John Brown of Haddington should forever put to shame those theological

students and busy pastors who neglect the Greek Testament, though teacher, grammar, lexicon are at their disposal.”  
(A.T. Robertson, *A Grammar of the Greek New Testament in the Light of Historical Research*, Broadman, 1934, 4<sup>th</sup> edition, xix.)

While a teenager I learned the Hebrew alphabet, and had a fascination with the Hebrew of the Bible. My pastor had pointed out the alphabet's location in Psalm 119, where in my Oxford press Bible, at the heading of every eighth verse, they showed a Hebrew letter and gave its pronunciation. I memorized it. I never could have learned Hebrew without the rigors of learning Greek under professor Rodney Decker at BBS in 1999. I am not a John Brown, but as soon as I finished my second semester of Greek I took up the self-study of Hebrew. There are amazing tools for such self-study available today. My Hebrew studies have been a joy of my life. That alphabet, expanded from what my Oxford press Bible had in Psalm 119, is shown below:<sup>170</sup>

No	Form	Name	Font Key	Sound	
1	א	'Aleph (aw'-lef)	a	silent	
2	ב	Beyth (bayth)	b	b/v as in boy/vine	
3	ג	Giymel (ghee'-mel)	g	g/gh as in God/aghast	
4	ד	Daleth (daw'-leth)	d	d/dh as in day/the	
5	ה	He' (hay)	h	h as in hay	
6	ו	Vav (vawv)	w	w as in way	
7	ז	Zayin (zah'-yin)	z	z as in Zion	
8	ח	Cheyth (khayth)	x	ch as in Bach	
9	ט	Teyth (tayth)	j	t as in toy	
10	י	Yowd (yode)	y	y as in yes	

170 Gary Pratico, Miles Van Pelt, “*Basics of Biblical Hebrew*”, Zondervan, 2001.

No	Form	Name	Font Key	Sound	
11	כ 27	Kaph (caf)	K 2%	k/ch as in king/Bach	
12	ל	Lamed (law'-med)	l	l as in lion	
13	מ 28	Mem (mame)	M 2~	m as in mother	
14	נ 29	Nuwn (noon)	N 2!	n as in now	
15	ס	Camek (saw'-mek)	s	s as in sin	
16	ע	'Ayin (ah'-yin)	[	guttural/silent	
17	פ 26	Pe' (pay) (fay)	P 2@	p/ph - pastor/alphabet	
18	צ 27	Tsadey (tsaw-day')	C 2#	ts as in boots	
19	ק	Qowph (cofe)	q	k as in king	
20	ר	Reysh (raysh)	r	r as in run	
21	ש 25	Siyn (seen) (sheen)	F F	s/sh as in sin/shin	
22	ת 24	Thav (thawu) (tawu)	t T	t/th as in toy/thin	

Learn the Biblical languages, at least enough to gain the appreciation of what we have here.

## In Defense of Learning Greek Conclusion

The importance and need for Bible believing Baptists to learn the languages of God's word cannot be overemphasized. Learning any linguistics is a valuable tool to good communication and understanding, but learning the Greek and Hebrew of the Bible is essential to those who would effectively contend for the faith in his day. When the very words of God are continually under attack, the importance of referencing the very words that God used is essential. The insight into the accuracy, the plenary inspiration, the infallibility, the inerrancy and the preservation, that one can receive in the carefully directed study of these languages is paramount. If there are not a few independent fundamental Baptists

who will become expert, a staunch KJV only Baptist college that will undertake it's promotion, and the Holy Spirit of God that will intercede in our learning of Greek and Hebrew, fundamentalism may well go down the compromised evangelical trail of previous Baptist colleges and seminaries.

*Ps 12:6 The words of the LORD are pure words:  
as silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.*

And they were given to man in Hebrew and in Greek.

## Chapter 13 A Critique of Dr. Chafer's Bibliology

In this author's last four years of seminary training Dr. Lewis Sperry Chafer's eight volume work of *Systematic Theology* was the focus of my theological studies. I was dismayed to find that his verbose volumes were considered premier for Systematic Theologies. I found them wholly inadequate. When I contrasted his neglectful work with Dr. Henry Clarence Thiessen's work of *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, I was the more dismayed to find that even a Baptist's systematic theology had major failings in Bibliology. I mean no disrespect to the genius or legacy of these two men, but their Bibliology is ripe for some very pointed and harsh criticisms. This section, lifted from my TH801 "Advanced Systematic Theology I" written report, rings with that poignant criticism.

Bibliology is the thorough systematic study of the doctrine of the Holy Bible. Not the doctrines of the Holy Bible; but the doctrine of the Holy Bible. Exactly what does one have in their hand when they hold the sixty six books of the Holy Bible, written by forty authors over a period of 1592 years?<sup>171</sup> Chafer, who loves division by sevens, claims that such a study "falls naturally into seven divisions, namely":<sup>172</sup>

- (1) Revelation, chapter 11, detailed in 13 pages, 48-60
- (2) Inspiration, chapter 12, detailed in 28 pages, 61-88
- (3) Canonicity, chapter 13, detailed in 16 pages, 89-104
- (4) Illumination, chapter 14, detailed in 9 pages, 105-113
- (5) Interpretation, chapter 15, detailed in 5 ½ pages, 114-119
- (6) Animation, chapter 16, detailed in 3 ¼ pages, 120-123
- (7) Preservation, chapter 17, detailed in 1 ¼ pages, 124-125

These do not seem to be natural, or normal divisions but the real concern is that he totally dismisses the preservation of the plenary verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible Word of God, and then leaves the "proof or disproof that the Bible is God's inerrant message to man" to

---

171 Moses came to Mount Sinai in 1492 BC (a memorable date in America) and John, the last of the Apostles, penned his last epistle in the close of the 1<sup>st</sup> century.

172 Lewis Sperry Chafer, "*Systematic Theology*", Volume 1, Grand Rapids, MI: Kregel Publications, 1976, 47.

the Bible critic, supposing that it has no place in a systematic theology.<sup>173</sup>

Reasonable consideration is due to Dr. Chafer. His preface made it clear that his driving purpose was to set the record straight concerning dispensational theology. However, when the authority and inspiration of Scripture is under direct attack, when modernists contend that there is no inspired Bible in existence, all was lost, they suppose, with the demise of those original manuscripts. Dr. Chafer presents a wholly unorganized Bibliology, an indefinite, excessively wordy, pointless verbiage, that sings all four verses of the modernists theme song. This lack of Bibliology effort by Chafer was such a frustration that a cleaned up and concise chapter needed to be worded in his stead. That is the motivation that produced the volume you are holding.

### **Chafer's Bibliology Is Fractured Badly**

Detailing the shortfalls of his crucial section called Bibliology must begin with Dr. Chafer's unclear introduction and side stepped responsibility. He begins with a staunch and accurate declaration that "Systematic Theology must proceed on the bases of belief that the Bible is, in all its parts, God's own Word to man."<sup>174</sup> And again, "the theologian must be a 'Biblicist' – one who is not only a Biblical scholar but also a *believer* in the divine character of each and every portion of the text of the Bible."<sup>175</sup> And again, "the theologian is appointed to systematize the truth contained in the Bible and to view it as the divinely inspired Word which God has addressed to man."<sup>176</sup>

Despite the apparent directness of each of Dr. Chafer's charges here, there is a fracture in each context which exposes his error. "The Bible is, in all its parts God's own Word to man." The aged description "*the plenary verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible Word of God*" is the most complete, most thorough, capture of the doctrine of Bibliology. Such a description would be perfectly fitting in Dr. Chafer's concluding sentence but Dr. Chafer avoids its use entirely in this chapter. Why? This omission is symptomatic of a systematic failure in his Bibliology.

---

<sup>173</sup> Ibid., 21.

<sup>174</sup> Ibid.

<sup>175</sup> Ibid.

<sup>176</sup> Ibid.

In his preface Dr. Chafer establishes the challenge and value of detecting and exposing grand omissions from flawed systematic theologies. His detection of the completely omitted dispensational periods was his theme in that preface but in his Bibliology chapter he has completely omitted the defense of the plenary, (i.e. completely all) verbal, (i.e. every word) inspired, (i.e. God breathed) inerrant, (i.e. incapable of holding to error) infallible, (i.e. incapable of ever failing) Word of God. Scripture is made up of words and these words are, every one of them, part and parcel, the words belonging to, and coming from, Jehovah God. Let alone that Dr. Chafer never defined or defended this description, he never even addressed it. His omission is a slander to those who so gallantly defended it in years gone by, and a condoning of the modernist's allegation that “nobody today has an inspired Bible,” and the world's allegation that “there are three hundred versions and nobody knows what the Bible says.”

Secondly Dr. Chafer declares that “the theologian must be a Biblicist,”<sup>177</sup> but then in the same breath, he completely dismisses the theologian's responsibility to be that. Examine if you will, this very wordy, subtle and round about dismissing sentence pair:

Primarily, the theologian is appointed to systematize the truth contained in the Bible and to view it as the divinely inspired Word which God has addressed to man. Therefore, such investigations as men may conduct in the field of proof or disproof that the Bible is God's inerrant message to man are, for the most part, extra theological and to be classified as pertaining to Biblical criticism rather than Systematic Theology.<sup>178</sup>

There is an old double negative adage that comes to mind here: “Don't waist your time not diagramming this sentence.” It is appropriate here because it takes analytical effort to comprehend what is said by Dr. Chafer. (This problem with Chafer's writing style will be the subject in a later paragraph.)

Chafer here states that the theologian does not need to do

---

<sup>177</sup> Ibid.

<sup>178</sup> Ibid.

Bibliology because he can trust the Biblical critic to do it for him. All post modern Christendom is jeopardized when the president of Dallas Theological Seminary surrenders all Bibliology over to the ecumenical modernist Bible critics in this fashion. It is appalling to read this declaration even when it is so verbose and carefully categorized with a guarded pen. First off, the theologian can not surrender their Bibliology to anybody and retain the position of theologian, especially when he is embarked on a calling to be systematic. But then, to surrender to the Bible critic, who vocally contends that there is no inspired Bible in existence, and if there ever was it went extinct the day its ink dried, such surrender is worse than oversight, it is preposterous.

The modernist scholars vehemently deny this analogy but a Bible critic is first a critic. A movie critic picks apart a movie to find every flaw and shortcoming. A literary critic picks apart a prose to find every inadequate expression and faulty clause. A Bible critic, whether practicing *higher criticism* or *lower criticism* does not start out with a Bible founded belief in the plenary verbal inspiration of inerrant, infallible Scripture. The job description of a critic is to find and expose the flaws and shortcomings. To trust the infallible Scriptures to such a job description is incorrigible. One cannot hold to plenary verbal inspiration while blessing the critic who is casting aside all the verbs that Catholic Saint Origen dropped out of his Alexandrian manuscripts.<sup>179</sup> It seems that Origen carelessly omitted sections from his Bible, but Alexandria Egypt was man-sanctioned as the international wisdom center of the world, and their Bible corruptions are not just careless. The *international wisdom center* of man sanctioned Origen's corrupted text, and that corrupted text is passed on in the Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus, two manuscripts inordinately preferred by W&H and all modernist textual critics. It is diabolical.

The responsibility of Bibliology, the thorough study of how we got our Bible, and of what we are ever holding as our final authority, is squarely centered on the shoulders of the theologian who is compiling a systematic theology. Dr. Chafer did not do an adequate exploration of this very crucial doctrine.

---

179 The Codex Vaticanus and Codex Sinaiticus are manuscripts that came directly from Alexandria Egypt, where Origen (182-254 A.D.) was Father of Biblical Criticism, and Father of the Allegorical Method.

In his third declaration Chafer says the theologian is “to view (the truth of the Bible) as the divinely inspired word which God has addressed to man.” Again, this sounds solid enough at first, but it fractures horribly as his explanation progresses. What is omitted here is, again, the doctrine of the plenary, (each and every ) verbal, (down to the individual word) inspiration (God breathed) of Scripture (all sixty-six books penned by forty authors over 1,592 years). Here Chafer only admits to the truths being inspired. Chafer lists four objections to verbal plenary inspiration, and, unfortunately, he leaves the last one unrefuted. Chafer's listed objection to the doctrine of inspiration is stated: “The claim for verbal, plenary inspiration is made only for the original writings and does not extend to any transcriptions or translations,”<sup>180</sup> That false objection continues: “It is also true that no original manuscript is now available.” Chafer admits these two statements as indisputable facts. Shame on him.

And then Chafer quotes Westcott and Hort, the textual critics who set aside all other manuscripts in favor of the Codex Sinaiticus and Codex Vaticanus manuscripts from Alexandria Egypt, and Dr. Phillip Schaff, the chairman of the American Committee of the Revisers, who state that “their deletions won't really effect any major doctrines.” Their omissions and or changing of 100,000 to 150,000 words, by Dr. Schaff's own count, does indeed effect a Biblical doctrine, it effects the Biblical doctrine of plenary verbal inspiration! They are changing those 100,000 to 150,000 words based on what Roman Catholic Saint Origen of Alexandria Egypt, Father of Textual Criticism, and Father of the Roman Catholic Allegorical Method, placed in his library copy.

None of these modernist ecumenical infidels even stop to consider that maybe the Alexandrian family of texts were all (i.e. both) corrupt! Only a little investigation by one believing in plenary verbal inspiration of inerrant, infallible, Scripture, demonstrates that these two outliers, which contradict thousands of Byzantine texts, are indeed the corrupted ones. Chafer backs away from this obvious solution and bows to majority opinions. Again, shame on Dr. Chafer.

### **Chafer's Lacking Organization and Structure**

A second shortfall of Chafer's Bibliology section is his lack of

---

180 Chafer, Vol1, 87.

systematic organization and structure of the section. Acknowledging Bibliology even before covering Theism, i.e. God's Existence, which is the more traditional first coverage of a Systematic Theology, is a strength, not a shortfall of Chafer, but his organization within this section itself is not adequate.

In his introduction to Bibliology there is an extensive introduction to the works of God, i.e. the seven dispensations of God and the twelve covenants of God; an introduction to the trinity; an introduction to types and anti-types; and an introduction to the structure of the Bible; but there is no introduction to Bibliology. Bibliology is not a study of all that the Bible says, it is a study of the Bible itself, i.e. the Scriptures, what they are, and how we got them. Chafer's Bibliology does have a wealth of information in it: all of it has a place in a systematic theology, but none of it, per se, belongs in a Bibliology introduction. A good introduction to Bibliology must include a definition of the study, a justification of the study, a preview of the doctrine, and a preview of the opposition to the doctrine. In other words an introduction needs to contain all that is to be in the body of the section. Chafer's Bibliology introduction has none of that.

With no introduction to provide his direction or purpose in this section it can still be stated that thirteen pages of ramblings about revelation is not a proper start for Bibliology. Very little of this information has place in a Bibliology section. Some of it might find a place in Prolegomena, intimating how information for systematic theology was initiated, but in the Bibliology section the infallible Scripture as the sole source for our Systematic Theology is the theme; ergo, revelation may be discussed in its role of providing Scripture, without expending significant effort on revelation as an entity in itself.

Further, structural and organization problems with Chafer's Bibliology section are seen in his chapter divisions. Inspiration should be central with his chapters titled "Revelation", and "Illumination" as only subtitles. His "Preservation" is gutless and hollow. It should be greatly expanded to debunk the "autograph" tom-foolery, and his "Cannonicity and Authority" chapter should be bolstered with Biblical truths. Finally, his "Interpretation" and his "Animation" are without value because of his wordy lack of organization. It is likely that Dr. Chafer was trying for seven significant chapters to represent a

completeness of the coverage, seven being God's number of completeness. Chafer often tries this tack. It was a folly here. This whole section needs to be thought out again, and given a suitable organization and coverage.

### **Chafer's Elaborated Use of English**

Lastly, in this critique of Dr. Chafer's Bibliology section, something must be said about his elaborated use of the English language. A politician often fails as a statesman because he applies the art of rambling on and answering not. A theologian is not systematic unless he can summarize concisely the symptoms, overview, source and use of mis-truth and/or half truth. "Listen" to his three concluding sentences on Bibliology – Scriptures Preservation:

The Scriptures are the legal instrument by which God obligates Himself to execute every detail of His eternal covenants and to fulfill every prediction His prophets have made. The legal instrument which secures this vast consummation must continue, and shall continue, until the last promise, for which it stands as surety, has been realized. Not one jot or tittle of the divine disposition can pass until all is fulfilled.<sup>181</sup>

Does it not bother anyone else that some editor, perhaps secretary or typist, allowed these seventy words to be strung together and typed when, after analysis, they say nothing at all? Especially nothing about the preservation of God's verbally inspired, inerrant, infallible, words!

Granted, Dr. Chafer wanted this chapter on preservation to pass without providing any doctrinal clarification, and this verbose wording does the job. He has already surrendered authority to Westcott and Hort and the teams of Bible critics, who took 1John 5:7 out of the Word of God. Not to mention taking their penknife out to cut out and throw away Mathew 17:21, 18:11, 23:14, Mark 7:16, 9:44 and 46, 11:26, 15:28, Luke 17:36, 23:17, John 5:4, Acts 8:37, 15:34, 24:7, 28:29, and Rom 16:24. Bible critics, Westcott and Hort, followed by all ecumenical modernist translators actually discarded all these verses! They also

---

181 Ibid., 125.

ripped out most of Matt 5:44 and Luke 9:56 and in Col 1:14 cut out the phrase "Through His Blood!" Chafer would find it pretty challenging to write an exposition on preservation or on Psalm 119:89 "LAMED ( ל ). *For ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven,*" or to detail what Christ meant about jot and tittle preservation when he let the textual critics, who do not believe in an inerrant, infallible, inspired Bible, toss aside 349 words from these twenty verses alone!

In this chapter Dr. Chafer has taken an ability to say nothing concrete in his very long sentences, to a whole new level. It may be good English, but it is bad writing and faulty systematic theology.

L. Gaussen worded the seriousness of this subject thus:

I do not think that, after we have come to know that Christianity is divine, there can be presented to our mind any question bearing more essentially on the vitality of our faith than this: "Does the Bible come from God? is it altogether from God? or may it not be true, as some have maintained, that there occur in it maxims purely human, statements not exactly true, exhibitions of vulgar ignorance and ill-sustained reasoning? in a word, books, or portions of books, foreign to the interest of the faith, subject to the natural weakness of the writers judgment, and alloyed with error?" Here we have a question that admits of no compromise, a fundamental question, a question of life! It is the first that confronts you on opening the Scriptures, and with it your religion ought to commence.<sup>182</sup>

Still, Dr. Chafer and Dr. Thiessen contend that Westcott and Hort were perfectly justified in removing these 349 words from our Bible, and indeed many many more in their total criticism. They contend that ripping these verses out of the Bible will not modify or detract from our faith at all. This grotesque compromise of faith and fidelity has rendered Dr. Chafer incapable of defining a doctrine of inspiration,

---

182 L. Gaussen, *Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science* (David Scott's translation, Chicago, The Bible Institute Colportage ASS'N., 1840), 5-6.

canonization, and preservation, and has indeed rendered his whole section entitled “Bibliology” feckless.

## Chapter 14 Bibliology Conclusion

“The author who benefits you most is not the one who tells you something you did not know before, but the one who gives expression to the truth that has been dumbly struggling in you for utterance.”<sup>183</sup> Bibliology is the study of our Holy Bible, just what it is that we hold in our hand, and Bibliology has its heart in understanding inspiration of ALL Scripture. The author who most benefits the understanding of inspiration is Francois Samuel Robert Louis Gaussen. One-hundred and seventy-six years ago L. Gaussen wrote the premier dissertation on Bible inspiration called “*Theopneustia*.” From his 1840 publication of this work, every diabolical attack against God's inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Bible has been flagged and Christianity has been amply forewarned. His coverage is that thorough.

*All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.*

2Timothy 3:16-17

Why did the fifty-seven highly skilled linguists, employed and paid by King James from 1603 through 1611, translate this Greek phrase “All Scripture is given by **inspiration** of God.” The English word *inspiration*, carefully avoided by each ecumenical and modern bible translator, incorporates in its definition breath of life, as well as influence and stimulation of mind, feeling, and emotion, in order to produce an activity. It was also specifically crafted incorporating the word *spirit*. Indeed the English word *inspiration* is formed and framed around the concept contained in the Greek word *theopneustia*. There is no better English capture of this concept. God created and breathed out the very wording of every sentence of what is written down as Scripture.

The word *inspiration*, avoided by copyright conscious translators, is justly lacking a thorough definition. Inspiration is a miracle and its definition would entail explanation of what and how the miracle

---

183 Chambers, Oswald, “*My Utmost For His Highest*”

unfolds. No one better captures this conundrum than does Gaussen.

This miraculous operation of the Holy Ghost had not the sacred writers themselves for its object - for these were only his instruments, and were soon to pass away; but that its objects were the holy books themselves, which were destined to reveal from age to age, to the Church, the counsels of God, and which were never to pass away. ...

The power then put forth on those men of God, and of which they themselves were sensible only in very different degrees, has not been precisely defined to us. Nothing authorizes us to explain it. Scripture has never presented either its manner or its measure as an object of study. ... What they say, they tell us, is theopneustic: their book is from God. ...

Were we asked, then, how this work of divine inspiration has been accomplished in the men of God, we should reply, that we do not know; that it does not behove us to know; and that it is in the same ignorance, and with a faith quite of the same kind, that we receive the doctrine of the new birth and sanctification of a soul by the Holy Ghost. We believe that the Spirit enlightens that soul, cleanses it, raises it, comforts it, softens it. We perceive all these effects; we admire and we adore the cause; but we have found it our duty to be content never to know the means by which this is done. Be it the same, then, with regard to divine inspiration.... (in faith) we have to do with the book, and not with the man (who wrote). It is the book that is inspired, and altogether inspired: to be assured of this ought to satisfy us.<sup>184</sup>

There is little more to be said about what inspiration is, than what Gaussen captures with excellence. His 360 page 150 year old public domain defense of the doctrine of inspiration stands alone. His thorough coverage is perfect for a Bibliology in a systematic theology which hangs on the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired word of God for its sole authority.

---

184 Gaussen, *Theopneustia*, 24-26

Excerpts of Gaussen's *Theopneustia* cannot override the importance of evaluating his whole dissertation. That dissertation is included in its entirety in chapter four of this Bibliology.

When one understands Gaussen's thorough explanation of inspiration, it is easy to understand the gross errors of Bible critics and Bible correctors who suppose that only the original manuscripts, written by the pen's of the original authors, were inspired. Chafer states his objection to the doctrine of inspiration succinctly, "The claim for verbal, plenary inspiration is made only for the original writings and does not extend to any transcriptions or translations."<sup>185</sup> That false objection goes forward to contend that there is now no inspired Bible in existence anywhere in the world. Chafer himself continues: "It is also true that no original manuscript is now available." Chafer admits these two statements as indisputable facts. Shame on him. This false reasoning, that there is no inspired Bible in existence today, has engulfed all of Christendom and emboldened version makers to ignore, modify, and delete God's inspired words with wholesale abandon.

Gaussen exposed this errant thinking while Brook Foss Westcott (1825-1903) and Fenton JohnAnthony Hort (1828-1892) were just teenagers. Just the same the wide gate and broad path of Christendom followed after the brazen error. Bible critics and textual critics supposed that old manuscripts from Alexandria Egypt were most representative of such imagined and lost "original inspired manuscripts." Defending God's Holy Scripture from the pen-knives of these critics is an important part of our Bibliology today. Herein several chapters are dedicated to this defense and enlightenment.

The translation of the Holy Bible to the English language is also key to having an adequate Bibliology. The examination of what the copyright seeking Bible critics have done to their copyright English versions has aptly communicated that the Authorized version is the only accurate version of God's Holy Bible for English speaking people. The Wycliffe Bible translation is examined briefly to better expose the miracle of that Authorized version, and the importance of the original languages is reviewed, emphasizing that inspiration transcends translations, but cannot replace the originals tongues.

Lastly, in a thorough Bibliology, the Canon of Scripture and its

---

185 Lewis Sperry Chafer, Vol 1, 87.

proper hermeneutic is important. The Canon of Scripture with a dependence on God and not on man, especially not on “Church Fathers” (so called), is essential to a good Bibliology, and exposure to Christendoms inadequate interpretation of Bible truths, is just as essential. The Mother Roman Catholic Church has spread an allegorical method into every corner of Protestantism and an exposure of their lie solidifies a Christian Bible hermeneutic.

A good Bibliology is essential to a good Systematic Theology. The sole source of our theology must be the inerrant, infallible, verbally inspired Holy Word of God, and understanding just what that is, and how to come about it, is the work of Bibliology. God blesses its thoroughness in ones theology.

## Bibliography

### The Holy Bible

- New American Standard Version (NASV), 1973 Revision, copyright by The Lockman Foundation, 1960,1962,1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, and 19732, La Habra, Calif, with all rights reserved.
- Greek Bible, 1550- Textus Receptus, Online Bible Foundation, 12 Birkfield Place, Carluke, Lanarkshire, Scotland, M184PZ, 15-2006
- Greek Bible, 1881 Wescott Hort Greek Text, Online Bible Foundation, 12 Birkfield Place, Carluke, Lanarkshire, Scotland, M184PZ, 15-2006. [This work is no friend of the Authorized King James Bible, favoring the minority critical text and denying the existence of the inspired Holy Bible.]
- Aland, Kurt, Aland, Barbara “The Greek New Testament” Fourth Revised Edition, United Bible Society, 1966, 1968, 1975, 1983, 1993, 1994, 1998. [This work is no friend of the Authorized King James Bible, favoring the minority critical text and denying the existence of the inspired Holy Bible.]
- Anderson, “Annals of the English Bible”, as quoted by David Cloud in [www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm](http://www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm) (Accessed April 2010).
- Bancroft, Emery H., *Elemental Theology*, 1932, Baptist Bible Seminary, 1945, 1960, Zondervan 1977, [In 1932 Emery H. Bancroft became the first Dean of Baptist Bible Seminary, Johnson City, NY and published his text for his course *Elemental Theology*. In 1968 the Seminary relocated to Clark Summit PA. In 1970 this author attended Practical Bible Training School on the Johnson City campus and studied Bancroft's text. In 1999 – 2000 this author attended Baptist Bible Seminary to take Greek (NT502 and NT503) via a 3 hour commute from Hammondsport NY to Clark Summit PA, and was reintroduced to Bancroft's exceptional work.]
- Black, David Alan, & Dockery, David S., “New Testament Criticism and Interpretation” Zibdervan Publishing Housem, 1991. [This compromising book on NT criticism was required reading at Calvary Baptist Theological Seminary, Landsdale Pa, after Dr. Jordon's control was overthrown by an influx of Bob Jones graduates.]

## Bibliology Bibliography

- Bradley, Evangelist Bill, "Pruified Seven Times, The Miracle of the English Bible", Landmark Baptist Press, Haines City FL, 2001.
- Burgon, John William, "The Causes of the Corruption of the Traditional Text of the Holy Gospels" Burgon, John William (1813-1888 AD), Miller, Edward (1825-1901 AD) (Editor), Publisher: Grand Rapids, MI: Christian Classics Ethereal Library, Publication History: Cambridge: Deighton, Bell and Co. 1896 AD, Rights: Public Domain, Date Created: 2006-05-13, (Accessed at <http://www.ccel.org> 11/07/07).
- Cambron, Mark G. *Bible Doctrines*. Grand Rapids, Michigan, Zondervan Publishing House, 1954, [Independent Baptist, Professor, Tennessee Temple Bible School, 1954].
- Carroll, James Milton, *The Trail of Blood*, 1932, open source, public domain, from <https://archive.org/details/TheTrailOfBlood>.
- Catholic Encyclopedia, The, <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen>, (Accessed Feb 2008). [Roman Catholic Church doctrine filters each entry of this encyclopedia and its 'facts' are thereby always suspect.]
- Chafer, Lewis Sperry. *Systematic Theology*. Dallas Seminary Press, 1948. [Lewis Sperry Chafer was an American theologian. He founded and served as the first president of Dallas Theological Seminary. Born: February 27, 1871, Rock Creek, Died: August 22, 1952, Seattle, Education: Oberlin College, Wheaton College. For my Doctorate of Philosophy in Theological Studies through LBTS, I was tasked to analyze all six volumes of his Systematic Theology and found him compromised and neoevangelical.]
- Christian, John T., *A History of the Baptists*, Vol 1&2, The Baptist Bible Institute, New Orleans, Louisiana, first published in 1922, public domain, soft copy  
[www.pbministries.org/History/JohnT.Christian/vol1/](http://www.pbministries.org/History/JohnT.Christian/vol1/) or  
<http://www.reformedreader.org/history/christian/ahob1/ahobp.htm>.
- Cloud, David W., "JOHN WYCLIFFE AND THE FIRST ENGLISH BIBLE" Copyright 1996, Way of Life Literature, Oak Harbor, [www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm](http://www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm), (Accessed Feb 2008).
- Cross Pollen, e-mail: [thornroot@juno.com](mailto:thornroot@juno.com), 2001, from [http://www.accuros.com/thornbush/pollen/plenary\\_verbal\\_inspiration.htm](http://www.accuros.com/thornbush/pollen/plenary_verbal_inspiration.htm) , Last

- Revised: December 28, 2001 (Accessed December 2007).
- Dollar, George W., *A History of Fundamentalism in America*, Bob Jones University Press, 1973.
- Duffy, Kevin, “Who Were the Celts?”, Barnes & Nobel Books, New York, 1996
- Eadie, John, “The English Bible”, 1876 as quoted by David Cloud in [www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm](http://www.wayoflife.org/articles/johnwycliffe.htm) (Accessed March 2008)
- Edgeworth, Arv, “Truth and Science Newsletter”, Wed , 26 March, 2008, [www.truthandscience.net](http://www.truthandscience.net) (Accessed March 2008).
- Erickson, Millard J. *Christian Theology*. Baker Books, Grand Rapids, MI, 1985.
- Eusebiu Pamphilus, “The Ecclesiastical History of Euseius Pamphilus”, pp160 as quoted in BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture I, Syllabus, Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, FL.
- Finney, Charles G., *Power from On High*, Christian Literature Crusade, public domain, from [www.ccel.org/ccel/finney/power.html](http://www.ccel.org/ccel/finney/power.html) (Accessed March 2008)
- Gausson, L., *Theopneustia – The plenary Inspiration of The Holy Scriptures deduced from Internal Evidence, and the Testimonies of Nature, History and Science*, David Scott's translation, Chicago, The Bible Institute Colportage ASS'N., 1840, Converted to pdf format by Robert I Bradshaw, August 2004. <http://www.biblicalstudies.org.uk> (Accessed Dec 2007).
- Geisler, Norman L, *Systematic Theology in One Volume*, Bethany House, 2002, 3, 4, 5, 11 [Geisler, also a neoevangelical, sharply contrasts with Lewis Sperry Chafer in that Geisler 1) admits what he is neoevangelical, 2) admits what he is attempting, a compilation of evangelical theologies, 3) shows superb organization and structure of thought, 4) contains depth, and 5) is a masterful communicator. This author cannot endorse all that Geisler believes to be true, but can endorse that he seems to capture all that has been believed by conservative evangelicals.]
- Hodge, Charles, *Systematic Theology: Volume I-IV*, Charles Scribner & Company, 1871, Hardback- Grand Rapids, Mich., Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1940, Christian Classics Ethereal

- Library, <http://www.ccel.org>, public domain. The Internet Archive [www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01hodg](http://www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01hodg), [Charles Hodge, 1797-1878, Presbyterian Minister, Princeton Theologian and called *The Father of the Printed Systematic Theology*.]
- Larkin, Clarence. *The Spirit World*, Published by the Clarence Larkin Estate, 1921, Cosimo, 2005
- Metzger, B.M., “*A Textual Commentary of the Greek New Testament*” (London: United Bible Societies, 1975). [This work is no friend of the Authorized King James Bible, favoring the minority critical text and denying the existence of the inspired Holy Bible.]
- Miley, John, *Systematic Theology* Vol. 1 & 2, The Library of Biblical and Theological Literature, New York: Eaton and Mains, 1894, The Internet Archive <http://www.archive.org/details/systematictheolo01mile>. [John Miley (1813-1895), Methodist Theologian.]
- Miller, Edward, “A Guide to Textual Criticism of the New Testament”, Dean Burgon Society Press, Collingswood NJ, 1886.
- Mounce, William D., “Basics of Biblical Greek Grammar”, Zondervan, 2003.
- Noble, Terence P., “WYCLIFFE’S NEW TESTAMENT Translated by JOHN WYCLIFFE and JOHN PURVEY” , Published by Terence P. Noble, August 2001 by Terence P. Noble from <http://www.ibiblio.org/tnoble> (Accessed Feb 2008).
- Osborne, Grant R., “*The Hermeneutical Spiral - A Comprehensive Introduction to Biblical Interpretation*”, InterVarsity Press, 1991
- Paisley, Ian R.K., “My Plea For The Old Sword”, 1997, Ambassador Productions Ltd., Belfast, Northern Ireland.
- Rice, Edward G., *The 357 Magnum Errors of the Modernist's Critical Texts*, Public Domain, [www.gsbaptistchurch.com/baptist/bible/texterror.pdf](http://www.gsbaptistchurch.com/baptist/bible/texterror.pdf), [www.lulu.com/shop/pastor-edward-rice/the-357-magnum-errors-of-modernists-critical-texts/paperback/product-5586759.html](http://www.lulu.com/shop/pastor-edward-rice/the-357-magnum-errors-of-modernists-critical-texts/paperback/product-5586759.html)
- Robertson, A.T., "The Minister and His Greek N.T." Zondervan, 2003.
- Ryrie, Charles C., *Basic Theology*. Victor Books, Wheaton, Illinois,

- 1981.
- Schaff, Philip, *The Creeds of Christendom*, Three volumes, 1877, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1977.
- . *History of the Christian Church*. Third edition, revised in eight volumes, Grand Rapids, MI: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1910.
- Schofield, C. I., *Prophecy Made Plain*, Photolithoprinted by Grand Rapids Book Manufacturers, Grand Rapids, MI, 1967.
- . *The Scofield Study Bible*, Oxford University Press, 1909, 1917.
- Scrivener, Frederick Henry, *Plain Introduction to the Criticism of the New Testament Vol I*, Oxford, London, George Bell & Sons, Your Street Covent Garden and New York , 1894, 4th Edition edited by Rev. Edward Millar, M.A. Christian Classics Ethereal Library, Public Domain (Accessed at <http://www.ccel.org> 11/07/07).
- Shedd, William G. T., *Dogmatic Theology*, Roosevelt Professor of Systematic Theology in Union Theological Seminary, New York, Charles Scribner & Sons, 1888. [The Internet Archive [www.archive.org/details/dogmatictheology01sheduoft](http://www.archive.org/details/dogmatictheology01sheduoft)], [William G.T. Shedd, 1820-1894, Old School Presbyterian & Reformed Theologian].
- . *Calvinism: Pure and Mixed, A Defense of the Westminster Standards*. 1893, reprint, Edinburgh, UK: The Banner of Truth Trust, 1986.
- . *Commentary on Romans*. 1879, reprint, Grand Rapids, MI: Baker Book House, 1980.
- Stringer, Phil, Dr. “BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture I, Syllabus”, Landmark Baptist College, Haines City, FL 33844
- Strong, Augustus H., *Systematic Theology: Three Volumes in 1*, Philadelphia, Valley Forge PA, The Judson Press, 1907, 35<sup>th</sup> printing 1993. [Augustus H. Strong, 1836-1921, American Baptist Pastor & Theologian].
- Strouse, Dr. Thomas M., “*THE LORD GOD HATH SPOKEN: A GUIDE TO BIBLIOLOGY*”, Tabernacle Baptist Theological Press, VA, 1992.
- “*Charity...Rejoiceth in the Truth: A Critique of Schnaiter and*

- Tagliapietra's Bible Preservation and the Providence of God* ",  
www.biblefortoday.org (Accessed 1/22/2008),  
www.deanburgonsociety.org/Preservation/charity.htm  
(Accessed 9/2/2017).
- Thiessen, Henry Clarence, *Lectures in Systematic Theology*, Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmann Publishing Company, 1949. [Henry Clarence Thiessen, ? -1947, President of Los Angeles Baptist Theological Seminary, later renamed John MacArthur's The Master's College].
- , *Lectures in Systematic Theology*. Revised by Vernon D. Doerksen, Grand Rapids, Mich., William B. Eerdmann Publishing Company, 2006.
- Tidwell, J.B., *Thinking Straight About the Bible, or Is the Bible the Word of God*, 1935, from Southern Baptists Site  
[www.sbc.net/aboutus/heritage/tidwell.asp](http://www.sbc.net/aboutus/heritage/tidwell.asp) (Accessed 11/01/07).  
[J.B. Tidwell, Chairman, Bible Department, Baylor University, (1910-1946).]
- Virkler, Henry A., "*Hermeneutics – Principles and Processes of Biblical Interpretation*", 2<sup>nd</sup> Edition, Baker Academic, 1991 [An LBU BI-500 Hermeneutics text in 2011 which exalted the critical text, rejected inerrancy, infallibility, and verbal inspiration of Scripture, and dangerously esteemed the RSV above the KJB.]
- Waite, Pastor D.A., Th.D., Ph.D., "*Defending the King James Bible*", 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition, The Bible for Today Press, Collingswood NJ, 1992 & 2002.
- Webster, Noah, *Noah Webster's 1828 Dictionary of American English*, public domain, 1828, software sourced through  
[www.theword.net](http://www.theword.net) Version 5.0.0, Costas Stergiou, 2015.
- Wilkinson, Benjamin G., *Our Authorized Bible Vindicated*, 1930, (Wilkinson was SDA (follower of Ellen White) who wrote an excellent popular history of the textual lines.) as quoted in BI-300 Inspiration of Scripture Syllabus.
- Zwingli, Huldrych, *On the Education of Youth*, Zwingli and Bullinger, The Library of Christian Classics: Ichthus Edition.

## About the Author

Pastor Ed Rice is a retired USAF Systems Engineer surrendered to be a Baptist Preacher of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. Saved in 1960 at the age of eight he grew up tutored in the Scriptures through Tuscorora Baptist Church in Addison NY, where he married his high-school sweetheart Beverly Cook Rice. Drafted into the military off of the dairy farm in 1972, Ed and Bev Rice raised 3 boys while serving as a Missile Technician in the USAF. After completing a USAF AECPP bootstrap program he graduated from Ohio State University with a degree in electrical engineering and was commissioned in the USAF where he served until 1995 as a systems engineer and weapons integration specialist at Wright Patterson Air Force Base, Ohio, and Rome Laboratories, Rome NY. He finished his Masters degree in Electrical Engineering through The Air Force Institute of Technology in 1990.

After being commissioned as a USAF officer in 1982 he pursued his systems engineering work in several classified research and development programs. While moving around the USA in his twenty three year military career he was a youth pastor and associate pastor in Independent Baptist Churches near his station. In 1995 he became Captain Rice, USAF retired, and surrendered to be a Baptist Pastor.

In 1998 he took the senior pastorate at Good Samaritan Baptist Church, in Dresden, New York where he pursued his theological studies at Louisiana Baptist Theological Seminary. At LBU Pastor Rice received his second masters degree in 2013, and his PhD in 2017. His son Michael is US Army retired living near Fort Hood Texas, Shane is an Independent Baptist Missionary pastoring Chiesa Biblica Battista, Mazara Del Vallo, Italy, and Matthew is serving our Lord Jesus Christ near Hamilton NY. Capt Rice has spent seven years teaching math and science with the ABeka Christian High School Curriculum, and seven years teaching college mathematics, a love of his life, at community colleges near his church.

Dr. Rice's staunch belief in the preserved accuracy of the inspired Scriptures and his extensive background in systems engineering make him uniquely qualified to assemble "A Systematic Theology for the 21<sup>st</sup> Century."

## **Personal Testimony of Pastor Edward Rice.**

I was saved in 1960 at the age of eight. My father and mother were saved and founding members of Fellowship Baptist Church in Gang Mills New York. In 1958 my dad, Levi O. Rice, an agnostic, was invited by Cecil Palm to be a founding member of that church; both of my parents were born-again-saved two weeks later. My mother, Doris was converted from Roman Catholicism, and became a Christian. She stopped her Roman penance and practiced Bible repentance, stopped praying to Mary and called upon the Lord Jesus Christ to save her. She was thus converted from Roman Catholicism to the Lord Jesus Christ. Everyone needs converted from something. Mom and Dad were now born again, and two years later I was saved in revival services with Evangelist Dale and Opel Linbaugh. Opel cut the flannel graph burden of sin off little Christian's back in her Pilgrim's Progress presentation, and I was born-again-saved before it hit the basement floor. In 1995 I retired from the USAF as a systems engineer and became an ordained Baptist Preacher of the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. "Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven" (Matt 18:3). Being converted is quite like a new birth, Jesus said so. If you have not been converted you should trust Christ today, and you must tell him that that is your intent. (see Romans 10:9-13).

